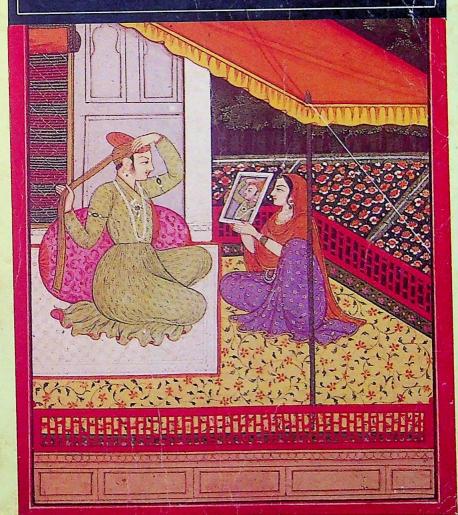
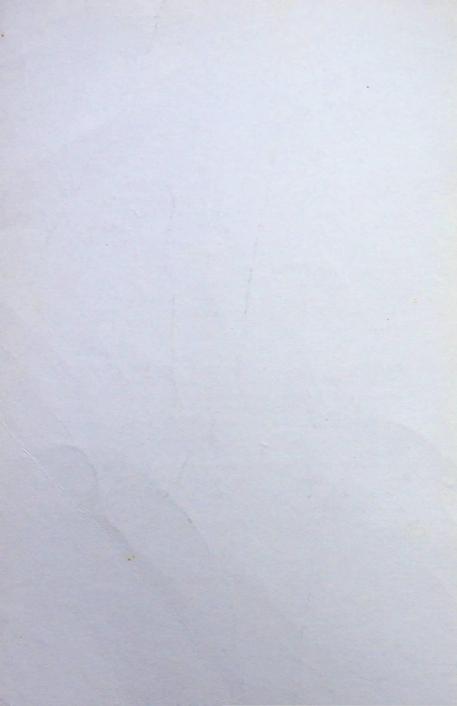


TRYAMBAKAYAJVAN THE PERFECT WIFE

(Stridharmapaddhati)





PENGUIN BOOKS

THE PERFECT WIFE

Tryambakayajvan is almost certainly the famous Tryambakarāyamakhin (1665 – 1750), minister to two of the Maratha kings of Thanjavur (Śāhajī and Serfojī). Famous in his own right as a scholar of religious law (dharmasastra), he is described in a contemporary text as a learned minister, the performer of Vedic sacrifices, and a patron of scholars. In the Stridharmapaddhati, Tryambaka is interested in women not as individuals but as parts that fit into and strengthen the whole. That whole is dharma. He has therefore combed the scriptures for rulings related to women and rearranged them in such a way that all who read or hear them will be encouraged to conform.

4

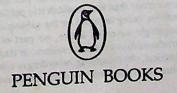
Julia Leslie is a BA Hons in European Philosophy from the University of Sussex, and MPhil and DPhil in Classical Indian Religions from the University of Oxford. She has taught at the Universities of London, Bristol and Oxford. In 1987-8, she was Visiting Lecturer and Research Associate at Harvard Divinity School. She is currently Senior Lecturer in Hindu Studies at the School of Oriental and African Studies at the University of London, and Senior Member of the Centre for Cross-Cultural Research on Women at Queen Elizabeth House, University of Oxford. Her other publications include three edited volumes — Rules and Remedies in Classical Indian Law (1991); Roles and Rituals for Hindu Women (1991); Myths and Mythmaking: Continuous Evolution in the Indian Tradition (1995) —and a novel, Perahera (1973).

adharmābhibhavāt kṛṣṇa praduṣyanti kulastriyaḥ/ strīṣu duṣṭāsu vārṣṇeya jāyate varṇasaṃkaraḥ/ / saṃkaro narakāyaiva kulaghnānāṃ kulasya ca/ / Bhagavadgītā I.41-2a

The Perfect Wife (Stridharmapaddhati)

Tryambakayajvan

Translated from the Sanskrit with an Introduction by I. Julia Leslie



Penguin Books India (P) Ltd., 210, Chiranjiv Tower, 43, Nehru Place, New Delhi 110 019, India

Penguin Books Ltd., 27 Wrights Lane, London W8 5TZ, UK

Penguin Books USA Inc., 375 Hudson Street, New York, NY 10014, USA

Penguin Books Australia Ltd., Ringwood, Victoria, Australia

Penguin Books Canada Ltd., 10 Alcorn Avenue, Suite 300, Toronto, Ontario M4V 3B2,

Penguin Books (NZ) Ltd., 182-190 Wairau Road, Auckland 10, New Zealand

First published by Oxford University Press 1989 First published in Penguin by Penguin Books India (P) Ltd 1995

Copyright © I. Julia Leslie 1989

All rights reserved

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

This book is sold subject to the condition that it shall not, by way of trade or otherwise, be lent, resold, hired out, or otherwise circulated without the publisher's prior written consent in any form of binding or cover other than that in which it is published and without a similar condition including this condition being imposed on the subsequent purchaser and without limiting the rights under copyright reserved above, no part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in or introduced into a retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means (electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise), without the prior written permission of both the copyright owner and the above-mentioned publisher of this book.

To my parents
JOHN and ELIZABETH LESLIE
for their love and patience
over the years
and for their acceptance of my
prolonged infatuation with India

Contents

LIST OF PLATES XI

List of Figures xii	
Acknowledgements xiii	
1. INTRODUCTION	1
Mode of Presentation and Overview of the Contents of the Strīdharmapaddhati 4 The Author of the Strīdharmapaddhati 10 The Political Background: the Maratha Rajas of Thanjavur 13 The Intellectual Milieu 16 The Women of the Period 19 The Literary Genre: the Strīdharmapaddhati in the Context of the Religious Law (dharmaśāstra) 23	
2. THE STRĪDHARMAPADDHATI OF TRYAMBAKAYAJVAN	27
I TRYAMBAKA'S INTRODUCTION (Sdhp. 1v.1-2v.5)	29
II THE DAILY DUTIES OF WOMEN (strīṇām ahnikam; Sdhp. 2v. 5–21r.3)	4 5
IIA Before Dawn (Sdhp. 2v.5-7v.9) On Waking Up (prabodhanam) 51	3
Before dawn 51 Before one's husband 52 Meditation (devatādhyānam) 52 What may or may not be seen (darśanīyānyadarśanīyāni ca) 54	
Household Tasks (1) 58 Preparing the grain (dhānyasaṃskārādi) 58 Cleaning the house (gṛhasaṃmārjanādikam) 59 Smearing with cow-dung (gomayenānulepanam); the goddess Śrī 59 Worship of the threshold (dehalīpūjā) 63 Delegating housework 64 The care and worship of cows (gosevanam) 65	
Ablutions, etc. 69 Urinating and defecating (mūtrapurīṣotsargaḥ) 69 Cleansing rituals (śaucam) 71 The sipping ritual (ācamanam) 75 Cleaning the teeth (dantadhāvanam) 78	

Getting dressed (vastradhāraņam) 88 Wearing the tilaka mark (tilakadhāraṇam) 96
IIB AT DAWN (Sdhp. 7v.9-10v.1)
Serving the Sacred Fire (agnisuśrūṣā) 102
The role of the wife 107
Where the patnī may walk 115
Which wife is the patnī? 121
At which point should the wife participate? 129
How important is the presence of either husband or wife? 132
Is the patnī the ritual agent of the sacrifice? 141
The Offering of Respect to the Sun (arghyadānam) 149
IIC DAY (Sdhp. 10v.1-19v.4)
Saluting One's Elders (gurūṇām abhivādanam) 156
Paying homage (pādavandanam) to one's parents-
in-law 161
Personal services 163
Household Tasks (2) (gṛhakṛṭyam) 168
General attitude 168
Managing the household accounts 168 Whether the wife may talk to other men (parapuruṣa) 170
Midday Rituals 176
General comments 176
Image worship (devapūjā) 178
The worship of all gods (vaiśvadeva) 180 Paying homage to guests (atithipūjā) 183
General rules 183
The necessity for the ritual; Naciketas and Yama 185
The penalties in store if the ritual is neglected 188
The rewards in store if the ritual is performed 193
Comparison with the fire ritual 196
The role of the wife 198 The distinction between 'guests' and casual visitors 205
At Meals (bhojanam) 210
The wife's duty to serve at meals (pariveşanam) 210
A man should not eat in his wife's presence 214
How the wife should serve the meal 217
The wife's own meal 221
Her ritual offering (balidānam) to the goddess Jyesthā 22° Post-prandial duties (bhojanānantarakṛtyam) 229

Even	og (Sdhp. 19v. 4–21r.3) ning Rituals and Duties 234 ng to Bed (śayanam) 234	
III THE INHI	erent Nature of Women phāvaḥ; Sdhp. 21r. 3–22r. 8)	246
(striṇām Ge Thi Wo In p Ge Thi Ge The In p Ge The In p Ge The In p Ge The In p The The (ge	neral rulings on behaviour 273 ings to be avoided (varjanīyāḥ) 274 bmen's property (strīdhanam) 276 praise of the pativratā 280 General quotations 280 Draupadī and Satyabhāmā 280 Kṛṣṇa and Subhadrā 281 Umā and Maheśvara 281 Śāṇḍilī and Sumanā 282 Religious Duties of the Menstruating Woman ajasvalādharmāḥ) 283 ne polluting power of menstrual blood 283 ohibitions relating to the menstruating woman and defects accruing to the child 284 pecial rulings 285 ne ritual bath of purification 286 ne proper time to make love (rtukāladharma) 287 Religious Duties of the Pregnant Woman arbhinīdharmāḥ) 288	273
R	ulings and prohibitions 288 he pregnant woman's cravings (dohada) 289 he pregnant the lying-in chamber 290	
The (p T) C T T S S The	Religious Duties of the Woman Whose Husband is Awa proșitabhartṛkādharmāḥ) 291 the injunction relating to dying with one's husband (sahagamanavidhiḥ) 291 quotations in favour of the practice 292 the objection that it is a form of suicide 292 the rewards it brings the good wife 293 thaagamana as a prāyaścitta for the bad wife 295 tahagamana in relation to brahmin women 297 the Religious Duties of the Widow (vidhavādharmāḥ) 296 When sahagamana does not apply 298 The conduct of the widow 299	

3.

The question of <i>niyoga</i> 300 The impurity and inauspiciousness of widows 302 Whether or not the widow should shave her head 303 The three kinds of <i>pativratā</i> 304	
V Tryambaka's Conclusion: Obedient Service to One's Husbane Primary Religious Duty of a Wife (patrisuśrūṣaṇaṃ mukhyo dharmaḥ; Sdhp. 48v.6–88r.l) She Should Serve Him Without Regard for Her Own Life (prāṇānām avigaṇanayā) 305 Sītā and the demon 305 The brahmin's wife and the crane-demon 306 The pigeons and the bird-catcher 306	305
Accepting Even Her Husband's Sale of Her (bhartṛkṛtātmavikrayāngī [kāra]): Hariścandra 307 Even if it Conflicts with Other Duties (itaraḍharmopamardena) 308 The ascetic Kauśika and the brahmin woman 308 Further quotations 309	
If her husband requires it, she should even do what is wrong 309 Pāṇḍu and Kuntī 310 Sudarśana and Oghayatī 310	
'Service' versus 'Obedience'; Svāhā and Arundhatī 312 Sāvitrī 313 Tryambaka's Summary 314 Concluding Verses and Colophon 316	
CONCLUSION	318
Appendix The text: Collation of manuscripts and Stemma codicum	331
Abbreviations .	200
BIBLIOGRAPHY 1. Texts and translations 2. Secondary literature	339 343
INDEX	363

Plates

Endpapers

- a Bhāgavatapurāṇa, rāsakrīḍa section (chapters 29-33 of the tenth canto): palm-leaf manuscript; Sanskrit text in Oriya script.

 Orissa, early eighteenth century.

 British Library: OR.11689, fol. 2r.
- b As above.
 British Library: OR.11689, fol. 3v.
- c As above. British Library: OR.11689, fol. 2v.
- d Rādhākṛṣṇakeli: palm-leaf manuscript; Oriya poem of Kṛṣṇa's life in Brindaban, possibly by Balaji Pattanayak (Losty 1980: 14). Orissa, early seventeenth century. British Library: OR.11612, fol. 19r.

Between pages 48 and 49

- 1 Woman milking white cow with calf watching OR.11689, fol. lv (detail)
- 2 Woman anointing herself with sandalwood paste or perfume from a pot OR.11689, fol. 3r (detail)
- 3 Woman holding mirror and applying collyrium to her eyes OR.11689, fol. 3r (detail)
- 4 Woman arranging ornaments in another's hair OR.11612, fol. l3r (half folio)
- 5 Woman putting tilaka mark on her forehead while another holds a mirror OR.11612, fol. 13r (half folio)
- 6 Woman squatting to cook, and fanning herself with her left hand OR.11689, fol. lv (detail)
- 7 Woman standing to serve her husband while he sits and eats OR.11689, fol. 2r (detail)
- 8 Woman massaging her husband's feet as he relaxes on a bed after his meal OR.11689, fol. 3v (detail)
- 9 Woman dining alone, eating what is left of her husband's meal, after tending to his needs OR.11689, fol. 3v (detail)
- 10 Woman sitting on the ground, playing with male child OR.11689, fol. 2v (detail)
- 11 Woman sitting with child on her lap, suckling him OR.11689, fol. 2v (detail)

- 12 Couple making love on a low bed, naked except for their ornaments, the woman on top OR.11612, fol. 19r (half folio)
- 13 Couple making love on a low bed, both wearing ornaments, woman drinking from a bottle OR.11612, fol. 19r (half folio)

Figures

- 1 The mode of presentation 10
- 2 Origins of the Maratha Rajas of Thanjavur 13
- 3 The Maratha Rajas of Thanjavur 15
- 4 The family of ministers 18
- 5 Dhundhirāja, court poet 19
- 6 Parallel timetable for women and men 47
- 7 Layout of the ritual enclosure 117

Acknowledgements

Far more people have been instrumental in the completion of this book than I could mention in a brief list of acknowledgements. My thanks go first to David Pingree of Brown University, who drew my attention many years ago to Tryambakayajvan's Strīdharmapaddhati. In Madras, S. S. Janaki of the Kuppuswami Sastri Research Institute helped me locate manuscripts of the work, and a copy of the elusive printed text with its Tamil translation. In Thanjavur, the pandits of the Tanjore Maharaja Sarasvati Mahal Library provided me with a working space for the length of my stay. In Pune, Pandit Vamana Balakrsna Bhagavata was always ready to read with me, despite the pressures of his own work in vyākarana.

But above all, I wish to thank Tarkatirtha Lakshmanshastri Joshi of Vai. President of the Prājnapāthaśalāmandala since 1916 and general editor of the massive *Dharmakośa* project, Pandit Joshi was over eighty when we met. Yet he gave me the unforgettable experience of studying with him as an antevāsinī: for two months, I lived in his home, ate with his family, and read and discussed my text with him for up to six hours a day. The energy with which he embraced my project and tackled my problems has left me eternally in his debt. It has been a privilege and a pleasure

to study with this remarkable man.

Richard Gombrich deserves my special thanks for his conscientious supervision of the first draft of the book. Amongst those who were kind enough to read all or parts of that draft, and to discuss its contents with me, I should like to thank Dominik Wujastyk, Friedrich Wilhelm, Werner Menski, Sanjukta Gupta, Nicholas

Allen and Gudrun Bühnemann.

Finally, I should like to thank my family for their generous encouragement. As I completed the final draft, I went into labour for the birth of our first child, Ania Elizabeth Leslie Wujastyk. As I finished checking the first proofs, I went into labour for the birth of our second child, Marina Phyllida Leslie Wujastyk. In the various stages of pregnancy, delivery and recovery—for both babies and for the book—I was supported by my husband, Dominik Wujastyk. He read most of what I wrote, checked references for me when I was unable to reach the library, double-checked the proofs, and helped with the index. His

confidence in my work extended even to bribing me to continue when I was ready to give up. I owe him heartfelt thanks.

exist was as a side only that a mark more than of war.

I. Julia Leslie

Visiting Lecturer and Research Associate in the Women's Studies in Religion Program The Centre for the Study of World Religion Harvard Divinity School May 1988

Introduction

In Madhya Pradesh, a high-caste brahmin woman named Bhuribai prostrates herself before a new satī shrine. It is 1974. For her, and for countless other traditional Hindu women in India today, the perfect woman is the pativratā, the devoted wife whose entire existence is dedicated to her husband. Ideally, such a woman dies before her husband; if by some mischance she does not, the wrong may be put right by taking her own life on her husband's pyre. She is then worshipped as a goddess, the perfect example of the self-sacrificing wife. Bhuribai's fervent prayer before that shrine is that she may never suffer the misfortune and disgrace of becoming a widow.

In her home, Bhuribai was fortunate. She suffered few hardships, was not ill-treated, and generally did as she pleased. Aware that she was in fact more intelligent than her husband, she took pleasure in her evident and efficient control of his household. But she remained quite ready to regard him as essentially 'higher', and herself as 'the shoes of his feet . . . his property'. Indeed, although she never actually worshipped him, Bhuribai conformed to the view widely held by both men and women throughout India that the perfect wife should regard her husband as her personal God. For, as both religious texts and traditional stories make clear, the man ordained to be a woman's husband is far more than a man: he is the incarnation of the supreme law in her life; the definition and summation of her religious duty; a god to be appeased.

In 1977, however, Bhuribai's husband died. Deprived of her one remaining desire — to die before her 'lord', and in his house where her wedding vows were taken — she announced her intention to become a satī or truly 'virtuous' wife herself. But, recent shrines notwithstanding, the immolation of widows has been illegal in India since the British Government abolished the practice with the Suttee Regulation of 1829. The village elders made her take the required 'test' of the true satī: she had to perform the miracle of changing a ball of cow-dung into a coconut. Bhuribai failed. She was denied the supreme sacrifice of the ideal wife. 1

1. For a more detailed account of Bhuribai's life-history, see Jacobson 1978:95-138.

But not all Hindu women share Bhuribai's views concerning the proper role of women. In Search of Answers (Kishwar and Vanita 1984) is a collection of articles and letters published in Manushi, an outspoken magazine concerned with issues relating to Indian women today, during the first five years of its publication (1979–83). In her introduction to this disturbing document, Madhu Kishwar writes:

The pervasive popular cultural ideal of womanhood has become a death trap for too many of us. It is woman as a selfless giver, someone who gives and gives endlessly, gracefully, smilingly, whatever the demand, however unreasonable and harmful to herself. She gives not just love, affection and ungrudging service but also, if need be, her health and ultimately her life at the altar of her duty to her husband, children and the rest of her family. Sita, Savitri, Änusuya and various other mythological heroines are used as the archetypes of such a woman and women themselves are deeply influenced by this cultural ideal. . . .

This ideology of slavery and contempt for women in the family plays a more important part than even beatings or bullets in keeping women oppressed. (Kishwar and Vanita 1984:46-7)

One of the letters, translated from Hindi and included in the collection, roundly condemns the pervasive image of the self-effacing woman:

The ideals, ethics and morality heaped on women since time immemorial are suffocating and killing. The adjectives used to praise us have become oppressive. Calling us loving, they have locked us in the closed room of culture, calling us gentle, they have reflected us in a mirror of helplessness, calling us kind, they have tied us in cowardice, they have handcuffed us with modesty and chained our feet with loyalty, so that far from running, we have not been able even to walk. . . .

Now we must refuse to be Sitas. . . . Our exclusion from the scriptures, from temples, from *smritis*, is also our strength . . . (Kishwar and Vanita 1984: 298-9)

But what is this powerful ideology that is accepted without hesitation by some women, like Bhuribai, and yet rejected so vehemently by others? Where may we find its ideals, aims and arguments clearly set out? An increasing number of books and articles are being written in English on the role of women both in India and elsewhere. But India is in the special position of having

an ancient, complex and highly intellectual socio-religious tradition of its own. Scholars from all over the world have spent lifetimes studying the contributions of the pandits of this rich classical past. Where then are the great debates on the status and role of women? Is there not a Sanskrit text on the subject from within this orthodox Hindu tradition?

Indeed there is. One such work that puts the orthodox point of view is Tryambakayajvan's Strīdharmapaddhati, or Guide to the Religious Status and Duties of Women. This little-known text was written in Sanskrit by an orthodox pandit in eighteenth century Thanjavur (Tanjore) in southern India. While it is clearly not in the same class as the great digests of Sanskrit religious law (dharma-sāstra) such as the Smṛticandrikā or the Parāsaramādhavīya, its importance lies in the fact that it is the only extant work of its kind. Although many dharmasāstra texts contain a section pertaining to women (strīdharma), there are no other major works on the subject.²

From the socio-historical point of view, Tryambaka's treatise gives a remarkable insight into the daily routines of the eighteenth century court of Thanjavur, and in particular into the life of the orthodox Hindu woman within it. This is especially interesting in view of the fact that the text predates the nineteenth century social reforms instigated by Rammohan Roy and enacted by the British. With regard to eighteenth century Sanskrit scholarship, the treatise throws important light on the encyclopaedic *Dharmākūta* (see pp. 10–12 below), serving as a dharmaśāstric appendix to the saga of Rāma and Sītā as the ideal man and woman.

As always in *dharmaśāstra*, the result is an odd mixture of reality and utopia. It is a basic principle of *mīmāṃsā* philosophy that something can only be prohibited if its occurrence is possible.³ Thus the prohibitions on wearing no blouse during the day (section IIA, pp. 91-5 below), for example, or on wearing heavy earrings during love-making (section IID, pp. 241-2), imply that women in fact might have done these things. The injunctions betray the ideals of utopia: a woman should always wake before her husband

^{2.} It is particularly unfortunate that there is no surviving manuscript known of the text on *strīdharma* referred to by Kamalākarabhaṭṭa as his own work.

^{3.} prāptipūrvakah pratiședho bhavati // Śab.X.8.10.22.

(p. 52); she should herself attend upon her husband instead of delegating such duties to servants (pp. 64-5); she should think only of her husband, worshipping him as her god (pp. 273, 280-2, 300, etc.); and so on. Whether they seem to us to be important or trivial, these ideals are the visible signs of the orthodox Hindu culture that Tryambaka is trying to defend. The attack on Hindu 'righteousness' (dharma) must have seemed to come from many quarters at once: the constant threat of Muslim domination and the encroachment of Islam: the insidious influence of Christian missionaries (such as those at the Jesuit Mission at Madurai) and European traders (the Danes, the Dutch, the French and the British); the customs of the local Tamil population whose women (especially those involved in the productive sphere) enjoyed a far greater freedom than their sisters at the Maratha court; and the increasingly popular devotional religion (bhakti) which claimed that women and low-caste (sūdra) men could reach heaven directly without even attending to their traditional duties.

Tryambaka is a collectivist. His concern is not with women as individuals but as parts that fit into and therefore strengthen the whole. While advocating conformity, however, the treatise is itself an admission of the power of nonconformist women to wreck the entire edifice of Hindu orthodoxy. For when women are 'corrupted', all is lost (see note 7 below).

The norms presented in the Strīdharmapaddhati do not hold for all Hindu women in India today; yet, as I shall explain, a surprising proportion of the behaviour described is praised or adhered to in traditional areas even now. Nor do they necessarily tell us how women behaved in Tryambaka's day; yet we may assume that high-caste women were expected and encouraged to conform. What they do tell us without any doubt is how an orthodox pandit in eighteenth century Thanjavur—summarising a tradition already over a thousand years old in his day—thought women ought to behave. This is the pervasive ideology in question. The aim of the current study is to explore it in depth.

Mode of presentation and overview of the contents of the Strīdharmapaddhati

The decision to merge translation and commentary rather than to conform to the usual separation of the two requires some explanation.

The main reason for this is that the text itself is not unduly difficult. The Sanskrit style is largely that of the lawbooks and the epics. It has none of the more tortuous complexities of, for example, a treatise in Sanskrit grammar or logic. The important task in a text of this nature is therefore not an analysis of roots and compounds, but an elucidation of the overall world view within which the treatise was written; an exploration not of specific words and their meanings, but of the values assumed and the prejudices implied. For this kind of intellectual history, it was deemed unnecessary to separate text and translation from commentary in the traditional manner.

Nonetheless, specialists in *dharmaśāstra* and others wishing to make a thorough check of text and translation will have no difficulty in doing so. In the major portions of this study, as explained below, every ruling and comment is rendered into English. While all translated passages are incorporated into the commentary, they are clearly distinguished from it by inverted commas. The complete Sanskrit text is provided in the form of corresponding notes, together with additional textual comments and references.

It was also felt that a merging of commentary and translation in this way to form a continuous narrative would appeal to a wider audience than merely the specialist. Indeed it was hoped that a more readable analysis of this rather bizarre document would make it accessible to scholars and non-specialists alike in a wide variety of fields: from religious law, Indology and comparative religion to anthropology, sociology and women's studies.

The basic divisions of the text follow those of the earliest available manuscript of Tryambaka's work (see appendix pp. 331–8). The order in which the individual topics are dealt with, unless otherwise specified, does likewise. The emphases, however, are mine.

In particular, while I have divided the work into five major sections (I-V), I have chosen to discuss only the first three of these at length. The reason for this is simple but compelling. In manuscript form, the complete text covers 94 folios, comprising 184 closely written sides excluding duplicates and blanks. A detailed analysis of the entire work would have been prohibitively long. It was essential, therefore, to concentrate on those sections which may be considered unique or of special relevance in a study of this kind, while merely touching on topics which—although of interest in themselves—are already receiving attention from other scholars.

A brief description of the contents of each of the five main sections will demonstrate the basis on which this choice was made. Furthermore, the exact length of each section, what proportion it forms of the whole text, and the mode of presentation used in the current study for each one (i.e. translation and commentary, extended essay, or summary) is given below in the form of a table.

Section I contains Tryambaka's introductory remarks and is extremely short: only two and a half sides in manuscript form, representing 1½ per cent of the total work. However, precisely because it is the opening section and thus provides a first sketch of the general framework into which the treatise will fit, it deserves special consideration. A coherent analysis of this section is essential in order to make this framework clear at the outset. This entails a precise English translation of Tryambaka's text (indicated by inverted commas), together with the complete Sanskrit text (given as corresponding notes), and followed by a detailed explanation of the meaning and implications of each point raised. As a result, some of the more important assumptions and unarticulated tensions—even contradictions—inherent in the traditional image of the orthodox Hindu wife are brought to the fore.

In this and all subsequent sections, each textual attribution made by Tryambaka either for individual rulings or, indiscriminately, for groups of rulings is indicated in two ways. When introducing or commenting on a given ruling, the attribution is mentioned: either as given in the text if there can be no confusion (e.g. 'according to Manu' for manuh); or, if necessary, in an expanded form (e.g. 'in the Anuśāsanaparvan of the Mahābhārata' for tathā cānuśāsanike). Secondly, the attribution is given in abbreviated form in parenthesis in the Sanskrit note (e.g. Sdhp. 21v.3-4 (Rām.) (Mbh.XIII.38.29b; in this case indicating that, although Tryambaka attributes the quotation to the Rāmāyaṇa, it in fact comes from the Mahābhārata). While every effort has been made to provide a source for each quotation given, some gaps inevitably remain. The author would be glad to hear from readers able to fill any of them.

Section II constitutes the bulk of this study. In terms of Tryambaka's text, however, it represents less than a fifth of the whole. But this compact and complex section of the Strīdharmapaddhati is unique. While detailed descriptions of the daily practice of the orthodox Hindu male householder form a recurrent and important

topic of *dharmaśāstra*, it is unusual to find parallel rulings for women at any length.

This rare attempt to map out a woman's day in detail (strīnām āhnikam) therefore deserves careful consideration. For everything the good Hindu wife should do—from the moment she wakes in the morning to the moment she sleeps at night—is discussed from the point of view of the 'sacred norms' of religious law (dharmaśāstra). Some of the rulings are identical to the equivalent rulings applied to men; some are the same in principle but different in detail; others relate to the husband's obligations and thus to the wife's corresponding duty to assist him in fulfilling them; still others, largely those concerned with housework, are peculiar to women. A close analysis of both the explicit beliefs expressed and the implicit understandings involved is rewarding.

The mode of presentation in this section is identical to that in section I: a precise English translation; the complete Sanskrit text given as notes; and a detailed discussion of each point raised. In particular, each ruling is discussed in the specific context of dharmaśāstra, as far as possible allowing the discipline to speak for itself. For ease of assimilation, this large body of rules has been further subdivided into four: those pertaining to the period before dawn (section IIA, pp. 51-101); those pertaining to the rituals at dawn (section IIB, pp. 102-55); those relating to the daytime (section IIC, pp. 156-233); and those associated with the evening (section IID, pp. 234-45).

Section III covers just under three manuscript sides, representing a mere $1\frac{1}{2}$ per cent of the total work. But it contains a fascinating and original digression on the inherent nature of women ($str\bar{s}vabh\bar{a}vah$) that deserves more detailed elaboration.

For Tryambaka bravely faces, and attempts to resolve, an apparently insuperable problem here. Briefly, it runs as follows. If, as is widely acknowledged, women are inherently wicked, is there any point in instructing them on how to be virtuous? Is not the *Strīdharmapaddhati* itself a waste of time?

Tryambaka's response is twofold. First, he admits that women are innately wicked; indeed he argues the point rather forcefully. Secondly, he insists that women also possess innate good qualities such as purity, and that—as women—they are uniquely blessed; and he proceeds to demonstrate this with equal vigour. On examination, this apparent contradiction rests on a radical (if theoretically

illogical) distinction between two crucial concepts relating to women: strīsvabhāva (the wicked nature of women) and strīdharma (the virtuous behaviour of women or, more accurately, wives). This distinction underlies many of the extraordinary pronouncements concerning women that must strike anyone familiar with Indian literature. The physical aspects of being female—menstruation, sexuality, childbirth, and so on—are taboo; women as biological creatures are condemned; the wild untamed goddesses, their counterparts in myth and symbol, are feared and appeased. Respect, even reverence, is reserved for those women in whom the biological has been controlled: the obedient wife, the selfless mother, and the gentle goddesses of the Indian imagination.

So important is this section to an understanding of the complexities surrounding the position of women in Indian culture that it has been treated somewhat differently from sections I and II. None of the rulings have escaped translation; nor is any of the corresponding Sanskrit absent from the notes. However, the entire section has been incorporated into an expanded essay on the nature of women in orthodox Hindu thought. The resulting presentation is no less faithful to Tryambaka's work than the previous ones.

Section IV covers sixty and a half manuscript sides and represents a third of the whole work. However, for the reasons outlined above, it has been considered in far less detail than the foregoing sections.

Under the general heading of 'duties common to all women' (strīnām sādhāraṇā dharmāh), Tryambaka groups together a variety of rulings to form nine extremely important and stimulating topics: general rulings on the behaviour appropriate to women; things a woman should avoid (varjanīyāh); women's property (strīdhanam); the concept of the devoted wife (pativratā); menstruation (rajasvalādharmāh); pregnancy (garbhinīdharmāh); the woman whose husband is away (proṣitabhartṛkādharmāh); the practice of suttee (more properly, of 'becoming satī') or dying with one's husband (sahagamanavidhih); and widowhood (vidhavādharmāh). Clearly, each of these topics would benefit from a monograph of its own. Tryambaka's rather laboured recommendation of sahagamana, or becoming satī, is of particular interest. In this study, however, because of the decision to concentrate fully on sections I-III, close translation and detailed analysis are replaced by summary.

Both Tryambaka's divisions, and the order in which he deals with them, have been maintained. Within each subsection, the

general attitude has been summarised; the main arguments quoted or paraphrased; and the important points highlighted. The more crucial, resounding or better-known rulings are translated in full, with the corresponding Sanskrit text given as notes. It is hoped that this treatment will provide readers with sufficient preliminary information on each topic to inspire them to pursue their interests elsewhere.

Section V is the longest: there are eighty-one and a half manuscript sides, representing almost half of the whole work. While section II of Tryambaka's treatise is probably intended as a kind of instruction manual for the chief wife of the head of the household, together with her co-wives, this section seems to be more a collection of inspirational material perhaps directed primarily towards the new daughters-in-law coming as young brides into the home. In essence, however, it contains only one point: that a woman's highest duty is service to her husband.

This unwieldy section forms the conclusion to Tryambaka's treatise. His single stark message is defined in three ways: that she should have no regard for her own life; that she should even allow herself to be sold; and that obedience to her husband takes precedence over all other religious duties. These three subpoints are then illustrated at varying lengths with stories culled from the epics and purāṇas, often without added comment. Some of his quotations are short, others extremely long; many are well known; most have been translated in full by other scholars elsewhere.

There follows a brief discussion of what is meant by 'service to one's husband' and 'obedience to his command'; and whether the two could ever be in conflict. The next thirty-five manuscript sides tell virtually the whole story of Sāvitrī, the most famous pativratā of all, taken verbatim from the Mahābhārata. The remaining three and a half pages consist of Tryambaka's final summary, the closing verses, and the colophon.

The treatment of this section is similar to that of section IV. Tryambaka's general approach to this mass of material has been retained: the main divisions, and the order in which they are taken, are his. The stories he quotes at such length are summarised as briefly as possible; and no additional comment is made unless strictly necessary. A few rulings and quotations that are especially appropriate or significant are translated in full with the corresponding Sanskrit text given as notes. The final summary, the closing

verses, and the colophon each receive a full translation for which the Sanskrit text is also given.

Figure 1 shows the mode of presentation.

Section nos.	Folio nos.	No. of MS sides		Proportion of text (%)		Mode of presentation
I III	1v.1-2v.5 2v.5-21r.3 21r.3-22r.8	2½ 36½ 3	42	1½ 19¾ 1½	22 i	Full trans.; Skt text; detailed comment. Full trans. & Skt text incorp, in ext. essay.
IV	22r.8-48v.6	601	142	33	774	Summary + selected trans. & text.
v	48v.6-88r.1	811	142	441		
			184		100	

Figure 1. The Mode of Presentation

The author of the Stridharmapaddhati

The issue involves three names.

1. Tryambakayajvan, to whom the Strīdharmapaddhati is ascribed in the colophon;

2. Tryambakarāyamakhin, the most famous of the family of pandit-ministers at the court of the Maratha Rajas of Thanjavur, and the ascribed author of the *Dharmākūta*, a remarkable encyclopaedic commentary on the *Rāmāyaṇa*; and

3. Dhundhirāja(vyāsayajvan), court pandit and poet, protégé of Tryambakarāyamakhin, and author of the Mudrārākṣasavyākhyā

The relationship between these three is far from clear.

Raghavan's New Catalogus Catalogorum gives the following information.

1. Tryambakayajvan, pupil of Yajñeśa, is the author of the Strīdharmapaddhati and the Gārhasthyadīpikā.

2. Tryambakarāyamakhin, the minister of Serfojī, is the patron of Dhundhirāja and the ascribed author of the *Dharmākūta*, which text was in fact composed by his protégé.

3. Dhundhirāja, son of Laksmanavyāsa, protégé of Tryambakarāyamakhin, Śāhaji, Serfoji and Raghunātha, is the author of the Dharmākūta (ascribed to Tryambakarāyamakhin), he Mudrārākṣasavyākhyā, the Rājakośanighantu (ascribed to Raghu-

nātha) and the Śāhavilāsagītā.

In his introduction to the Śāhendravilāsa, Raghavan states categorically that the author of the Strīdharmapaddhati and the Gārhasthyadīpikā is not the pandit-minister, Tryambakarāyamakhin (1952:28, note 2).

Sastri's Descriptive Catalogue of the Sanskrit Manuscripts in the Sarasvati Mahal Library gives somewhat different information.

- 1. Under 'Tryambakayajvan', the Strīdharmapaddhati and the Gārhasthyadīpikā are listed in two separate entries. No connection is made between the two.
- 2. Under 'Tryambakarāyamakhin', we find that this is the author of the *Dharmākūta* and that the author's name is given variously as Tryambakarāyamakhin, Tryambakayajvan and Tryambakamakhin.
- 3. Under 'Dundhivyāsa' and 'Dundhirāja', son of Lakṣmaṇa-sudhī, we find two works listed: the *Mudrārākṣasavyākhyā* and the Śāhavilāsagītā. Sastri too notes that the Tryambakayajvan of the *Strīdharmapaddhati* and the Tryambakarāyamakhin of the *Dharmākūta* are not the same.

Several Tryambakas are listed in J.H. Vora's Kavikāvyakālakalpanā (an alphabetical index to the dates of Indian authors and works, written in Gujarati and loosely based on Aufrecht). Among them,

1. 'Tryambaka' is described as the pupil of Yajñeśa and the author of the Gārhasthyapaddhati;

2. 'Tryambakayajvan' as the author of the Dharmākūta; and

3. 'Tryambakarāyamakhin' as the author of the Strīdharma-paddhati and the Kuladharmapaddhati. (The Kuladharmapaddhati is given in Raghavan's catalogue as a tantric work by yet another Tryambaka about whom one knows nothing more. Winternitz (1905:271) describes it as a work on tantric rites belonging to the nineteenth century. There is no manuscript of this text in the Sarasvati Mahal Library.)

I maintain that 'Tryambakayajvan' is Tryambakarāyamakhin; and thus that the author of the Strīdharmapaddhati is also the author of both the Gārhasthyadīpikā and the famous Dharmākūta. The

evidence is as follows.

First, the colophons of the Strīdharmapaddhati and the Gār-

hasthyadīpikā are identical, each ascribing authorship to Tryambakayajvan, pupil of Yajñeśa.4 Secondly, the author of the Dharmākūta also gives his teacher's name as Yajñeśa (e.g. Dharmāk. VI.p.457). Thirdly, there is a clear statement in the Strīdharmapaddhati itself that its author also wrote the Dharmākūta. On the subject of wearing the tilaka, a lengthy quotation from the Dharmākūta is prefaced with the words: 'For in the Dharmākūta, (the commentary) on the Rāmāyana, which was written by me...' (ata evāsmatkrtarāmāyanadharmākūte; see section II, p. 98, note 74). In addition, the Dharmākūta is both cited (e.g. 'Further examples are to be found in the Dharmakuta (commentary) on the Rāmāyaṇa'; see section III, p. 250, note 18) and quoted at length (see section IIA, pp. 96, 98-100, notes 73, 75-8; etc.). Finally, the titles yajvan and makhin are synonymous, probably commemorating the great sacrifice performed by the pandit-minister and described by Bhagavantarāya in the Rāghavābhyudaya (Raghavan 1952:26).

All this suggests that Tryambakayajvan and Tryambakarāyamakhin are indeed one and the same; and that this one Tryambaka wrote all three works. In that case, the earliest date for the composition of the *Strīdharmapaddhati* is the year when the *Dharmākūta* was completed (1719); the latest that of the year of minister Tryambakarāya's death (1750).

The relationship between Tryambaka and Dhundhirāja is less clear. As Raghavan points out in his introduction to the Śāhendravilāsa, the introductory verses in Dhundhirāja's Mudrārākṣasavyākhyā are identical to those in the Dharmākūta. Raghavan concludes that Dhundhirāja is the author of both works, thereby strengthening his description of himself as the king's paurānika (1952:26-7). The custom of attributing works to a king or minister is certainly common enough to warrant this assumption. However, it is also possible that Tryambaka wrote the Mudrārākṣasavyākhyā, or at least that he lifted the introductory verses from it. Since the author of the Dharmākūta is, as I have argued, the author of the Strīdharmapaddhati and the Gārhasthyadīpikā as well, I prefer to withhold judgement on this important point until further detailed textual analysis of all four texts can be made, a task outside the scope of a study of this kind.

^{4.} guruyajñeśakrpayā śrīmattryambakayajvanā / prītaye śrīmrsimhasya kṛtā gārhasthyadīpikā // Gārhasthyadīpikā 59r.2. Cf. Sdhp. 88r. 7-8, section V, note 10.

Throughout my discussion of the Strīdharmapaddhati, I shall therefore refer to the author as 'Tryambaka'. This assumes the identity of Tryambakayajvan and Tryambakarāyamakhin but not necessarily the substitution of Dhundhirāja for them both. Additional information on the lives and works of both these men is given below (pp. 16–19).

The political background: the Maratha Rajas of Thanjavur

The Maratha lineage can be traced back to Bābājī Bhosle (c.1533—97), the hereditary village headman of several villages near Pune in Maharashtra. His grandson, Shāhjī, married twice: leaving his first wife and son in the Deccan, he took his second wife and son with him on his military expeditions to the south. By 1676, both Bābājī's great-grandsons—Śivājī (1627–80) in the Deccan and his half-brother Ekojī (c.1630–86) in Thanjavur—had set themselves up as independent Hindu kings in an India dominated by Muslim overlords. (For a fuller account of this early period, see Leslie 1983(2): appendix B.) It is the Maratha dynasty at Thanjavur that concerns us here (figure 2).

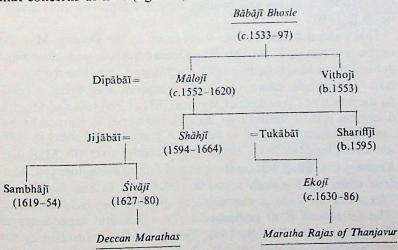


Figure 2. Origins of the Maratha Rajas of Thanjavur

At first, Ekoji's kingdom comprised most of the Thanjavur district, Arni, Porto Novo, and Shāhji's large jāgīr lands of Bangalore; but it was soon reduced. On Shāhji's death, Śivājī demanded his legal share of his father's wealth, property and lands in the

south. When Ekojī refused, Śivājī made an alliance with the Sultan of Golkonda and marched into Karnataka. By 1677, all except Thanjavur itself was under his command. At last, encouraged by his queen, Dīpāmbā, Ekojī surrendered. In return for a large sum of money, half the family jewels, and half the revenue on Shāhjī's southern jāgīrs, he was allowed to keep Thanjavur; and the jāgīr lands were restored to him. For her part in the affair, Dīpāmbā received the revenue of the districts of Bangalore, a grant that was to be handed on through the female line (see pp. 277-80 for Tryambaka's discussion of women's property). In addition, Ekoji was formally released from his obligation to the Bijapur sultanate: he was to rule as an independent king, answerable only to his half-brother in the Deccan. (For the complete treaty between Śivājī and Ekojī, see Takakhav 1921:459-62). This agreement was soon validated by Bijapur. For when Sivaji returned to the Deccan in c.1678, he was called upon to defend the Sultan against Mughal attack. A new treaty was signed: the Adil-Shahi government renounced all claims to Shāhjī's southern jāgīrs, including Thanjavur, and ceded all such claims to Śivājī. Ekojī's well-founded fears of dependency on his half-brother were not removed until Śivājī's death in 1680.

That independence too was short-lived. In the Deccan, Maratha opposition was at a low ebb. The Deccan Sultans were conquered in turn by the Mughals. In c.1687, the Mughal army entered Karnataka. Meanwhile, more of Ekoji's kingdom was being eroded. As the power of Cikkadeva of Mysore (1672-1704) rose and Mughal dominion spread southwards, Ekoji's territories in Karnataka became increasingly difficult to defend. A grant of Cikkadeva in 1686, for example, describes a number of victories over the Marathas. At one point, Ekoji was on the point of selling Bangalore to Cikkadeva when the Mughals seized it and sold it to him themselves. Cikkadeva then seized the adjacent districts also held by Ekoji. (The fortress of Arni continued to be a nominal dependency of Thanjavur until 1771.) By 1691, Thanjavur was controlled by the Mughals who received an annual tribute of four lakhs (although an army usually had to march on Thanjavur to collect it). Ekoji had shifted his allegiance once more: first from Bijapur to Śivājī; now from Śivājī to the Mughals. Thanjavur was completely cut off from the great Maratha confederacy that Sivaji had begun to build.

It is against this background of double isolation that the

Thanjavur dynasty (figure 3), should be considered: the cultural isolation of a ruling Maratha elite amidst a Tamil-speaking population; the political and psychological isolation of a Hindu kingdom struggling to retain both independence and identity in the face of Mughal might.

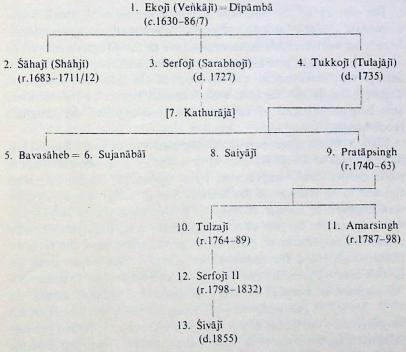


Figure 3. The Maratha Rajas of Thanjavur

According to Marathi inscriptions in the Bṛhadīśvara temple, Ekojī died in 1682 (Gopalan 1980:ix; Marathi text, śaka 1604, p.56; 1683, Subramanian 1928:17). The records of the East India Company make frequent references to him for a decade or more after that but this may indicate a confusion between him and his eldest son. Other sources (e.g. the *Dharmākūta*, intro.; Śāhendravilāsa II.98-9; an inscription in Pattukottai) suggest that Ekojī abdicated in favour of Śāhajī in 1683-4, but did not actually die until 1686-7 (Subramanian 1928:17-18). According to the Marathi

5. For somewhat different dates based on the Modi documents of Thanjavur preserved in Danish archives, and for a useful discussion of the various calendrical systems used, see Strandberg 1983:22,40-43. inscription, the three sons ruled jointly; in practice, this seems to have meant that the younger ones acted as viceroys in their own subas. After Śāhajī's death in 1711-12, Serfojī and Tukkojī are said to have ruled jointly until the elder's death in 1727. Both Śāhajī and Serfojī died without heirs. Tukkojī ruled alone until his death in 1735.

The history of the Maratha Rajas is dotted with small wars: a constant struggle for land and power between adjoining kingdoms. When the centre of Maratha opposition to the Mughals moved to Jiñjī, Śāhajī sent help to his cousin, Rājarām, and his queen, Tārābāī. Serfojī was involved in the division of the Maratha kingdom. Tukkojī concluded the war with Rāmnad begun by his brother; sent help to Mīnākṣī of Trichinopoly; and expelled the Mughals from Madurai.

1736-9 was a dark period of disputed successions. Bavasāheb (also known as Ekoji II) died after a year. His queen ruled for a while before being imprisoned by a pretender, Kathurājā, who claimed to be the son of the heirless Serfoji. After a few days, he was deposed in favour of Saiyājī. Within two years, Saiyājī too was deposed in favour of an illegitimate son, Pratapsingh, who proceeded to remove all trace of his predecessor from the records. Pratapsingh ruled for twenty-three years, during which time the British entered the affairs of Thanjavur and made their first successful attempt to acquire territory in India by military attack. In 1799, Serfoji II (an adopted son) resigned the government of his kingdom into the hands of the East India Company, with a proviso safeguarding his own rank and maintenance: Thanjavur became a British province while its raja received a fixed allowance and a proportion of the revenue. When Serfoji II died in 1832, the same privileges were accorded to his son Śivājī until his death in 1855. The lack of natural (i.e. not adopted) male heirs at this point enabled the British to take over completely: in accordance with Dalhousie's 'doctrine of lapse', the title and privileges of raja were abolished.

The intellectual milieu

The reigns of Ekoji and his three sons (1676–1736) have left an astonishing crop of literature in several languages. Telugu was inherited from the Nāyaks (see Leslie 1983(2): appendix B), but the Telugu works of this period are largely inferior to those produced under the Nāyaks. The literature in Tamil, the language of the

people, is also not of the highest quality. But the contribution to Marathi and Sanskrit literature is considerable.

Of the Marathi authors of Thanjavur, perhaps the best known are Raghunātha Pandita, Ānandatanaya, Gosavinandana and Subhan Rāo. Most of their works are short compositions on purānic or religious subjects, or short metrical works describing Śāhajī, his mother Dīpāmbā, and the splendours of Thanjavur. As for Sanskrit literature, this was a period of the most intensive scholarship due in particular to the patronage of the royal family and the family of pandit-ministers that guided them.

Of the four kings of the period, Ekoji is remembered mainly for his continued use of the Telugu language at court, and of the cultural

and musical traditions of the Nāyaks.

Śāhajī was renowned as a scholar, linguist and composer. He seems to have been proficient in Marathi, Telugu, Sanskrit, Persian and Hindi, and a remarkable number of works in several languages are ascribed to him (Sastri 1934:xxviii-ix; Raghavan 1952:22). These are largely dramatic or poetic works; musical compositions, especially padas in praise of the family deity, Śrī Tvāgarāja or Tyageśa of Tiruvarur; and works dealing with the science of music. He himself is eulogised in many works, including the Śāhendravilāsa by the revered saint Śrī Venkateśvara (Ayyāvāl). Several of Śāhajī's works concern themes that suggest a serious interest in the ideals of strīdharma (e.g. the stories of Pārvatī, Sītā, Draupadī; a eulogy of pativratādharma; a poem on a woman's behaviour when her husband is away; another to his mother, Dīpāmbā; and so on). In 1693, probably under the influence of his minister, Tryambakarāya, Śāhajī renamed the village of Tiruviśanallūr as Śāhajīrājapuram and made a gift of it to forty-five scholars and poets for the perpetual performance of sacrifices and the free creation of religious, literary and musical works. Raghavan's excellent introduction to his edition of the Śāhendravilāsa gives the names and works of each of these pandits (1952:37-49). They include such famous names as Rāmabhadra Dīksita (adept in all the philosophies and known as the modern Patañjali), Bhāskara Dīkṣita, Vedakavi, Mahādevakavi and Śrīdhara Venkateśvara. As a result of Śāhajī's beneficence, the village became the centre of scholarship in languages, literature, philosophy and medicine throughout the Maratha period in Thanjavur.

Kings Serfoji and Tukkoji continued these traditions of scholar-

ship and music, both composing works themselves and, like Sāhajī, patronising whole villages of learned men. Literature and inscriptions are eloquent in praise of their patronage.

The ministers who served and guided these scholar-kings were themselves great supporters of Vedic tradition and Sanskrit learning. They too performed sacrifices, patronised individual scholars,

and endowed scholastic settlements.

Perhaps the most famous of these was Tryambakarāyamakhin (1665-1750) who, according to his own account was trained by Ekojī to be Śāhajī's minister (Dharmāk.: intro.) Tryambakarāya is famous in south India even today both as a minister and as a writer on religious law (dharmaśāstra). In the Śāhendravilāsa, he is described as Śāhajī's learned minister, the performer of Vedic sacrifices and the patron of scholars (VI.40-4). His fame today rests in particular on the Dharmākūta, a massive Sanskrit commentary commissioned by Serfojī on the epic poem, the Rāmāyaṇa. It is an original and ambitious work, consisting of six separate and lengthy dissertations on six of the seven sections of the epic poem. Quite unlike other commentaries, it gives a step-by-step explanation of how the story of the Rāmāyaṇa accords with the precepts of religious law.

Figure 4 gives the genealogy of the ministerial family constructed according to the information given in Dhundhirāja's commentary on the *Mudrārākṣasa* and Appadīkṣita's Ācāranavanīta (TD.18048/

9; see also Krishnamachariar 1937: 246-8).

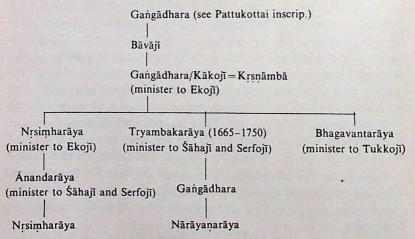


Figure 4. The family of ministers

As noted above, Tryambakarāya is known as the author of the Dharmākūta, and a patron of the court pandit and poet, Dhuṇdhirājavyāsa (see pp. 10–13). Bhagavantarāya is said to be the author of the Mukundavilāsa, the Uttaracampū and the Rāghavābhyudaya. Änandarāya is held to be the author of the Āśvalāyanagrhyasūtravṛtti, the Jīvānandanāṭaka, the Vidyāpariṇayanāṭaka and a commentary on it; and the patron of Vedakavi, Vāsudeva Dīkṣita and Appadhvārin among others. His son, Nṛṣiṃharāya, is said to be the author of the Tripuravijayacampū; while Tryambakarāya's grandson, Nārāyaṇarāya, is said to have composed the Vikramasenacampū (Raghavan 1952:25–9; Krishnamachariar 1937: 246–7).

Of Dhundhirāja, the court poet, we know surprisingly little. He was a Maratha brahmin of Varanasi, resident at Svamimalai near Thanjavur. Although patronised by both kings (Śāhajī and Serfojī) and ministers (Tryambaka and Raghunātha), he seems to have had a special link with Śāhajī. For he describes himself as the king's paurānika and, when he wrote the Śāhavilāsagītā, Śāhajī gave him the title 'Abhinavajayadeva'. Finally, on the end page of Jñānavilāsagītā by Jagannātha (TD MS no.3792), there is a comment written in another hand that the MS was found in Varanasi and sent to Thanjavur by Dhundhirājayajvan (Raghavan 1952:20, 54–5). Figure 5 shows the genealogy assembled from the works ascribed to him.

Lakṣmaṇavyāsa/Lakṣmaṇasudhī

Dhuṇḍhirāja (vyāsayajvan)

Bālakṛṣṇa
Śaṅkaradīkṣita
(author of Pradyumnavijaya)

Figure 5. Dhundhirāja, court poet

Among the many and varied compositions inspired or commissioned during this period of intense royal and ministerial example and patronage was Tryambakayajvan's Strīdharmapaddhati.

The women of the period

As anthropological fieldwork increasingly shows, the more orthodox

ideas concerning women tend to be held even today by high-ranking, land-holding groups among whom patrilineage is strong and wives are economically dependent upon their husbands and their husbands families. Jacobson, for example, notes that the landed brahmins of Thanjavur and western Karnataka fit this category (1978:100). Certainly, Tryambaka's concern in the Strīdharmapaddhati seems to be solely with the imported Maratha elite, that is, with the prosperous (and largely ksatriva) court at Thanjavur. There are no references to women agricultural labourers, market women, or any of the vast army of women who must have been living and working outside the context of the court. The few lower-class or 'outsider' women who are mentioned are referred to fleetingly, with either indifference (e.g. female servants) or disapproval (e.g. courtesans, gambling women, washerwomen, female mendicants, etc.; see section IIC, p. 171). The women in Tryambaka's scheme of things are severely restricted — personally, socially, economically, sexually - and the most extreme standards of orthodox and idealised behaviour are demanded of them.

But what do we know about the Maratha élite at court?

First, it seems that for the royal family at least polygamy was the rule. Apart from his chief wife, Dīpāmbā, Ekojī had another wife and nine mistresses who produced between them ten sons; as is the custom, daughters are not mentioned. Śāhajī had several mistresses; Serfojī three queens; and Tukkojī five wives and six concubines from various castes. This seems to have presented political rather than economic problems. Historians write of disputed successions, the interference of queens and mistresses in public life, court intrigues, poisonings, domestic tensions, and the consequent effects on the administration of the state (e.g. Subramanian 1928:23ff.). In such a context, a work prescribing the proper behaviour of women might well have appeared to both kings and ministers to be a project of vital importance.

Secondly, what do we know of any individual women at this Maratha court? In fact, the only woman who emerges as a distinct individual is Dīpāmbā (Dīpābaī or Dīpāmbikā), Ekojī's chief wife. It was she who was instrumental in arranging the conciliation between Ekojī and Śivājī, thereby playing a role so crucial to them both that it is commemorated in the treaty they signed (see pp. 13-14 above). Dīpāmbā was evidently both influential and popular. She is frequently mentioned in works of the period and always in

terms of praise. The Śāhendravilāsa, for example, gives an account of Dīpāmbā's marriage to Ekojī (I.47-56), her appearance and good qualities (I.57-61), and her pregnancy (I.62-7).

Dīpāmbā is also known to have been the special patron of Raghunātha Paṇḍita, author of the *Prāyaścittakutūhala* and the *Bhojanakutūhala* among other works. In his Marathi work, the *Narakavarṇana*, for example, he lists the Sanskrit and Marathi texts he has written and praises Dīpāmbā for her generous patronage. At least two of his Marathi works (the *Narakavarṇana* and the *Pativratādharma*) are both devoted to *strīdharma* and commissioned by Dīpāmbā. The colophon of the *Narakavarṇana* reads as follows.

Dīpāmbā's words are like the sacred scriptures (vedavacana.) She feels that because of Muslim influence, people are turning away from Hindu principles; and that is why she has asked Raghunātha to write on the religious role of women (strīdharma). She has given a settlement for poets, a village called Dīpāmbāpuram, and she has built there a Śiva temple like the one at Vārāṇaṣī. Dīpāmbā married Ekojī who is like Śiva incarnate; and she has had three sons, who are like the three great goals of human life (puruṣārtha) and who praise her greatly (Goswami 1932: vol.II, MS no.573).

The isolation of the Hindu kingdom of Thanjavur amidst Muslim domination seems to have led those in positions of influence to consider ways of reinforcing their own cultural ideals. Dīpāmbā, chief queen and later revered queen mother, was among those who took it upon herself to commission works of this kind (see also Gode 1954).

That a treatise on the proper behaviour of women was considered an appropriate response to the Muslim threat may be interpreted in several ways. The basic assumption of religious law (dharmaśāstra) is that, if every individual performs his allotted role, universal harmony will result. Dīpāmbā's commission could mean that she was simply attending to the area of 'righteousness' (dharma) that was deemed of fitting concern for a woman. Alternatively, she

^{6.} The Pativratopākhyāna is listed separately in the Thanjavur Catalogue of Marathi manuscripts, but closer inspection reveals that it is in fact identical with the Pativratādharma with the addition of one verse (Goswami 1932: II, MS. nos. 578, 579).

may have believed women to be especially guilty of the fault of turning away from Hindu principles. She may also have believed that reinforcing the proper role of women in society was the surest way to restore the orthodox Hindu moral code and thus, by extension, the perfect world. Perhaps, like Bhuribai, she too saw the dutiful wife as 'an embodiment of age-old goddess-like virtue and a vital support of the very firmament' (Jacobson 1978:135). Certainly, as an educated woman she would have known the judgement of the Bhagavadgītā: 'When wickedness (adharma) triumphs, it is the womenfolk who are corrupted; and once the women are corrupted, there will be the mixing of castes'7 and all the horrors that that entails (i.e. hell and destruction; Gītā I.42-4).

It is extremely tempting to suggest that the influence of Dīpāmbā is also to be felt in the composition of the Strīdharmapaddhati. The Marathi Pativratādharma, which we know was commissioned by her, presents teachings on the ideal woman culled from the epics and puranas. The Stridharmapaddhati does much the same thing, but in greater depth and detail, and with greater recourse to dharmaśāstric works. Whether or not Dīpāmbā actually commissioned the latter, however, it seems safe to conclude that both treatises were inspired by similar fears and aspirations concerning women at that time.

Although neither Dīpāmbā nor Tryambaka give clear instructions regarding when a text like this might have been read, heard or studied by the women for whom it was written, we may hazard an informed guess. For it was a dharmaśāstric ideal - certainly for men but probably for women too - that one should spend the hot period after the midday meal listening to learned pandits reciting suitable passages from the epics and puranas (see section II, pp. 49 and 232-3). In Bāna's Kādambarī, for example, we read of court women such as queen Vilāsavatī doing just this. It is therefore not unreasonable to assume that Tryambaka's Strīdharmapaddhati was written for precisely this purpose: to be read aloud and expounded upon for the benefit of the women of the Thaniavur court during their afternoon siesta period. The women themselves need not have been proficient in Sanskrit, or even literate. For the court pandit responsible for the recitation would no doubt have trans-

^{7.} adharmābhibhavāt krsna pradusyanti kulastriyah/ strīsu dustāsu vārsneya jāvate varnasamkarah // Gītā 1.41.

lated freely and expansively into Marathi in order to bring these vital pronouncements concerning the proper behaviour of women to the attention of those for whom they were intended.

The literary genre: the Strīdharmapaddhati in the context of religious law (dharmaśāstra)

As Derrett points out, the Sanskrit word for 'law' (naya) rarely occurs in the voluminous literature of dharmaśästra: for this is not the clear-cut world of legalities but the vaguer, utopian realm of precepts (1973(1):11).

If one asks an Indian villager about his religion, he describes not rituals nor the ascetic life but 'righteousness' (dharma). Derived from the root \sqrt{dhr} meaning 'to bear, support, maintain', dharma means that which sustains creation, the eternal principle underlying the universe, the fundamental world order. The concept is both descriptive and prescriptive, indicating both what is and what should be: the real is the ideal. In the realm of individual action (svadharma for men, strīdharma for women), it refers both to what one does and what one ought to do. One's action, defined by circumstance, is also one's religious duty, for it was ordained to be so and is therefore right. In theory, at least, there is no conflict.

Crucial to the concept of dharma in the Vedic age was the notion of sacrifice by which men nourished the gods so that they might have the strength to defeat the demons and uphold the law. In those days, the law of the universe was the law of sacrifice. Later, the concept extended beyond sacrifice (though still including it) to the moral world, to the realm of conduct. Dharma now came to mean any action that conformed to the cosmic order and permitted the individual to realize his or her allotted destiny. Any action contrary to dharma brought its own automatic punishment. As Manu writes, 'When violated, dharma destroys; when preserved, dharma preserves; therefore dharma must not be violated, lest violated dharma destroy us.' 8

Thus the status and role in society of each individual, man or woman, not only reflects *dharma* but upholds it, and in doing so maintains the universe. One's religious duty, therefore, is to conform

^{8.} dharma eva hato hanti dharmo rakṣati rakṣitaḥ / tasmād dharmo nā hantavyo mā no dharmo hato 'vadhīt // Manu VIII.15.

to the moral precepts laid down by the specialists in and teachers of *dharma* in the vast literature of *dharmaśāstra*. These precepts are based on the three 'sources of *dharma'*: the *Vedas*, tradition, and accepted custom; while Manu (II.12) and Yājñavalkya (I.7) also allow an internal guideline (*ātmatuṣṭi*; literally, 'please yourself') if there is a conflict between the three external authorities. These precepts—in all their complexity of detail, disagreement and debate—are the concern and content of *dharmaśāstra*.

Derrett divides dharmaśāstra literature into two basic groups: primary material presented in the form of sūtras, smṛtis and purāṇas; and secondary material. The latter may be subdivided into five categories. First, there are the straightforward commentaries such as those by Medhātithi and Kuilūka on Manu. Secondly, there are the works of comparative scholarship like Vijñāneśvara's Mitākṣarā; or Aparārka's commentary on Yājñavalkya. Thirdly, there are the more controversial treatises on special subjects such as Jīmūtavāhana's Dāyabhāga on inheritance. Fourthly, there is the scissors-and-paste type of digest (e.g. Varadarāja's Vyavahāranirṇaya; Hemādri's Caturvargacintāmaṇi). Lastly, there is the superior digest that is more like a lecture with supporting quotations, such as Śrīdhara's Smṛtyarthasāra; Devaṇṇabhaṭṭa's Smṛticandrikā, the Parāśaramādhavīya, or Kamalākarabhaṭṭa's Nirṇayasindhu(Derrett 1973(1):24ff., 47ff.).

The Strīdharmapaddhati seems to fit Derrett's last sub-category best; yet it must be admitted that it is not in the same class as the great digests given as examples. As a treatise entirely devoted to the special subject of women, it also belongs to the third sub-category. In places, however, it shares characteristics of the fourth or inferior, scissors-and-paste type of digest: for example, most of the extremely lengthy section V consists of collected quotations with little or no additional comment.

Digests of both kinds are almost always the result of royal patronage. For a king sought to enhance his reputation as the upholder of *dharma* by employing scholars to compile appropriate works. This need would have been felt especially keenly by the orthodox Marathas of Thanjavur who, by Tryambaka's time, were completely cut off from the Sanskrit culture of the north, the hallowed region called *brahmāvarta* (Manu II.17–18).

Tryambaka himself seems to have been familiar with the major south Indian works on dharma. There are even marked similarities with some of the best-known south Indian digests: Vaidyanā-thadīkṣita's Smṛtimuktāphala, Devaṇṇabhaṭṭa's Smṛticandrikā, and the Parāśaramādhavīya. Indeed, the quotations and attributions made in the Strīdharmapaddhati are often so similar to those in the appropriate sections of the Smṛtimuktāphala that a consultation with the latter has clarified the occasional doubtful reading in the former.

With regard to the primary material quoted, Tryambaka gives considerable weight to the sūtras of Āpastamba, in particular the Apastambadharmasūtra and Haradatta's commentary on it, the Ujjvalā (spelled Ujvalā throughout). This emphasis, together with Tryambaka's use of the honorific plural for Apastamba alone (see section II B, pp. 136, 143, notes 34,44), suggests that he belonged to the Apastambaśākhā of the Krsnayajurveda. This agrees with recent research on śrauta ritual. According to Staal, for example, the southern tradition is 'characterised by the preponderance of the Taittirīya school of Black Yajur Veda with Apastamba as the prevailing sūtra' (1983: I, 170-1; map B; I, 3b, Table I). According to Smith, the Apastamba branch of the Krsnayajurveda was predominant for at least two millennia in much of south India and Maharashtra. Indeed, the Apastamba ritualists have maintained their srauta traditions more completely than have the ritualists of any other Vedic śākhās; to the extent that, today, the Apastambins comprise approximately 80 per cent of the practising Vedic ritualists in India (1984:xviii, 166 ff.; for recent śrauta traditions in Tamil Nadu in general and Thanjavur in particular, see also Kashikar and Parpola 1983:232-9, maps 4 and 4B).

The Strīdharmapaddhati of Tryambakayajvan

The Stridhammapaddhuti of Toyambakayajvan

I. Tryambaka's Introduction

(Sdhp. 1v. 1-2v. 5)

Tryambaka opens his treatise with a typical invocation: 'Hail to Ganādhipati! Hail to Sarasvatī! Hail to (the line) of teachers!'1 Ganādhipati, more commonly called Ganapati or Ganeśa ('Lord of troops'), is traditionally worshipped as the remover of obstacles. As 'one who causes an auspicious beginning' (mangalārambhah), he is invoked at the start of rituals or other projects. This is however a late development: Ganesa is not invoked in the grhya- or dharmasūtras. Sarasvatī is the goddess of eloquence and learning.

The text continues with four introductory verses.

1. 'Obedient service to one's husband (bhartrśuśrūsanam) is the primary religious duty enjoined by sacred tradition for women. When the daughter of the Himalayas (Pārvatī) realized that this duty was endorsed by her father, she put it into practice and so assumed the form (abhajata) of half the body of her husband. May she always show me how to follow the path of sacred law!'2

Śuśrūṣanam and śuśrūṣā (lit. 'desire to hear') cover a range of meanings and associations from the reverential (such as the Vedic student's ministrations to his teacher and the devotee's homage to his god) to the subservient (such as the obsequious services of the slave). With regard to women, it manages to combine all three and describes the proper attitude of the wife to her lord: obedience in matters of principle; diligent and attentive service in the practical matters of every day. It also bridges without difficulty the apparent gap between religious duties and daily chores: the wife's service to her husband in the home is her worship of her god. Tryambaka returns to this topic in his concluding section where he defines patisusrūsanam in three different ways (see section V, p. 305). In particular, he argues that the term 'service' (śuśrūṣā) covers every-

1. //śrī ganādhipataye namah// //śrī sarasvatyai namah// //śrī gurubhyo

namah// //Sdhp.lv.1.

^{2.} mukhyo dharmah smrtişu vihito bhartr su srūşanam hi/ strīnām etat pitur anumatam kāryam ity ākalayya // tat kurvānābhajata vapuso bhartur ardham himādreh/kanyā sā me diśatu satatam dharmamārgapravṛttim ||1|| Sdhp.1v.2-4. The metre is mandākrāntā.

thing that gives a husband pleasure; that there are clear parallels both with the son's relationship with his mother, and with the 'service' offered by the student to his teacher; and thus that 'obedience' $(\bar{a}j\bar{n}akarana)$ is included in the more general term 'service' $(\dot{s}u\dot{s}r\bar{u}s\bar{a}; see section V, pp. 312-13)$. Abhajata is probably intended here as a pun, for \sqrt{bhaj} may have a variety of meanings: 'to obtain as one's share'; 'to serve, honour or devote oneself to'; and 'to take on the shape or form of'.

The reference to Pārvatī, one of the most popular examples of the devoted wife, recalls the story told to explain the haritālikāvrata. This 'vow' or religious observance, performed by women alone and especially popular in Maharashtra even today, involves the worship of coloured clay images of Parvati, her (female) friend, and the symbol of the god Siva (the śivalinga). It is described only in the later medieval digests such as the Vratarāja of Viśvanātha, the Nirnayasindhu of Kamalākarabhatta, and the Vratārka of Śankarabhatta Ghāre (PVK V.i.p.144-5). The story, said to have been narrated to Parvatī by Siva himself, recounts how. by her own devotions Pārvatī both acquired Śiva as her husband (cf. Nagaswamy 1983:46-51) and attained the honour of becoming half of his body. This half-male, half-female form of Siva (ardhanārīśvara) is graphically depicted in temple sculptures such as those in the Elephanta caves off Bombay (cf. Zimmer 1983:vol.II, plates 256,258;139). Similarly, in the umāmaheśvarasamvāda section of the Mahābhārata, Siva reminds his wife that she is half of him, sprung from half his body,3

The image also reinforces the ideal oneness of the married human couple: husband and wife as complementary halves of one whole. This is a popular image. In the famous passage from the Brhadāranyakopaniṣad (I.4.1-2), the primeval Self in the shape of a man (puruṣavidhah) longs for a second: he falls (\sqrt{pat}) into two parts from which arise husband (pati) and wife (patnī). Hence their subsequent union is the reuniting of two halves. Similarly, in Sat.Br.V.2.1.10, the sacrificer includes his wife in the vājapeya ritual on the grounds that she is half of himself and he wishes to go to the 'supreme goal' complete. This much-extolled oneness does not, however, bear close examination. The Upaniṣadic Self, like Siva, continues to identify

^{3.} mama cārdham śarīrasya mama cārdhād vinihsṛtā/ ... tvam ...// Mbh.XIII.134.9a.

with his male half, pursuing the female in her various forms for the purpose of sexual intercourse. On the human level, the oneness of the married couple means not the merging of two individuals but the self-effacement of one of them. In the *Mahābhārata*, for example, Gāndhārī adopts not only her husband's lifestyle and interests, but his physical characteristics as well: she binds her eyes so as not to excel the blind Dhṛtarāṣṭra in any way (Mbh.I.110.14). As Tryambaka's treatise on women unfolds, it becomes increasingly clear that the ideal wife is one whose duties, purpose and identity derive entirely from her husband. In practical terms, as we shall see, this is what is meant by the oneness of marriage. For the goddess Pārvatī or the ideal woman such as Śakuntalā, the whole woman — as wife — becomes absorbed into half the man (*ardhaṃ bhāryā manuṣyasya*; Mbh.I.68.40a).

2. 'She who desired (only) to gain a husband's blessing long displayed the utmost devotion: (first,) because she wanted to show favour to the world; (secondly,) because it was advocated by sacred tradition; (thirdly,) because it was her father's command. (As a result,) she became one with the body of the Lord (Siva) whose crest jewel is the crescent moon. May Satī, gem of chaste women, today grant me knowledge in the way of the sacred law!'4

Satī is the daughter of Daksa; that is, Pārvatī in a previous birth. When Daksa insulted Śiva by refusing to invite him to his great sacrifice, Satī immolated herself in the fire (Bhāg.P.IV.2. 1-IV.4.34; Śiv. P., satīkhanda). Later, when the world was threatened by the demon Tāraka, it was prophesied that only the child of Śiva and Pārvatī could destroy him. So, 'in order to show favour to the world', Pārvatī set out to win Śiva: first by her beauty, and, when that failed, by her religious devotion. Eventually, Skanda was born and both gods and universe were saved (Śiv.P., pārvatīkhanda; Sk. P., kāśīkhanda; Rām.I; Kumārasambhava).

The importance of the son at this mythological level reinforces the orthodox view that the wife's main purpose is to be the bearer of a son for her husband's family. As Sakuntalā declares, a wife's 'wifehood' lies in the fact that a husband enters her and is reborn

^{4.} lokasyānujigṛkṣayā smṛtipurānoktyā pitus cājñayā/ susrūṣām paramām vidhāya suciram bhartuḥ prasādārthinī// dehādvaitam avāpa yā bhagavatas candrārdgacūdāmaṇeḥ/ dadyād adya satī satījanamaṇiḥ sā dharmapadyāmatim//2// Sdhp.lv.4-6. The metre is śārdūlavikrīditam.

from her.⁵ Satī reincarnates as Pārvatī to give birth to Skanda. Whether for goddess or mortal, Manu's dictum holds: women were created to give birth (Manu IX.96). In so doing, they fit into the ordained scheme of things and thus 'show favour to the world'. In the Śatapathabrāhmaṇa example quoted earlier, the sacrificer finds in this the logic behind the 'oneness' of the married couple: without a wife, a man cannot be reborn (naiva . . . prajāyate; meaning both 'to beget' and 'to become an embryo') and so remains incomplete (asarva); by taking a wife, he is reborn and so becomes complete (Sat.Br.V.2.1.10).

3. 'Those sacred laws which, when put into practice, bring women unparalleled fame, greater happiness in this world and the highest goal (in the next) are here described so that they may once more be thoroughly understood. At his mother's command (jananī-nidešavacasā), Tryambakayajvan has gathered together those sacred laws relating to women and now proclaims them one by one as they appear in the lawbooks, the purānas and so on.'6

After mātr, jananī is perhaps the commonest word for 'mother'. The invocations and references to Pārvatī may also suggest that Tryambaka is here (and in the final colophon; section V, p. 317, note 8) identifying his own mother with the mother of the universe. A third possibility is that the queen-mother (rājajananī) is meant. This meaning of jananī is attested by H.H. Wilson, presumably drawn from the examples provided to him by the pandits of Calcutta (MW 1976:411; xi). Certainly, Dīpāmbā, the mother of both Śāhajī and Serfojī (both of whom Tryambaka served as minister), was a powerful figure whose patronage of scholars is often cited. In particular, she is known to have commissioned Raghunātha Pandita to write two Marathi works on strīdharma at about this time: Narakavarnana and Pativratā-dharma (see my introduction, pp. 20-2).

4. 'I have gathered together some of these sacred laws relating to women, those which have generally come to be considered the

^{5.} bhāryām patiḥ sampravisya sa yasmāj jāyate punaḥ/ jāyāyā iti jāyātvam purāṇaḥ kavayo viduḥ// Mbh.I.68.36.

^{6.} yesām ācāraņena kīrtir atulā bhūyaḥ sukham caihikam/ nārīṇām gatir uttamā ca bhavati jñātum punaḥ kṛtsnaśaḥ // varnyante jananīnideśavacasā saṃgrhya te yoṣitām / dharmās tryambakayajvanā smṛtipurāṇādau pṛthak kīrtitāḥ //3// Sdhp.lv.6-9. The metre is śārdūlavikrīditam.

best and which are for the most part well known throughout sacred tradition. If virtuous women put them into practice, they will attain a good reputation, unequalled religious merit, immediate happiness in this world and heaven after death.'7

Tryambaka begins his introduction proper by explaining why the rules for purification (saucācāra) are examined first. 'For it is said that "if a man does not perform the rituals of purification, his actions will bear no fruit."8 In order to achieve results in other spheres, therefore, one must perform these rituals. This is why the rules for purification are investigated first.'9

It is not entirely clear which sense of sauca is intended here. In its wider sense, as defined by Hārīta, śauca is both external (bāhya) and internal (āntara or ābhyantara). External purification includes that of family (kula; due to a birth or death in the family), of objects (artha; such as the vessels and implements in use every day), and of the body (sarīra; in particular the cleansing of the body after urinating, etc.; see section IIA, pp. 71-4. Internal purification includes that of the mind (manasa), of the eye (caksusa; i.e. not looking at what should not be looked at), of the nose (ghrānya), of speech (vācya), and of the tongue (svādya). In this allembracing sense, therefore, śauca is the first path to dharma, the basis of brahman, the abode of prosperity, a soothing balm to the mind and so on.10

But this can hardly be what Tryambaka means. For the quotation he gives here reappears in his section on sauca in its narrower sense of the cleansing of the body after urinating and so on. Certainly, failure to follow the requirements laid down was deemed to

8. tatra [/] śaucācāravihīnasya samastā nisphalāḥ kriyāḥ/iti vacanāt// Sdhp.2r.2-3 (Daksa V.2; Sm.C.II.p.249. For the complete śloka (attrib. there to Baudh.), see section IIA, p.74, note 46.

9. itaradharmasāphalyasiddhyartham śaucācārasyāvaśyakatvamxity ādav

ācāro nirūpyate// Sdhp.2r.3-4.

10. saucam nāma dharmādipatho brahmāyatanam sriyo dhivāso manasah prasādanam devānām priyam ksetradarsanam buddhiprabodhanam//Grhastharatnākara, cited PVK II.i.p.651. Cf. Baudh.III.1.26; Daksa V.3.

^{7.} strīnām dharmāh katicana mayā prāyasah sārabhūtāh/ samgrhyante smrtisu bahusas tatra tatra prasiddhāh // kīrtih punyā sukrtam atulam saukhyam apy aihikam drāk/pretya svargo bhavati yadanusthānabhājām satīnām//4// Sdhp.1v.9-2r.2. The metre is mandākrāntā.

have dire consequences. In Mbh.III.56.3, for example, evil and difficulty (in the form of *kali*) take possession of Nala precisely because he has failed to wash his feet after urinating. But if, as seems likely, this narrow meaning is intended, then Tryambaka is speaking somewhat loosely here: he does not in fact examine *śauca* before he has dealt with several other topics first. The principle, however, is clear.

Tryambaka's second point is that the rulings he is about to expound apply only to married women. He argues by analogy with the case for men. Three separate and unattributed quotations are produced to support his statement that 'religious law prescribes no rules for men until they have been invested with the sacred thread (lit. "until the binding on of the muñja grass")."

First, 'they (the lawbooks or lawgivers) place no restrictions on one's actions until the investiture of the sacred thread (has taken place).'12 In Baudh.I.2.3.6, the quotation is completed with the explanation that, until one is born again through the Veda (i.e. Vedic education), one is on the same level as the śūdra, Vas. II.6 quotes Hārīta to the same effect. Secondly, 'before initiation, they (i.e. children; in this context, boys) may do, say and eat what they please.'13 This quotation from Gautama implies that uninitiated children are not expected to obey the rules of social behaviour or grammar, or the prohibitions on food and drink applicable to their elders (cf. Bāl. on Yājñ.I.15). According to the Bālambhattī, even if such a child touches a candala or outcast, he need not take the ritual bath with his clothes on that is normally prescribed. However, Haradatta adds that such licence in fact applies only to very young children, those under five years of age, and not to the uninitiated in general who might (according to some authorities, including Gautama himself, e.g. II.1.6-15) remain so until the age of twenty-two. For the Bālambhattī, the crucial age is six.

^{11.} tatra puruṣāṇām ā maunjībandhanāt śāstreṇa niyamāḥ na vidhīyante maunjībandhanaprabhṛty eva niyamāḥ// Sdhp.2r.4–5 (i.e. śāstreṇa for dharma-śāstreṇa).

^{12.} nāsya karma niyacchanti kimcid ā maunījībandhanāt // Sdhp.2r.5-6 〈 Baudh.I.2.3.6a. Cf. Vas.II.6; Manu II.171-2; Gaut.I.2.5-6, 10-11 (Ān.); Vis.Sm.XXVIII.40; Dakṣa I.3-4.

^{13.} prāg upanayanāt kāmacāravādabhakṣāḥ // Sdhp. 2r.6 (Gaut.I.2.1 (SS; Ān.: prāg upanayanāt kāmacāraḥ kāmavādaḥ kāmabhakṣaḥ).

Thirdly, 'once the teacher has performed the initiation ceremony, he should first instruct his pupil in the rituals of purification, good conduct, the worship of the sacrificial fire, and the twilight rituals.' 14

'In the case of women, however,' Tryambaka continues, 'marriage has taken the place of initiation.' 15 Or, as the quotation from Manu puts it, 'for women, the marriage ritual is held to be the equivalent of initiation, serving one's husband that of residing in the teacher's house, and household duties that of the worship of the sacrificial fire.'16 It thus follows that, 'before marriage, women too are free to do, say and eat what they please; for the rules apply only after marriage.'17 We may safely assume here that Haradatta's restriction of the rule to the very young would apply to women too. For, although Gautama advises men to marry their daughters off before puberty, he also rules that an unmarried girl who has had three menstrual periods may find her own husband. Thus, in Gautama's time at least, a girl might still be unmarried in her early teens (Gaut. II.9.20-1). The Bālambhattī merely adds that the licence given to the uninitiated boy is applied also to a girl, as long as she remains unmarried (with the implication that she would be married by the age of six). Since Tryambaka is concerned only with married women, he does not himself examine the question of exactly when a girl should marry. However, judging by the sternness of his remarks concerning the sanctity of a woman's rtu or 'season' (see section IV, pp. 287-8), we may assume that he favours pre-pubertal marriage for girls. Here, he concludes simply that 'the sacred duties he is about to expound are therefore to be performed by women only after they are married.'18

14. upanīya guruḥ śiṣyaṃ śikṣayec chaucam āditaḥ/ācāram agnikāryam ca saṃdhyopāsanam eva ca// ity ādi vacanāt// Sdhp.2r.6-7 < Manu I.69. Cf. Śaṅkh.3.1; Yājñ.I.15.

15. strīnān tu . . . upanayanasthānāpanno vivāha iti // Sdhp.2r.8-9. Cf. Mit. on Yājñ.I.15.

16. vaivāhiko vidhih strīnām aupanāyanikah smṛtaḥ / patisevā gurau vāso gṛhārtho 'gniparikriyā // iti manuvacanena // Sdhp.2r.8-9 (Manu) (Manu 11.67 (with aupanāyanikaḥ from II.68 substituted for saṃskāro vaidikaḥ, 'the Vedic sacrament').

17. vivāhāt pūrvam kāmacāravādabhakṣaṇam // vivāhānantaram eva niyamānuṣṭānam // Sdhp.2r.9-10.

18. ato vaksyamāṇadharmāḥ vivāhaprabhrty eva tābhir anustheyāḥ // Sdhp.2r.10-2v.1.

There is a curious contradiction here. Before initiation, a child is considered—for ritual if not social purposes—to be equivalent to a śūdra (see Baudh.I.2.3.6; Vas.II.6). Since, as Manu and Tryambaka explain, the marriage ceremony is to be taken as the girl's initiation, she too is ritually equivalent to a śūdra before her marriage. The implication is obvious: a boy after his initiation and a girl after marriage are no longer held to be at the level of the śūdra. Tryambaka then explains that all the sacred duties he is about to describe apply to married women. But the next two quotations he cites (one on śauca, the other on ācamana) explicitly equate the (married) woman and the śūdra. This means that women are ritual śūdras both before and after marriage; the only difference is that they may follow their own whims before they marry, their husbands' afterwards.

But this is in origin a historical rather than a philosophical problem (see Leslie 1980:15ff.; 1983(1):99–100). In the Vedic era, the period of study and brahmacarya discipline was deemed essential for girls as well as boys. ¹⁹ The reason is important: the upanayana of women was vital to the continuation of the varna system. Without it, all women would be reduced to the level of the śūdra and, as Hārīta explains, śūdras cannot give birth to brahmins, kṣatriyas or vaiśyas. ²⁰ Although the actual practice of female students probably came to differ from that of males, the fact of initiation remained. Yama, for example, while agreeing that upanayana, Vedic education and the recitation of mantras should be open to girls, advocates that they should be taught only by their fathers, uncles and brothers; that they should not beg from door to door but only from their own homes; that they should not wear deerskins or grow matted hair. ²¹

As language and culture developed away from those of Vedic texts, more extensive commentaries became necessary, and increasingly long periods of study were required to understand the

^{19.} brahmacaryena kanyā yuvānam vindate patim / A.V.XI.5.18a. Cf. A.V.III.8.11-15; Sat.Br.I.2.14.13, I.1.12-13; Tait.Br.III.3.3.2-3.

^{20.} na hi śūdrayonau brāhmaņakṣatriyavaisyā jāyante // Hārīta XXI.20, cited Par.M.I.ii.p.48.

^{21.} adhyayanam ca vedānām sāvitrīvacanam tathā / pitā pitrvyo bhrātā vā nainām adhyāyayet paraḥ // svagrhe caiva kanyāyā bhaikṣacaryā vidhīyate / varjayed ajinam cīram jaṭadhāraṇam eva ca // Vīr.S.p. 402 (Yama).

accumulating literature. But whereas it was acceptable for boys to postpone marriage until their twenties or thirties, it was still thought essential for girls to marry in their teens. The effect was to divide women into two kinds: the brahmavādinī (lit. 'one who discusses brahman'), who was initiated in the lighting of the sacred fire, the reading of Vedic texts, and begging in her own home; and the sadvovadhū (lit. 'one who becomes a bride on the same day, i.e. as her initiation') for whom the ceremony was a mere formality just before her marriage. 22 By the time of Hārīta (approximately 500 B.C.), the majority of girls fell into the latter category. The lack of Vedic training for girls made nonsense of their use of mantras, so it is no surprise that by the time of Manu (i.e. at the turn of the era), the initiation of girls was performed without them (cf. Manu II.66, IX.18). By the time of Yājñavalkya (i.e. the first or second century of the Christian era), the upanayana of girls was prohibited altogether (cf. Yājñ.I.13). At some point during this transition—in order to justify the marriage of uninitiated girls to twice-born men and thus to rescue the entire varna system there arose the compensatory theory that the marriage ritual took the place of initiation for girls. This in turn lent weight to the idea that girls should be married at a very early age. For it was felt that the girl's 'initiation' (i.e. marriage) should take place at the same age as that appropriate for the boy's upanayana.

It is often argued that this trend was based on the belief that the increasingly long period of study was vital because even the smallest mistake in ritual or recitation could have disastrous results (e.g. Pāṇiniśikṣā 52, cited Altekar 1978:201-2). Although there is undoubtedly some truth in this, the argument is not wholly convincing. First, women are not the only ones liable to make mistakes. Now as always, men make mistakes all the time. In fact, after each undertaking, a final ritual is performed that is specifically designed to remove the sin of any mistakes made in the process. There are also special prāyaścitta rituals to cope with the problem. Secondly, according to mīmāṃsā philosophy, an injunction or prohibition is weakened if it is thought necessary to shore it up with experiental

^{22.} brahmavādinīnām agnīndhanam vedādhyayanam svagrhe ca bhaikṣa-caryeti / sadyovadhūnām tūpasthite vivāhe kathamcid upanayanamātram kṛṭvā vivāhah kāryah / purākalpe tu nārīnām maunjībandhanam iṣyate // Vīr. S., p.402 (Hārīta).

reasons. Adrsta rulings are always more cogent than drsta ones (see my discussion of these terms in section IIA, p. 58 below). Thus to say that Vedic initiation and education are barred to women because they are more liable to make mistakes is to weaken the validity of the prohibition; no reason need or indeed should be given.

In time, the argument turned full circle. Instead of the absence of upanayana having as its consequence the status of śūdra, the a priori śūdra status of women came to be seen as the reason for their ineligibility in the first place. Now commentators had to work hard to explain away the all too obvious references to the upanayana of girls in earlier texts. On Gobh.gr.II.1.19, for example, the commentator explains that the term vajñopavītinī cannot mean literally 'she who wears the sacred thread' since women may not do so; it must therefore refer to a bride who wears her sari draped over her left shoulder 'like' a sacred thread. On the same grounds, Sankara interprets the reference to a 'learned (panditā) daughter' in Br.Up.VI.4.17 as a reference to domestic learning and expertise (grhatantravisayam). When Manu declares that no sacred rite may be performed with mantras for women, his first reason is that they are 'weak' and 'impure'; his second that they are ignorant of Vedic literature (Manu IX.18; Baudh.I.11.7; Mbh.XIII.40,11-12). Śūdra status is now associated directly with the female state and only indirectly with the lack of upanayana and Vedic education.

Tryambaka evidently has a problem. In order to persuade women of the religious significance of their role, he expounds the view that the marriage ritual is their initiation onto the religious path. But as his treatise continues, we meet again and again the conviction that even married (i.e. 'initiated') women are ritually equivalent to the uninitiated śūdra. Tryambaka uses the first view to inspire women to take their domestic existence seriously, to elevate it to the level of religious ritual, and to discourage them from wasting their devotional energy on other (i.e. non-domestic) forms of worship. He uses the second view to remind women that being female is an awesome hurdle they must strive to overcome. The rulings on daily duties (strīnām āhnikam; see section II, pp. 44–245) follow from the first; the digression on the inherent nature of women (strīsvabhāvah; see section III) from the second.

The problem of how ritual śūdras can give birth to brahmins, kṣatriyas and vaiśyas—voiced above by Hārīta—remains. The

solution is presumably to be found in the discussions concerning the various ways in which varṇa may fluctuate. A child's varṇa is defined by the 'seed' (bija) from which it sprang; and not from the 'field' (kṣetra) in which that seed was planted (Manu X.70-2; cf. section V.9.c). Thus a śūdra womb that receives brahmin 'seed' produces a brahmin child. A man's varṇa may be changed by his own conduct. Thus Viśvāmitra, who was born a kṣatriya, becomes a brahmin through tapas (austerities; cf. Manu X.42, Kull.). A woman's varṇa, on the other hand, is defined by that of her husband: whatever her father's birth or her own behaviour, she assumes in the 'oneness' of marriage both the qualities and the status of her husband, merging with him as a river merges with the sea (cf. Manu IX.22-4; X.67).

Tryambaka's third introductory point is that 'the general rules (sāmānyadharmāh) prescribed for men are equally applicable to women.' 23 By this, Tryambaka does not mean sanātanadharmāh, the code of universal values such as non-injury, purity, truth and good will (cf. Kaut. I. 3.13; Vām. P. 14.1; Āp. I. 8.23.6; etc.). The reference here is to non-specific rules of conduct.

Tryambaka's argument runs as follows. 'Injunctions relating specifically to women presuppose the widespread acceptance of general rulings (of which these specific ones are the modifications).' ²⁴ He gives two examples. First, 'the wise declare that the purification ritual required of a woman and a śūdra is half (that prescribed for a twice-born man).' ²⁵ This statement clearly presupposes some general ruling (such as Manu V. 136) to the effect that (i.e. after urinating and defecating) one should purify the sexual organ, the anus, the left hand, and then both hands, by applying earth and water one, three, ten and seven times respectively. Manu V.137 gives the modifying rule for Vedic students, forest hermits and ascetics. Tryambaka's example gives that for women and śūdras. Secondly, 'both a woman and a śūdra are purified by touching

^{23.} tatra puruṣasyoktāḥ sāmānyadharmāḥ strīṇām api sādhāraṇā eva // Sdhp.2v.1-2.

^{24.} tatra tatra sāmānyadharmān siddhavat kṛtya . . . ity ādinā strīnām višesavidhānāt // Sdhp.2v.2-4.

^{25.} strīšūdrayor ardhamānam śaucam proktam manīsibhih // Sdhp.2v.2-3 (Sm.C.II.p.248 (Ādit.P.); Par.M.I.p.230. Cf. section IIA, p.73, note 44.

(water) once on (or in) the mouth.'26 This ruling on ācamana, the ritual of sipping water, again presupposes some general statement (such as Manu V.139a) to the effect that he who desires to be pure should sip water three times. Yājñ.I.21a gives the modifying rule for twice-born men; Yājñ.I.21b (Tryambaka's example) gives that for women and śūdras.

Tryambaka concludes from this that 'rulings such as 'he who, rising early, sees..', 27 which prescribe duties for men (in the technical sense that they are couched in the masculine form without any additional modifying rules) are in fact equally applicable to women.' 28 This is an important point for Tryambaka's treatise, especially in his long section on daily rites or duties (strīnām āhnikam, section II, pp. 44–245). For, in the absence of rulings specific to women on subjects such as what should or should not be seen in the early morning (darśanīyāny adarśanīyāni ca; section IIA, (pp. 54–7), urinating and defecating (mūtrapurīsotsargah; pp. 69–71), or cleaning one's teeth (dantadhāvanam, pp. 78–82). Tryambaka is obliged to quote passages couched in the masculine and assume that they apply to women too.

But what appears, in this context, to be no more than a straightforward grammatical point is in fact an extremely significant issue in the history of the religious status of women in India. First, let us look at the question from the grammarian's point of view. Patañjali's $Mah\bar{a}bh\bar{a}sya$ (one of the most important works on Sanskrit grammar, dating from c.140 B.C.) declares that there are five reasons to study the science of grammar: for the preservation of the Veda; for the understanding of the rules of modification or $\bar{u}ha$; for the

^{26.} śuddhyeran strī ca śūdraś ca sakṛt spṛṣṭābhir antataḥ // Sdhp.2v.3 (Yājñ.I.21b. For the full śloka, see section IIA, note 49. The quotation is ungrammatical without the previous line: hṛṭkaṇṭhatālugābhis tu yathāsankhyam dvijātayaḥ. Following Yājñ. and PT, I have restored śuddhyeran (for śuddheran; plural to include dvijātayaḥ) and spṛṣṭābhir (for spṛṣṭvābhir; agreeing with adbhir, Yājñ.I.20b). Sakṛṭ, 'once', as opposed to three times as is the case for twice-born men. Antataḥ is glossed either as antena, 'at the extremity (i.e. of mouth or lips)'; or as antargatena, 'inside (i.e. the mouth)'; cf. section IIA, pp. 75–7.

^{27.} prātar utthāya yaḥ paśyet ... // Sdhp.2v.4 (e.g. the beginning of Gobh.Sm.II.163,165, see p. 55, notes 8,9.

^{28.} evam ca . . ity ādinā purusasyoktā dharmāh strīnām api sādhāranā eva // Sdhp.2v.4-5 (i.e. dharmāh for sāmānyadharmāh). Cf. note 23.

sake of scripture or tradition; to make one's studies easier; and to remove doubt (raksohāgamalaghvasamdehāh; Pat.I.8). On the subject of ūha, Pat.I.9 explains that mantras are not stated in the Veda in all genders, cases and so on. For the preservation of the true meaning of the Veda, therefore, the study of the rules of uha is essential if one is to make the required modifications to the sacrifice. By the seventeenth century, however, Nagesa's commentary interprets linga to mean not 'gender' as it clearly does in the original passage but 'the stem (of a noun)' which is only a very late sense of the term. This is evidence of a marked change of opinion between earlier writers on grammar who accepted the uha of gender and later ones who redefined the term to exclude gender altogether. The effect of this denial of the ūha of gender on the woman's role in religious ritual is obvious: the majority of injunctions are in the masculine; the modification is not invoked; women are excluded.

Now let us look at this question in the specific context of a woman's right to sacrifice as discussed in the literature of the pūrvamīmāmsā school. The earliest work of the school is the Jaiminīyasūtra, written perhaps in the second century B.C.. The earliest commentary on Jaimini available to us is the Śabarabhāsya, written in the fifth or sixth century A.D. Śabara himself is commented on by three different schools—founded by Kumārilabhaṭṭa, (Guru) Prabhākara, and Murārimiśra respectively—all of whom probably wrote in the seventh century. The overall aim of the pūrvamīmāmsā school was to protect the Veda from the onslaught of Buddhism and other heterodox systems by means of a detailed investigation of dharma as enjoined in Vedic texts. Jai.VI deals specifically with the qualifications necessary for a performer of the sacrifice. In doing so, it considers in particular the two classes of people that came to be excluded from such performance: śūdras and women.

On the former issue, Jai.VI.1.25-38 declares that since the agnihotra and other such sacrifices are mentioned in the Veda only with reference to the three higher castes, the śūdra is not entitled to perform sacrifices at all. Similarly, the Vedic texts regarding initiation do not include the śūdra, and anyone not initiated into Vedic study is a priori unfit to perform sacrifices. Furthermore, these conclusions are endorsed by Sabara and his commentators.

The case for women is somewhat different. There is no suggestion that women are to be excluded from initiation or Vedic study:

unlike the śūdra, therefore, they are not a priori unfit to perform sacrifices. However, ritual injunctions are invariably made in the masculine form. One question remains. Is this masculine form to be taken as a superordinate (meaning 'person', 'human' etc.) or as a hyponym (meaning 'male' as opposed to 'female')? Jai.VI.1. 6-20 deals with this very point. The question is raised in connection with the classic injunction svargakāmo yajeta ('he who desires heaven should perform sacrifices'). The pūrvapakṣa or prima facie view states that since svargakāmo is in the masculine, the injunction applies only to men (lingavisesanirdesāt pumyuktam; Jai.VI.1.6). Jaimini, however, insists that the masculine is intended here in its superordinate sense, applying to the class or genus (jāti) without distinction (aviseṣāt), always of course excepting the śūdra. Thus women are also entitled to perform sacrifices (Jai.VI.1.8).

Let us take a closer look at the views of Jaimini's opponents. They base their exclusion of women from sacrifice on two grounds: first, on the denial of the ūha of gender; secondly, on the assertion that the performer of sacrifice must possess property which, according to them, a woman is unable to do. The latter point is supported by statements (e.g. Manu VIII. 416; see p. 277, note 10) that a woman cannot possess anything because what is hers belongs to her husband or father (cf. Tryambaka's comments on this topic in section IV, pp. 277-80 below). Moreover, she herself belongs to husband or father and is thus 'on the same level as property' (strīnām dravyaih samānayogitvāt; Jai.VI.1.10). Here Vedic texts are quoted describing the 'selling' of a woman by her father to her husband (presumably in the arsa form of marriage according to which the groom presents the bride's father with a cow and a bull; cf. PVK II.i.516-26; Menski 1984: § 2.5.5.). For the exponents of this view, therefore, religious capacity depends on social position, specifically on the possession of wealth which is denied to women (Jai.VI.1.10-12).

For Jaimini, however, social position is subordinated to religious aspiration which, he claims, is as strong in a woman as in a man (phalotsāhāviśeṣāt; Jai.VI.1.13). His argument runs as follows. First, the crucial text must be interpreted according to the ūha of gender to read: 'If a woman truly desires heaven then she too should sacrifice.' She should therefore proceed to acquire the necessary wealth (e.g. by spinning, cooking, etc., or by means of property received at marriage; cf. pp.277-80) in order to perform the sacrifice

(Sab.VI.1.13). Secondly, since this injunction is from the Veda (which for the pūrvamīmāmsaka is śruti; i.e. uncreated and eternally valid), it automatically overrules any smrti statement to the contrary (such as Manu VIII.416 cited above). Thirdly, statements to the effect that a woman owns no property, being non-injunctive, are mere arthavāda (i.e. exaggerated descriptions): they should therefore be interpreted in the more liberal, non-literal sense that a woman should not behave as if she were independent of her husband. If they were meant to be taken literally, then they would contradict the equally valid Vedic text declaring that the wife is mistress of the household property (Jai.VI.1.16; Sab.). Finally, Jaimini argues that marriage is a purely religious function and so cannot be considered a sale in the ordinary sense of the word. This, he claims, is shown by the fact that normally the price of an object fluctuates according to the value of that object, whereas the formal gift from husband to father (i.e. in the arsa form of marriage) remains the same regardless of the 'quality' of the bride (Jai.VI.1.15-19).

In the pūrvamīmāmsā texts, such arguments win the day. For our purposes, however, the arguments of the pūrvapakṣin are of greater interest. For they provide the basis for the swing away from the religious freedom of women. In particular, the ūha of gender is increasingly ignored and ritual texts are more often taken to apply only to men. In all kinds of ritual contexts, the male is invariably taken as the paradigm. When meditations are given on the body or when directions are given for ritual ablutions (e.g. in the Jayā-khyasamhitā), it is always the male body that is described. In theory, a woman can invoke the ūha of gender; in practice, it is assumed that ritual information is really intended for the male.

It is hardly surprising, therefore, that by the eighteenth century, orthodox religion excludes women from virtually all ritual activities. What is interesting is that Tryambaka feels free to invoke the *ūha* of gender when it suits him to do so without any fear of the logical consequences. Presumably by the time he was writing, the issue debated with such feeling by Jaimini and Sabara had been forgotten. The question of whether the *ūha* of gender might be invoked in ritual contexts is now too ludicrous to be considered. In his detailed analysis of the daily duties implied by a woman's religious role (strīnām āhnikam; see, pp. 44–245), and in the brief section on things to be avoided (varjanīyāh; see section IV, pp. 274–6), Tryambaka leaves no room for doubt.

II. The Daily Duties of Women

(strīnām āhnikam; Sdhp. 2v. 5-21r.3)

'Now the daily duties of women are examined.'1

The daily practice of the orthodox Hindu householder (male) is an important topic of dharmaśāstra, described in detail in numerous smṛtis, purāṇas and digests (e.g. Gaut.I.5, I.9; Āp.II.1.1-II.4.9; Yājñ.I.96-127; Mārk.P.29-30,34; Kūrm.P.II.18-19; Sm.C.I.p.88-232; Sm.A. p.18-48; etc.). For of all the āsramas—Vedic student (brahmacarya), householder (gṛhastha), forest hermit (vānaprastha), and renouncer or ascetic (saṃnyāsin, yati, etc.)—that of householder is repeatedly described as the best.

The āśrama theory, examined in detail by Olivelle (1974; 1978; 1984), involves a gradual progression through three main stages of development. In the first, only the householder state receives wholehearted recommendation. The second encourages the notion of a choice between four separate and permanent states (vikalpa, 'alternative'). The third regards the four āśramas as a continuous series of temporary states (samuccaya, 'together'; i.e. in sequence in one lifetime). In all three versions of the theory, however, the householder state is held to be the best.

The earliest exposition of the āśrama theory is presented by Gautama and Baudhāyana. (For an analysis of the corrupt text into 'Proto-' and 'Deutero-Baudhāyana', see Olivelle 1984.) Gautama notes the idea of a choice in the form of a pūrvapakṣa (āśramavikalpam; Gaut.I.3.1-2), without approval. For, in Gautama's view, the householder is quite literally the source (yoni) of the other three: only he produces children (aprajanatvād itareṣām, Gaut. I.3.3; cf. Rāgh. on Manu VI.87; Baudh.II.6.11.27). Moreover, the order of householder is the one explicitly enjoined (pratyakṣavidhānād; Gaut.I.4.35) in all the Vedas, dharmaśāstras, itihāsas and purāṇas (Har. on Gaut.I.4.35). Baudhāyana even denies that there is a choice. The notion of four alternative paths is dismissed as a misunderstanding (Baudh.II.6.11.9) or the invention of a demon (Baudh.II.6.11.28). Baudhāyana stresses the importance of family

^{1.} tatra strīnām āhnikam nirūpyate // Sdhp.2v.5.

life; the payment of the three debts (to the seers by study, to the gods by sacrifice, to the ancestors by sons); and thus the urgent need to produce children (Baudh.II.6.11.33-4).

The next stage in the development of the āsrama theory is shown in the views of Āpastamba and Vasistha. The four orders are now seen to be equally valid in the sense that one may attain liberation through any one of them (Āp.II.9.21.1-2), but they are still mutually exclusive and permanent. (It is important to distinguish here between studentship as a temporary first stage and perpetual studentship as a permanent state of celibacy; cf. Olivelle 1984:85.) Nonetheless, Āpastamba devotes a large number of sūtras to proving that the householder state is superior to any of the celibate alternatives (Āp.II.9.23.3 ff.).

The third stage may be found in Manu, Yājñavalkya and the later *smṛtis*. The āśramas are now no longer alternative states but successive stages, each leading to the next in a steady progression towards liberation (Manu IV.1, VI.33). But still the householder stage is best (Manu III.77-8, VI.89-90). This remarkably persistent eulogy of the householder underlines the fact that all *dharmaśāstrins*

are, of course, householders themselves.

In order to fulfil his significant part in the scheme of things, the householder must observe a clearly defined timetable of ritual and quasi-ritual activities, all included under the general heading of grhasthadharma, the ordained rites and duties of the householder.

The day is sometimes divided into two (pūrvāhṇa, 'before noon', and aparāhṇa, 'afternoon'); or three (prātaḥsavana, 'morning', mādhyandinasavana, 'midday', and tṛtīyasavana, 'evening', corresponding to the three pressings of soma); or five (prātaḥ or udaya, 'dawn', saṃgava, 'morning', i.e. when the cows are collected for milking, mādhyandina or madhyāhna, 'midday', aparāhṇa, 'afternoon', and sāyam, sāyāhna or astagamana, 'evening'). Most commonly, however, the division is into four parts (pūrvāhṇa, madhyāhna, aparāhṇa, sāyāhna), further subdivided into eight: that is, sixteen divisions covering the twenty-four hours of day and night (e.g. Dakṣa II.4-5; Kauṭ.I.19; Kāty. quoted by Apar. on Yājñ.II.1; and even Vidyārṇava's twentieth-century presentation of the āhnika rules, 1979:1). The normal unit of calculation is thus one and a half hours.

With regard to the different varnas, no specific āhnika rules are laid down for the vaisya or śūdra. These men would presumably

adjust the āhnika rules prescribed for brahmin householders to suit themselves. The āhnika rules for a king are given in detail in Kaut.I.19 (cf. also Manu VII. 145-7, 151-4, 216-26; Yājñ.I.327-33). In the first part of the day (6.00-7.30 a.m.), the king should attend to matters of defence, income and expenditure; in the second (7.30-9.00 a.m.), he should consider the affairs of the people; in the third (9.00-10.30 a.m.), he should bathe, eat and study the Veda; in the fourth (10.30-12.00 noon), he should receive revenue and assign tasks; in the fifth (12.00-1.30 p.m.), he should consult his ministers and consider the secret information brought by spies; in the sixth (1.30-3.00 p.m.), he may amuse himself; in the seventh (3.00-4.30 p.m.), he should review his army; in the eighth (4.30-6.00 p.m.), he should confer with his commander-in-chief. At the end of the day, he should perform the evening samdhyā (V.9-17). In the first part of the night (6.00-7.30 p.m.), he should consult his secret agents; in the second (7.30-9.00 p.m.), he should bathe, eat and study; in the third (9.00-10.30 p.m.), he should enter his bedchamber; in the fourth and fifth (10.30 p.m.-1.30 a.m.), he should sleep; in the sixth (1.30-3.00 a.m.), he should wake and contemplate the śāstra (i.e. of politics) and the duties of the coming day; in the seventh (3.00-4.30 a.m.), he should meet with his councillors and send out secret agents; and in the eighth (4.30-6.00 a.m.), he should receive blessings from his priests, see his doctor, chief cook and astrologer, perform the appropriate rituals, and go to court (v.18-24). Alternatively, as Kautilya adds (thereby undermining the entire system), the king may divide his days and nights as he needs (v.25).

Although Tryambaka probably intended his treatise for the edification of the women at court (who were presumably of largely kṣatriya families), the āhnika rules it prescribes for women have little in common with the rulings given above for their king. It is thus more appropriate to compare Tryambaka's rulings for women with those prescribed for brahmin householders.

Dakṣa, for example, also divides the day into eight parts (II.4-5). For practical purposes, the day's timetable begins in the last division of the night (i.e. 4.30-6.00 a.m.) when a man should wake, perform the necessary ablutions and the ācamana ritual, clean his teeth, bathe, and observe the twilight rituals (saṃdhyā). In the first division of the day (6.00-7.30 a.m.), he should worship his special deity and pay homage to his teacher. In the second (7.30-9.00 a.m.), he should study the Veda. In the third (9.00-10.30 a.m.), he should work for the maintenance of his family, following only

those professions permitted to his varna. In the fourth (10.30-12.00 noon), he should bathe and perform the midday samdhyā. In the fifth (12.00-1.30 p.m.), he should perform the five great sacrifices (pañca mahāyajñāh): to brahman (brahmayajña, by the study or recitation of the Veda), to the gods (devayaiña, by ritual offerings into the fire), to the ancestors (pitryajña, by the ritual of tarpana), to all beings (bhūtavajña, by bali offerings), and to men (manusvayajña, by offering hospitality to guests). These five observances absolve the householder of the five types of sin committed every day in the home (cf. Manu III.68-71; Vis.Sm.59.19-20 etc.). In the fifth part of the day, the householder should also take his main (midday) meal. In the sixth and seventh (1.30-4.30 p.m.), he should study secular literature (epics, purāna and so on). In the eighth (4.30-6.00 p.m.), he may receive or visit friends and perform the evening samdhyā rituals. From 6.00 p.m. until 9.00 p.m., he should attend to the duties omitted during the day and spend time with his family. From 9.00 p.m. until 4.30 a.m., he may take rest (Daksa II: Vidvārnava 1979:1-2).

Let us compare these typical basic divisions with the daily timetable prescribed for women by Tryambaka. The first point to notice is that Tryambaka divides the night (and presumably the day as well) into six parts instead of the usual eight (Sdhp.2v.8). This ruling is not specific to women, for the quotation cited is addressed to the householder 'together with his wife' (patnyā saha). For Tryambaka then, the unit of calculation is two hours instead of one and a half. However, since Tryambaka rarely specifies the exact times or periods during which a particular duty should be performed, Figure 6 contains a rough timetable demonstrating the parallels between a woman's day as he describes it and that of a (brahmin) man as described in smrti literature in general.

A large proportion of the āhnika rulings cover activities to be carried out in the last division of night. In addition to most of the duties prescribed for men, a woman must also prepare the day's quota of rice or millet, sweep the house and smear it with cow-dung, perform the ritual of threshold worship, and attend to the cows. When her husband performs the morning fire sacrifice, she assists him. At dawn, she makes an offering to the sun. In the morning, while her husband studies the Veda and works at his profession, she attends to her household duties. At midday, when he performs the five great sacrifices, she assists him. When he eats, she serves him, eating what he leaves. After the meal, while he studies the Topics discussed in relation to women Equivalent topics for men

Before dawn

1. waking waking

2. housework (grinding grain etc.)

3. ablutions ablutions

At dawn

1. fire worship fire sacrifice
2. offering water to the sun samdhvā ritual

worship of special deity

Topics discussed in relation to women

Day

1. paying respect to elders

2. housework

 midday rituals: devapūjā vaišvadevapūjā atīthipūjā

4. meal time duties:
'serving at meals,
bali offering,
clearing away,
housework, etc.

Equivalent topics for men

homage to teacher
Vedic study
work for maintenance of family
bath and saṃdhyā
pañca mahāyajñāh (i.e. Vedic
recitation to brahman;
sacrifice to the gods;
tarpaṇa for the ancestors;
bali offerings for all
beings; atithipūjā)
midday meal

study of epics, purāṇa, visiting friends, etc.

Evening

1. fire worship, etc.

2. going to bed and intercourse

evening samdhyā

Figure 6. Parallel timetable for women and men

epics and purānas, she clears away the meal, washes, sweeps and cleans. In the evening, while he is visiting friends, she is still doing housework, for the food for the evening meal must be prepared afresh. At the evening sacrifice, she assists him again. Her final āhnika duties concern going to bed and sexual intercourse. Several of these duties are beautifully illustrated in two palm-leaf manuscripts in the British Library collection: milking the cows, cooking, serving food to her husband, tending her children, nursing an infant, massaging her husband's feet as he lies in bed, eating the

remains of his meal, and a variety of postures for sexual intercourse (British Library: OR. 11689, OR. 11612; see plates 1-13; cf. Lostly 1980: 14-45; cf. Gaur 1980:23-5). The paintings depicting children and the wife's involvement with them (e.g. plates 10, 11) draw our attention to a curious omission in the Strīdharmapaddhati: while Tryambaka assumes that the good wife will produce sons, he not only shows no further interest in them, but makes no allowance for them in her day.

Tryambaka also specifies no time when a woman may simply rest. Indeed, he lists 'sleeping in the daytime' among the six things that corrupt women and which they should therefore avoid (see section IV, p. 275, note 6). Since it is assumed that a woman has no education, it is less surprising that she is not advised to study. Judging by Tryambaka's prohibitions on 'roaming around' and spending time in other people's homes (section IV, p. 275, note 6), we would not expect her to be allowed to visit friends, certainly not on her own. Taken at face value, then, a woman should always be busy about her work. The traditional pattern of an Indian day, however, suggests that the hot period after the midday meal might well be given to rest. It is at this time that women might be encouraged to listen to readings from the epics or *purāṇas*, or even from a work such as the *Strīdharmapaddhati* (Introduction, pp. 22–3 and 232–3).

Before embarking on a discussion of each ruling, it may be instructive to consider at the outset what types of rulings these may be. The crucial question is how each ruling relates to its equivalent for men. The answer takes the form of four quite distinct categories.

First, there are those rulings which, according to Tryambaka, are exactly the same for women as for men. These include the rulings concerning what one may or may not see first thing in the morning (darśanīyāny adarśanīyāni ca; section IIA, pp.54-7), urinating and defecating (mūtrapurīṣotsargaḥ, section IIA, pp. 69-71), and cleaning the teeth (dantadhāvanam; section IIA, pp.78-82). This group of rulings clearly requires the operation of the ūha of gender (see section I, pp. 40-3).

Secondly, there are those rulings which are the same in principle for women as for men, but different in detail. For example, the rules on purification (saucam) are applicable to men and women except that for women the colour of the earth used and the number of lumps required is different (section IIA, pp. 71-2). The rules

concerning sipping (ācamanam) and bathing (snānam) also fall into this category. When a twice-born man sips, the water must touch his heart, throat or palate; when a woman sips, it need only touch her mouth (section IIA, pp. 75-7). A man performs his ritual bath with mantras, a woman without (section IIA, p. 83). Generally speaking, however, both rituals are applicable to women as well as men. Similarly, both men and women must wake early, but the wife should wake before her husband (section IIA, p. 52). Both must eat but the wife should serve her husband and eat only what he leaves (section IIC, pp. 221-7). This is a large group of rulings and the implications are interesting. I shall deal with each in its place.

The third category, a very important one, consists of those rulings in which the wife assists her husband in his ritual obligations (pativratabhāginī). In the early morning meditation (devatādhyānam), for example, the man must meditate 'with his wife' (section IIA, pp. 52-4). In the fire sacrifice (agniśuśrūsā), although the wife has little to do, she must be present for the ritual to bear fruit (section IIB, pp. 132-41). In the ceremony of paying homage and hospitality to guests (atithipūjā), the wife must prepare the food and serve the guest on her husband's behalf (section IIC, pp. 210-14). These rulings indicate the role and status of the wife in the joint ritual duties enjoined upon the married couple. I shall deal with this in some detail in the section on serving the sacred fire (agniśuśrūsā) (section IIB, pp. 107-15).

Finally, there are the duties peculiar to women. These are predominantly rulings concerning housework, such as grinding grain (section IIA, pp. 58-9), cleaning the house (p. 59), smearing it with cow-dung (pp. 59-63), clearing away after the meal (section IIC, pp. 229-33), and so on. As is clear from the parallel timetable, these duties are to be performed when the husband is studying religious literature or working for the family maintenance. They are thus both part of a woman's religious path and her contribution to the family. The parallel with the man's religious duties becomes more apparent in the context of Manu's dictum on marriage for women: a wife serving her husband is like a student serving his teacher; and her household duties are equivalent to her husband's performance of the fire sacrifice (Manu II.67; see section I, p. 35, note 16). Looked at from this point of view, household tasks become part of the powerful vrata or religious observance of the wife. Hence the high tone in which these apparently mundane tasks are described.

IIA Before Dawn

(Sdhp. 2v.5-7v.9)

I shall begin by taking, out of sequence, the rulings relating to the time of waking (prabodhanam; Sdhp.2v.5-3r.3). As Tryambaka explains, 'both householder and wife should already be awake (i.e. have risen) in the final or sixth division of the night (4.00-6.00 a.m.).'1 'According to the Smṛṭiratnāvalī, it is wrong to be asleep (or in bed) after the brāhmamuhūrta: if a married couple stays in bed in the brāhmamuhūrta, their house is like a cremation ground, shunned by the (spirits of) the ancestors.'2

Although definitions of brāhmamuhūrta differ, the general ruling is constant in smrti literature. Rising before dawn is prescribed for everyone from the Vedic student to the householder (e.g. Manu IV.92; Yājñ.I.115; Gaut.XXIII.21). Kullūka on Manu IV.92 defines brāhmamuhūrta as an unspecific pre-dawn period (kālamātravacanah), so called because of its association with Brāhmī, the goddess Bhāratī—a false identification as is evidenced by the alternative name 'the hour of Prajāpati' (prājāpatye muhūrte; e.g. Vas.XII.47)—and because it is the time devoted to Vedic recitation. Sm.C.II.p.234 quotes a verse attributed to Pitāmahah defining brāhmamuhūrta as the last division of the night (rātreh paścimo yamah; i.e. 4.30-6.00 a.m.). Par.M.I.i. pp. 219-20 quotes both Manu IV.92 and Yājñ.I.115 cited above, as well as equivalent passages from the Kūrma- and Visnupurānas, and defines brāhmamuhūrta as the first of the two muhūrtas that make up the ardhaprahara or one and a half hour period before dawn (i.e. 4.30-5.15a.m.) According to Śrīdharasvāmin's commentary on the Visnupurāna, it is the third muhūrta before sunrise (sūryodayāt pūrvam trtīye muhūrte; III.ii.5), i.e. two hours before dawn.

A cycle of legends referred to in the *Brāhmanas* explains why one should rise before dawn. According to the *Maitrāyaṇīsaṃhitā* (IV.1.9), the gods sought a scapegoat on whom they might 'wipe

^{1.} sodhah vibhajya rajanīm caramāmše prabodhitah / patnyā saha . . . // Sdhp.2v.8. Cf. note 6.

^{2.} brāhme muhūrte nidrākaraņe doṣa uktaḥ smṛtiratnāvalyām // brāhme muhūrte sevetām ṣayanaṃ yatra dampatī/ ṣmaṣānatulyam tad veṣma pitṛbhiḥ parivarjitam // iti // Sdhp.2v.9—10 (Smṛtiratnāvalī) Sm.M.p.209 (Smṛtiratnāvalī).

off' the guilt of the blood-sacrifice. Agni spat upon the waters: Ekata, Dvita and Trita were born. The gods unloaded their guilt on them, and they in turn unloaded it onto whoever was still asleep when the sun rose. This was the beginning of a chain in which each individual, by virtue of his own sin, receives this new sin and then passes it on to another even more sinful individual. According to the Maitrāyanīsaṃhitā, the buck stops at the foetus-killer; according to the Taittirīyabrāhmaṇa (III.2.8.9 ff.), at the brahmin-murderer. All the individuals mentioned in the various lists, including the person who is still asleep at dawn, are evidently regarded as being already sinful and thus the appropriate recipients of the guilt or sin of others (cf. Bloomfield 1964(1):521 ff.).

Secondly (Tryambaka in fact makes this point first), 'a woman should rise before her husband does.' A verse Tryambaka attributes to Yājñavalkya explains that 'a woman who lies down after her husband and wakes before him, and who desires no one else in her mind, is held to be a devoted wife (pativratā).' This means that, according to the sixfold division of night, a man is required to rise at 4 a.m. and his wife earlier still.

This attribute of the devoted wife is much praised in epic literature. For example, Yudhisthira's eulogy of Draupadī when he stakes her in the dice game includes in the list of her perfections the fact that she is always the last in the household to go to bed and the first to wake (Mbh.II.58.35a). Draupadī says much the same thing herself in her far longer lecture to Satyabhāmā on the proper behaviour of wives (Mbh.III.222.23, 36; see section IV, pp. 280-1). Although it seems at first sight to be a minor point, this ruling in fact combines two important requirements of strīdharma: the reverence a wife should show her husband; and her selfless preoccupation with household tasks.

Thirdly, 'as soon as she is awake, she should meditate on the (chosen) deity.'5 The rulings on meditation (devatādhyānam)

^{3.} striyā bhartṛprabodhāt pūrvam eva prabodhavyam // Sdhp.2v.5-6.

^{4.} tathā ca yājňavalkyaḥ// supte paścāc ca yā śete pūrvam eva prabudhyate/nānyam kāmayate citte sā vijňeyā pativratā// iti// Sdhp.2v.6-7 (Yājň.) (? Not in Yājň. N.S. index.

^{5.} prabudhya ca devatādhyānam kartavyam // Sdhp.2v.7.

are in principle applicable to both men and women and are described elsewhere in various ways. In fact, the term 'meditation' with all its complex (and modern) associations is somewhat misleading here. It probably means no more than recalling to mind an image of a particular deity, perhaps using the *dhyāna* verse of a familiar *stotra* that is specifically designed to aid the worshipper in creating this mental image (cf. Bühnemann 1983:24, 26, 30).

The Smrticandrikā (II.p.234, quoting Kūrm.P.II.18.3) rules that one should meditate on (one's chosen) god; or alternatively (quoting Manu IV.92), that one should meditate on 'the true meaning of the Veda' (vedatattvārtham), glossed as 'the supreme Self' (paramātmā). One would expect Tryambaka to reject both these alternatives when applied to women: the former because (according to his own rulings) the worship of deities is one of the six things that cause women to fall (section IV, p. 275, note 7); the latter, because she has no access to Vedic literature. Several digests prescribe the recitation of five verses from the Vāmanapurāna (Vām.P.14.23-7; cf. Vir.A.p.16; Sm.M.II.p.210). Some suggest verses naming individuals whose praise brings great merit (Nala, Yudhisthira, Sītā, Kṛṣṇa, etc.; cf. Sm.M.II.p.210). Others list those who have lived long (Aśvatthāman, Bali, Vyāsa, Hanuman, etc.) or suggest the names of the five holy women (Ahalyā, Draupadī, Sītā, Tārā, Mandodarī; cf. PVK II.i.p.648). Tryambaka, however, ignores even the last particularly suitable suggestion and specifies merely that 'the husband together with his wife should meditate on Hari (Visnu), and then reflect on the requirements of dharma and artha for the coming day.'6 Presumably, meditating with one's husband on his chosen deity is allowed. Yet in his section on widowhood, Tryambaka explicitly states that the good wife may worship Visnu only if she thinks all the time of her husband and not of the god (section, IV, p. 300, note 66).

The latter part of the ruling is to be found in many *smṛtis* and digests (e.g. Manu IV.92; Yājñ.I.115; Sm.C.II.p.234). It is a reference to the marriage ritual and recalls the vow made by the bridegroom that he will fulfil the requirements of *dharma*, *artha* and *kāma* only with his (chief, i.e. lawful) wife (cf. PVK II.i.533). (For a

^{6.} tathā ca smṛṭyantare// ṣoḍhaḥ vibhajya rajanīm caramāmśe prabodhitaḥ//
paṭnyā saha harim dhyātvā dharmam artham ca cintayet // iti // Sdhp.2v.7-9
(smṛṭyantara) (Sm.M.II.p.209 (smṛṭyantara). Cf. note 1.

modern version of this ritual in which the bride makes this vow, see Menski 1984:II,872.) The requirements of $k\bar{a}ma$ have presumably been met by sexual intercourse the night before. In the morning, after the appropriate meditation to purify their minds, they should together consider the religious duties (*dharma*) and business or worldly commitments (*artha*) of the coming day. According to the *Visnupurāṇa*, one should contemplate all three together, as long as neither $k\bar{a}ma$ nor *artha* conflict with *dharma* (III.11.5-7). It is frequently stressed that the *trivarga*, the triple goal of the householder, can only be met through the co-operation of the wife (e.g. Sm.C.III.ii.p.582); hence the wife is the root or basis of that goal ($m\bar{u}lam\ trivargasya$, Mbh.I.68.40; cf. Yājn.1.74).

This is another example of the third category of āhnika rulings, but one in which the earlier tone of joint participation of both wife and husband remains. It is this aspect of strīdharma that earns the good wife the epithet sadharmacārinī, 'she who fulfils dharma with (her husband)'. It is this same aspect of strīdharma that Yudhisthira finds so hard to comprehend in view of the dire pronouncements usually made concerning the wickedness of women. I shall consider Yudhisthira's problem in the section on the inherent nature of women (see section III, p. 268). I shall comment further on the nature of the wife's participation in her husband's ritual duties in the subsection on the fire sacrifice (see section IIB, pp. 107–15).

The fourth proviso on getting up in the morning concerns 'what one may or may not see (darśanīyāny adarśanīyāni ca) on waking',7 that is, during that crucial first stage of the day. Tryambaka quotes two ślokas from Kātyāyana. The work identified here is included in Jīvānanda's collection of smṛtis, the Dharmaśāstrasamgraha, as the Karmapradīpa of Kātyāyana or the Kātyāyanasmṛti (Kāty. Sm.). As the opening verse explains, it is based on the Gobhilagṛhyasūtra and is intended as a further elucidation of certain topics covered there. The same work is given in the Ānandāśrama collection of smṛtis, the Smṛtīnām Samuccayah, as Gobhilasmṛti (Gobh.Sm.). These particular two ślokas, or versions of them, are frequently quoted in writings on āhnika. The Bṛhatsaṃhitā deals at length with other kinds of omens occurring at dawn, from the calls of

^{7.} prabodhānantaram daršanīyāny adaršanīyāni ca daršayati kātyāyanaḥ // Sdhp.2.v.10-3r.1.

birds and animals to the shapes and colours of the passing clouds (Br.Sam.30).

The first śloka provides a list of auspicious sights. 'If, on rising early, one sees a learned brahmin, a fortunate man, a cow, fire, or a man who has performed the agnicayana ritual, then one is released from (all) difficulties.'8 For subhagam, 'a fortunate man' (Sdhp.; Sm.M.; Par.M. preferred reading), there is the alternative reading subhagām, 'a fortunate woman' (i.e. one whose husband is alive; Gobh.Sm.; Kāty.Sm.; Par.M., 11 out of 13 MSS). A similar reference in Par.Sm.XII.47 concerning objects the sight of which is always auspicious modifies gām, 'cow', to kapilā (kapilavarņā dhenuh; Par.M.II.ii.p.34), 'a dark brown cow'. (In Mbh.XIII.76, Bhīsma explains why the kapila cow is more sacred than any other.) Agnicitam may either be taken together with agnim to mean 'an altar on which the fire sacrifice is made' (cf. PVK II.1.648); or it may, as I prefer, be taken separately to mean 'a man who has performed the (*śrauta* ritual of) constructing the fire altar' (i.e. as described in the Satapathabrāhmana). Par.Sm.XII.47 lists agnicit first among the objects the sight of which is always auspicious. The Parāsaramādhavīya takes this to mean 'one who is auspicious (yuktah; lit. "fit" or "suitable") by virtue of the fire altar he has created by piling up bricks (istakācayanasamskrtenāgninā).'

The second śloka provides the complementary list of inauspicious sights. 'If, on rising early, one sees a very wicked man, an unfortunate man, an intoxicating drink, a naked man, or one who has had his nose cut off, that is a sign of misfortune.'9 There are a variety of alternative readings here. For durbhagam, 'an unfortunate man'

^{8.} śrotriyam subhagam gām ca hy agnim agnicitam tathā / prātar utthāya yaḥ paśyed āpadbhyah sa pramucyate // Sdhp.3r.1-2 (hy inserted to restore the metre; cf. Sm.M.) < Sm.M.p.211 (hy agnim for agnim; vimucyate for pramucyate); Par.M.I.i.p.221 (subhagam preferred reading, 11 out of 13 MSS give subhagām; Calcutta edn. gives śubhagāngām); Kāty.Sm.19.9, Jīv.I.p.629 (subhagām for subhagam); Gobh.Sm.II.163, SS (srotriyam subhagām gām wā sāgnim agnicitim yathā...).

^{9.} pāpistham durbhagam madyam nagnam utkrttanāsikam / prātar utthāya yah pasyet tat kaler upalakṣaṇam // iti // Sdhp.3r.2-3 < Sm.M.II.p.211 (martyam for madyam); Par.M.I.i.p.221 (cāndham preferred reading; two MSS give madyam; Calcutta edn. prefers madyam); Kāty.Sm.19.9, Jīv.I.p.629 (durbhagām antyam for durbhagam madyam; sa for tat; upayujyate for upalakṣaṇam); Gobh.Sm.II.165,SS (as Kāty.Sm.).

(Sdhp.; Sm.M.; Par.M.), there is *durbhagām*, 'an unfortunate woman' (i.e. a widow; Gobh.Sm.; Kāty.Sm.; see section IV, pp. 298-304). For *madyam*, 'an intoxicating drink' (Sdhp.; Par.M., two MSS and the Calcutta edn.), there is *martyam*, 'a dead (lit. "mortal") man' (Sm.M.); *antyam*, 'an inferior man' (i.e. an untouchable; Gobh. Sm.; Kāty.Sm.); and *cāndham*, a blind man (Par.

M., préferred reading).

Utkrttanāsikam, 'one whose nose has been cut off' probably refers to the punishment of mutilation. This is noted in A.D. 19 by Strabo (McCrindle 1971:57). Hsüan-Tsang, in A.D. 630-44, records that the violator of filial duty had his nose, ears, hands and feet cut off in punishment. However, since this particular offence is normally accorded a fine in the lawbooks (e.g. Manu VIII.389; Kaut.III.20.18), perhaps Hsüan-Tsang's statement is an exaggeration intended as propaganda for his own people (Devahuti 1970: 4-5). Nonetheless, the nose is included among the ten parts of the body on which punishment may be inflicted in the case of offenders of the three lower castes (Manu VIII.124-5; Gaut.I.8.13). In the case of a woman convicted of adultery, Kautilya rules that if her husband is not ready to forgive her, she should have her nose and ears cut off, whereas her lover should be killed (IV.12.30-3). In epic literature, Rama and Laksmana cut off Tataka's nose, ears and hands with undisguised relish before killing her (Rām.I.26.11, 17-18); and later Laksmana cuts off the nose and ears of Ravana's sister as punishment for her improper suggestions to Rāma (Rām. III.18.21). In the context of war, the Manasollasa, written by King Someśvara in c. A.D. 1140, describes four means of subduing an enemy including the janangacchedaka type, according to which defeated warriors had their ears and noses cut off (Vol.I.2.20.1034, 39). Interestingly, in the Marathi expression nak kapane, the literal meaning ('to cut the nose') has been superseded by the metaphorical ('to defeat'; cf. Bühnemann 1983:73). Nonetheless, the loss of the nose seems to have occurred sufficiently often for its restoration by plastic surgery to have become the special practice and skill of the brickmaker caste. One such case is reported, and the operation described in detail, by British medical officers in India in 1794: the victim was a bullock-driver with the British army who, being made prisoner by Tippu Sultan, had his nose and one of his hands cut off (Urban 1794:891-2; plate I, facing p.883).

Alternatively, utkrttanāsika might refer to a deformed nose, or even to a tribal physiognomy considered unattractive to the highcaste Hindu. When Strabo writes of a people 'without noses, having only two orifices above the mouth, through which they breathe', or Ktêsias of a 'deformed' people with 'snub noses', McCrindle interprets these as exaggeratedly dismissive descriptions of Mongolian tribes regarded by the orthodox Hindu as of extremely low caste (1971:60-3). 'Noselessness' in this context might be no greater deformity than the receding chin of the so-called 'chinless wonder'. This possibility is reinforced by Varāhamihira's section on the auspicious and inauspicious marks of men (purusalaksanam; Br.Sam.68.60-2). A conspicuous nose is deemed auspicious: a long one (dīrgha), for example, brings good fortune; one like a parrot's beak (śukasamanāsa) brings happiness. A flat one (cipitanāsa), however, indicates that death will be caused by a woman; whereas one that looks as if it has been cut off (chinnanurupa) indicates contact with forbidden women. Whether the nose described is mutilated, deformed, or merely especially flat, however, the sight of it first thing in the morning is inauspicious.

There is one further point. These rulings on what should or should not be seen are among those couched grammatically in the masculine gender but deemed by Tryambaka to apply to women too (see section I). However, even if we accept the readings subhagām and durbhagam, most of the people listed are men and Tryambaka gives clear directions that women should as far as possible avoid all men other than their husbands (see section IIC, pp. 170-6). One might argue that the modification of gender should be invoked here too but that is not always possible: śrotriya (a brahmin learned in the Veda) and agnicit (one who has performed the śrauta ritual of constructing the fire altar), for example, must (according to Tryambaka's view on the religious role of women) apply exclusively to men. It seems that these verses have merely been lifted out of their original (male) context and reapplied rather less appropriately to women. Alternatively, perhaps the rulings in fact apply to men but are given here so that their wives may take appropriate action. For the knowledge of omens (nimittajñāna) is listed in the Kāmasūtra as one of the sixty-four arts a woman should master. Perhaps it is the wife's duty to ensure that the first thing her husband sees in the morning is auspicious.

Household tasks (1)

Tryambaka proceeds to list the household tasks that must be attended to before dawn (Sdhp.3r.3-4r.4). None of these items are included or even paralleled in the āhnika duties for men. It seems a practical necessity, therefore, that women should rise and get to work before their men.

In the context of dharmasastra, we should note that rulings may be divided into three major types depending on whether or not the reasons for doing them are apparent. Those that are based on practical considerations relating to this world are said to have a 'visible' or 'seen' basis (drstamūla). Bathing in the morning is an obvious example (see section IIA, p.82). Those for which no such this-worldly considerations are evident are held to have a more compelling 'invisible' or 'unseen' basis (adrstamūla), such as the acquisition of merit that will take effect only in the next life. The number of lumps of earth prescribed for the ritual purification of different varnas seems to fit this category (section IIA, pp. 71-4). The third type combines both 'seen' and 'unseen' considerations (drstādrstamūla). For example, one accepts the prasāda of a deity both because it is tasty (drstamūla) and because it conveys merit (adrstamūla). Many of the rulings concerning early morning housework may be seen to belong to the drsta classification. For it makes sense to do this kind of hard physical work when one is fresh rather than in the evening when one is tired. Similarly, in order to get the work done at all, a woman would have to rise extremely early.

First, 'the grain and so on (required for the coming day) must be prepared in the last part of the night.' 10 Attributing his quotations to the *Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa*, Tryambaka declares that 'all kinds of happiness and prosperity accrue to those women who in the last division of the night perform such tasks as preparing the grain.' 11 Kishwar and Vanita (1984:3-4) stress the laborious and time-consuming nature of this work. Grains and pulses must be cleaned and sifted by hand to remove dirt, twigs and stones. Paddy

^{10.} apararātre dhānyasaṃskārādi kartavyam // Sdhp.3r.3-4.

^{11.} tathā ca mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇe // niśāyāḥ paścime yāme dhānyasaṃskaraṇādikam / kriyamāṇaṃ hi nārīṇāṃ sarvaśreyodhanāvaham // iti // Sdhp.3r. 4-5 (Mārk.P.) 〈?

is boiled, dried, then husked by pounding. Wheat and corn are ground. Even spices are usually ground fresh before each meal. The sounds of this lengthy process of cleaning, grinding and pounding can be heard in the dark early hours of morning throughout village India. Sarah Hobson, for example, describes how the women in her household in Karnataka were always up by 4 a.m., grinding the millet for the family's consumption that day (1978:53). A generation ago, this was also common in urban areas where it is now often done by machine.

Next, still 'in the early morning, the house must be thoroughly cleaned and so on.'12 Tryambaka continues to quote from the Mārkandeyapurāna: 'If the sun's rays touch a house before it has been thoroughly cleaned, then the ancestors, the gods and the (divine) mothers will turn their faces away from him who owns it.'13 The house belongs to the husband; the penalty is seen to rest on him; but the responsibility for averting it lies with the wife alone.

Once the cleaning is done, she should smear the floor and walls of the house with cow-dung (gomayenānulepanam). As in the villages and the poorer urban areas of India today, the houses were made primarily of mud. Then as now, the mud surface was smeared with cow-dung to give it the required smooth and absorbent matt finish. The coating was believed to purify the dwelling, in both the medical (drsta) and the ritual (adrsta) sense. Hence, as the quotation attributed to the Markandeyapurana explains, 'every day early in the morning, the woman of the house should smear cow-dung throughout the home; once she has done so, she will meet with no difficulties at all.'14 In fact, this task involves a considerable amount of work. The dung must first be collected. It is then mixed with mud and straw to form a paste with which major and minor repairs, as well as the required surface finish, may be achieved; and all by hand (cf.Kishwar and Vanita 1984:4).

^{12.} prātaḥkāle grhasammārjanādikam kartavyam // Sdhp.3r.5.

^{13.} tad api tatraiva || sprśanti raśmayo yasya grham sammārjanād rte | bhavanti vimukhās tasya pitaro devamātarah // Sdhp.3r.5-6 (Mārk.P.) (? 14. prātahkāle striyā kāryam gomayenānulepanam pratyaham sadane tasmān naiva duḥkhāni paśyati // Sdhp.3r.6-7 (Mārk.P.) <?

The sanctity of the cow in general is so basic an assumption in Hindu culture that it is rarely justified or explained. Reverence for the cow is enjoined by the lawbooks: being in a cow-pen is likened to being in the presence of brahmins or at the recitation of the Veda (Manu IV.58); polluting a cow to polluting a brahmin or fire (Manu IV.142); offending a cow to offending one's guru, one's parents, or brahmins (Manu IV.162). In the Mahābhārata, Bhīsma regales Yudhisthira with eulogistic praise of cows: they are the mothers of the universe; there is no gift more sacred; there is nothing to equal them; with each part of their bodies they uphold the sacrifice; sacred in themselves, they can cleanse and sanctify others; and so on (Mbh.XIII.79.12-14; 80.2-3, 12). Even in a busy city street today, one may see a cyclist pause to touch a passing cow, then his own forehead, before pedalling on. Reverence for everything relating to cows is so great that pañcagavya, a mixture of cow's milk, curd, ghee, urine and dung, together with water in which blades of kuśa grass have been placed, is deemed to purify many sins (e.g. section II.D, p. 244, note 24; Yājñ.III.263,314; Baudhāyanagrhyasesasūtra 11.20.1 ff.; Par.Sm.X1.28-34; Manu XI.165).

When enjoining women to coat their homes with cow-dung, however, Tryambaka evidently feels the need for some further explanation concerning the sanctity and purifying powers of dung. In fact, he anticipates precisely the kind of reaction that is expressed in the epic by Yudhiṣṭhira. The latter has heard it said that cow-dung is 'delighted in by Śrī, the goddess of prosperity' (śriyā juṣṭam), but he has his doubts (Mbh.XIII.81.1). Bhīṣma's response is to narrate the story of how the goddess came to dwell in the dung of cows (śrīgosamvādah; Mbh.XIII.81). Tryambaka's digression in praise of cow-dung (gomayasya prāśastyam; Sdhp.3r. 7-3v.5) is extracted from this.

Tryambaka's version runs briefly as follows. 'Assuming a beautiful form, Śrī entered among the cows and said: "I wish to dwell in any one part of you, even in one that is (usually) despised. For nothing despicable can be seen in you, O sinless ones. O you who are both pure (in yourselves) and (capable of) purifying (others), O you fortunate ones, grant me a dwelling place! Please tell me where in your bodies I may dwell." The cows replied: "O glorious one, we must of necessity show honour to you. O beautiful one, dwell in our dung and urine for they are pure." Śrī replied: "By

good fortune, you have shown me this gracious favour. Let it be as you say and may all be well with you! O you who bestow happiness, I am honoured!" (Bhīsma concludes to Yudhisthira:) "My son, the great glory of cow-dung has now been explained to you." 15 The conclusion comes from another chapter altogether: 'one should therefore not recoil in any way from either the dung or the urine of cows.' 16 Tryambaka sums up in his own words. 'And thus it has been established by the experience of everyone that a place smeared with cow-dung is pure, the abode of Laksmī.' 17

Tryambaka's greatly abbreviated story is clearly intended to encourage women to bring the goddess of prosperity into the house by smearing it with cow-dung. What he omits from the version told by Bhīṣma, however, is equally instructive. For when the cows first see the goddess, although they are impressed by her beauty, they do not know who she is (Mbh.XIII.81.4-5). She identifies herself as the one whose absence caused the defeat of the Daityas, whose presence bestows happiness on gods and rṣis, and without whom neither dharma, artha nor kāma brings happiness (v.6-8). But when she asks permission to reside in the cows, she is abruptly, even rudely, refused on the grounds that she is unstable (adhruvām) and fickle (cañcalām; v.10). Besides, they explain, their bodies are good enough already; they have no need of her (v.11). Śrī's first response is to bluster. She describes the lengths to which both gods and demons have gone in order to gain her favour; never in

^{16.} gavām mūtrapurīsasya no 'dvijeta katham cana // iti // Sdhp.3v.3-4 (Mbh.) < Mbh.XIII.77.15a (kadācana for katham cana).

^{17.} ata eva gomayenānulipto dešah sucir laksmyā āyatanam iti sarvajanānubhavasiddham // Sdhp.3v.4-5.

the three worlds has she been so insulted (v.12-15). The cows demur: they did not mean to offend her; however, she is unstable and fickle, and for this reason alone they do not want her to be part of them; and there is no need to discuss the matter any further (v.16-17). Now Śrī is reduced to begging. If they cast her off like this, she will become an object of scorn in the world. They are always ready to grant protection to others, so why not to her? If they rescue her from her predicament, she will always be devoted to them. She is even willing to take up residence in the most despised part of their body, since no part of them can truly be considered despicable (v.18-20). Faced with such desperate pleas, the cows (described as 'naturally inclined to show compassion to those in distress'; karunavatsalāh) confer with one another (v.22). At last, they give in: she may dwell in their dung and urine (v.23). Śrī is overcome with gratitude (v.24). The whole tone of this passage and the balance of power implied is quite different from that suggested in Tryambaka's doctored version.

It is obvious that 'fortune' is personified as a female quite simply because it is held to possess such 'female qualities' as fickleness and instability. As I explain in section III, these are two of the catchwords that describe the innate weaknesses of women. According to Manu VIII.77, women have by nature such unstable minds (strībuddher asthiratvāt) that even pure women are not permitted to serve as witnesses in court. (For some reason, the unreliability of the female mind does not debar women from giving evidence in court for other women; see Manu VIII.68.)

It is equally obvious that identifying the goddess with defect-ridden human women cannot serve Tryambaka's purpose here. He needs the image of Śrī to be glorious and powerful for two reasons. First, he uses her presence in cow-dung to explain and glorify the custom of smearing the house with it and, by association, to ascribe that task to women. For example, it is one of the tasks included in Umā's discourse to Maheśvara on the proper behaviour of wives (Mbh.XIII.134.44; omitted in Tryambaka's extract in section IV, pp. 281-2). Secondly, Śrī must be a figure for women to emulate (e.g. Mbh.I.191.5-6). Thus the truly virtuous wife herself becomes the embodiment of Śrī in the home (e.g. Draupadī, Mbh.I.189.29,33; Sāvitrī, Mbh.III.277.25). Elsewhere, Śrī herself explains that she resides in those women who are devoted to truth, attend to their housework, always obey their husbands, and behave

with the appropriate decorum (Mbh.XIII.11.10 ff.). Indeed, as Manu explains, there is no difference between virtuous child-bearing wives (striyaḥ) and goddesses of fortune (śriyaḥ) dwelling in the homes of men (IX.26). It is evidently counterproductive, then, to allow the cows to label Śrī with the same faults as ordinary women and to treat her in the same disparaging way. Quite reasonably, therefore, Tryambaka edits the passage to suit his own requirements.

In the context of the Strīdharmapaddhati, and Tryambaka's insistence that the good wife should worship no god other than her husband (e.g. section IV, p.274, note 2; p.281, note 21; p.282, note 24; p.300, notes 66, 67; etc.), it is instructive to ask what exceptions are allowed, and why. In fact, there are only two, and both concern goddesses: Śrī in this section; and her sister, Jyeṣṭhā, in section IIC (pp. 227-9). But neither goddess is being nominated to rival the husband. Clearly, Śrī is not to be worshipped in the sense that Śiva or Viṣnu might be; she is to be emulated. For Tryambaka, she is simply the embodiment of the orthodox belief regarding the good wife. The negative associations he glosses over remain an unspecified but uneasy undercurrent in the complex world of strīdharma. (For the even more ambivalent image of Jyeṣṭhā, see section IIC, pp. 227-9.)

The link between the goddess and women is further reinforced in the next subsection. The worship of the threshold $(dehal\bar{\imath}p\bar{\imath}j\bar{a})$ is yet another household task to be completed before dawn by the woman of the house. Tryambaka quotes a series of unattributed ślokas. 'In the early morning in particular, the threshold is not to be left blank (i.e. of rangavalya; see note 22). If a woman leaves her threshold blank $(ś\bar{\imath}ny\bar{a})$, her family also becomes a blank.' 18 This is a reference to the auspicious designs sketched in white or coloured powders on and around the front entrance by the woman of the house. In villages today right across India, women can still be seen making these often very complex designs in the early hours of the morning. A family that is $ś\bar{\imath}nya$ is one without children. Since in the orthodox view a woman's primary function is to bear children (e.g. Manu IX.96), this is a dire threat indeed.

^{18.} aśūnyā dehalī kāryā prātaḥkāle viśeṣataḥ / yasyāḥ śūnyā bhavet sā tu śūnyam tasyāḥ kulam bhavet // Sdhp.3v.5-6 < ?

Tryambaka continues the quotation. 'The goddess, deity of all, always resides on the threshold. She must therefore be worshipped there every day with the fragrance of sandalwood paste, flowers, unbroken grains and so on.'19 'Anyone who touches that threshold with his foot or crosses over it without worshipping it first will find no happiness; therefore one should take care not to do that.'20 'If a woman walks over ground that has been smeared (i.e. with cow-dung) but not marked with the auspicious sign of the svastika, she will lose three things: her wealth (vittam), long life and her good reputation.'21 The reference to a woman's wealth must presumably be understood in terms of the rules set forth by Tryambaka regarding the rights of women to own property (strīdhanam; see section IV, pp. 277-80). Ground that is smeared with cow-dung but unmarked by the svastika is traditionally held to be extremely inauspicious. It is the custom in Maharashtra, for example, that when a corpse has been lying on the ground, after it is finally removed, the area is smeared with cow-dung and deliberately left without the mark of the svastika. Ground treated in this way is thus automatically associated with someone's death (LSJ). Tryambaka concludes that 'the goddess Laksmī, complete with all her attributes, always dwells in the house that always shines as a result of smearing (with cow-dung) and auspicious powder designs (rangavalya).'22

Tryambaka now adds the rider that 'this (i.e. all these items of housework)—cleaning (the house), smearing (the walls and floor with cow-dung), pounding (the grain) and so on—should be done as far as possible by (the wife) herself; alternatively, she may get someone else (such as a servant, daughter-in-law or even junior co-wife) to do them.'23 In support of this statement, Tryambaka

^{19.} udumbare vasen nityam bhavānī sarvadevatā / tataḥ sā pratyaham pūjyā gandhapuṣpākṣatādibhiḥ // Sdhp.3v.6-7 < ?

^{20.} pādasya sparšaņam tatra asampūjya ca langhanam / kurvan na sukham āpnoti tasmāt tat parivarjayet // Sdhp.3v.7-8 < ?

^{21.} akrtasvastikām yā tu kramel liptām ca medinīm / tasyās trīņi vinašyanti vittam āyur yašas tathā // Sdhp.3v.8-9 < ?

^{22.} yad grham rājate nityam rangavalyānulepanaih/ tad grhe vasate laksmīr nityam pūrnakalānvitā// iti// Sdhp.3v.9-10<Sm.M.I.p.158 (mangalair anulepanaih for rangavalyānulepanaih; Vyāsa.)

^{23.} idam ca dhānyāvahananopalepanasammārjanādikam yathāsakti svayam kuryāt kārayed vā // Sdhp. 3v.10-4r.1.

quotes from Sumanā's advice to Śāndilī on the correct behaviour of women (see also section IV, pp. 282–3). With regard to the wife's general domestic duties, Sumanā explains, 'rising early in the morning, I do or get someone else to do all the tasks that have arisen for the benefit of the household.'²⁴

But on no account may the wife delegate her sacrificial duties to anyone else. As Tryambaka declares, 'she should herself attend to serving the (sacred) fire and to preparing the implements required for the worship of the gods.' 25 In support of this statement, Tryambaka presents a quotation attributed to 'Skānda' (Sdhp.4r3-4) that is reproduced in his comments on devapūjā (Sdhp. 12v.5-8, section IIC, pp. 178-80, and again in his section on general behaviour (Sdhp. 7-9, section IV, pp. 273-4.) I shall deal with it in the most appropriate of these three contexts, that of devapūjā (section IIC, p. 179, note 35). It is enough to say here that the virtuous wife may delegate her domestic duties to servant or relative (cf. Sinha 1980:116-19), but never her ritual duties.

At this point, Tryambaka moves on to the rules concerning personal hygiene (mūtrapurīṣotsargah; see below, pp. 69-71). Before describing these, however, I shall briefly consider the rulings given in the later subsection on the care and worship of cows (gosevanam; Sdhp.5v.9-6v.5; plate 1). These are also among the duties to be performed before dawn but, in Tryambaka's schema, they are sandwiched rather oddly between teeth-cleaning (dantadhāvanam; see pp. 78-82) and bathing (snānam; pp. 82-8). I prefer to include them in this section on general household duties, together with the other points relating to cows and cow-dung.

Without introduction or comment, Tryambaka quotes what are apparently two passages from the *Mahābhārata*. In fact, both consist of ślokas and half-ślokas taken indiscriminately either from the *Mahābhārata* chapters on cows or from verses elsewhere attributed to the *Mahābhārata*. Most of the rulings are given in the masculine form, indicating general duties applicable to both men and women but here ascribed to women. Their inclusion in

25. agniparicaryām devapūjopakaraņasādhanādīni tu svayæm kuryāt // Sdhp.4r.2-3.

^{24.} tathā cānuśāsanike śāndilīm prati sumanā // Sdhp.4r.1. kuṭumbārthe samānītam yat kiṃcit kāryam eva tu / prātar utthāya tat sarvam kārayāmi karomi ca // iti // Sdhp.4r.1-2 (Mbh.) < Mbh.XIII.124.15.

this treatise is probably intended to reinforce still further the link between women, the goddess Śrī and cows.

The first lengthy passage reads as follows. 'If one pays homage to cows morning and evening, one becomes prosperous. One should always praise cows, not treat them with contempt. One should not be hostile towards cows, even in the mind, but should always strive to make them happy. One should honour and worship them with gestures of respect (namaskārai[h]). For cows are the mothers of all beings and they bring happiness to all. Those who seek success should always walk round cows, keeping them on their right (pradaksināh; i.e. as a token of respect; cf. Manu IV.39; Gonda 1980:58-9). One should not kick cows (cf. A.V.XIII.1.56), nor walk through the midst of them. For they are gods in whom good fortune resides and so must always be honoured.'26 'Whether in the hot season, in the rains, or in the cold season, or in any windy or extreme conditions, one should not see to one's own safety without first seeing as far as possible to that of one's cows. One should not report a cow that is eating, whether it is doing so in one's own house, field or threshing floor, or in someone else's; nor should one report a calf that is sucking (cf. Manu IV.59; Ap.I. 31.10.18; Gaut.IX.23 etc.). (Calves are often tethered precisely to prevent them from drinking their mother's milk). If a cow has fallen or become stuck in the mud, one should use all one's strength to raise it up.'27 'Confining and tethering cows for their own protec-

27. Sdhp.6r.3-5 (Mbh.). usne varsati šīte vā mārute vāti vā bhṛṣam / na kurvītātmanas trānam gor akrtvā svašaktitah // ātmano yadi vānyesām grhe ksetre khale 'thavā/ bhaksayantīm na kathayet pibantam naiva vatsakam// (Par.M.II.i.p.248,2-5 (tu šaktitah for svašaktitah; 'thavā khale for khale 'thavā; caiva for naiva). patitām pankalagnām vā sarvaprānaih samuddharet // < Par.M.II.i.p.248, 1 (ca for vā; °prānair vimoksayet for °prānaih samud-

dharet). Not in Mbh. crit. edn. index.

^{26.} Sdhp.5v.9-6r.3 (Mbh.). atha gosevanam /bhārate// sāyam prātar namasyec ca gās tatah pustim āpnuyāt // < Mbh.XIII.77.15b (cf. note 29). gāś ca samkīrtayen nityam nāvamanyeta tās tathā // < Mbh.XIII.77.17a (tās for gās). druhyen na manasā vāpi gosu nityam sukhapradah / arcayeta sadā caiva namaskāraiš ca pūjayet // < Mbh.XIII.80.33ab (na druhyen for druhyen na; cāpi for vāpi; tā hi for nityam). mātarah sarvabhūtānām gāvah sarvasukhapradāh / vrddhim ākānksatā nityam gāvah kāryāh pradaksināh // (Mbh. XIII.68.6b-7a. santādyā na tu pādena gavām madhye na ca vrajet // (? mangalāyatanam devyas tasmāt pūjyāh sadaiva hi//< Mbh.XIII.68.7b.

tion, however, is no sin: (if the cow is harmed in the process), whether intentionally or unintentionally, this is not to be treated as (the punishable offence of) harming it (tadvadham); and one should tether the animal with (ropes made from) kāśa and kuśa grass so that it faces south. But if one drives a cow into a well or a pond, or makes it trip up on logs (or tree stumps), or if one sells it to people who eat cows, then one incurs (the sin of) harming a cow (govadham). Moreover, there is no prāyaścitta (rite of expiation; i.e. powerful enough to atone) for cows that are killed in a well or ditch, or in a pit with reinforced sides, or in a dammed up river, or in a roadside tank, or in (any such) watering places.'28

The sin of killing or harming a cow (govadha) is listed first in the catalogue of minor offences (upapātika) given, for example, in Manu XI.60-7. Gaut.III.4.18 equates it with the murder of a vaiśya, Āp.I.9.26.1 with that of a śūdra. The penalties imposed vary considerably (e.g. Manu XI.108-16; Yājñ.III.263-4; Vis.Sm. 50.16-24, etc.). However, the statement that there is no prāyaścitta powerful enough to atone for the sin of govadha conflicts with the traditional view that every 'sin' or mistake is matched by a given prāyaścitta (cf. Gonda 1980:288 ff.). This issue becomes especially significant in Tryambaka's discussion of sahagamana (see pp. 291-8).

The second passage, also consisting of ślokas taken out of sequence from different chapters of the Mahābhārata, begins by describing the form that the daily worship of cows should take. 'One should purify oneself and then, standing among the cows, one should repeat in one's mind the gomatīmantra: "I always see the cows. May the cows always see me! The cows belong to us and we belong to them. Where the cows are there we are also. I bow my head in worship to the cow for she is the mother of the past and the future and by her the whole universe of moving and unmoving things is pervaded." One should neither go to sleep without praising cows nor get up without remembering them.

^{28.} Sdhp.6r.5-9 (Mbh.). gavām samrakṣaṇārthāya na duṣyed rodhaban-dhayoḥ // tadvadham tu na tam vidyāt kāmākāmakṛtam tathā / kāśaiḥ kuśaiś ca badhnīyāt gopaśum dakṣiṇāmukham // prerayan kūpavāpīṣu vṛkṣabhedeṣu pātayan / gavāśaneṣu vikrīṇan tataḥ prāpnoti govadham // kūpakhāte taṭābandhe nadībandhaprapāsu ca / pānīyeṣu vipannānām prāyaścittam na vidyate // iti // < ? Not in Mbh. crit. edn. index.

If one pays homage to cows morning and evening, one becomes prosperous. If a man (narah) praises cows in this way both day and night, in rough times or smooth, and even in times of great fear (or danger), he will be freed from (that) fear (or danger). If one wants a son, one obtains a son; the same goes for wealth too; a woman who wants sexual pleasure will gain a husband; indeed men (mānavah, superordinate) may obtain whatever they desire. Men (mānavah, hyponym) who are devoted to cows obtain whatever they desire; and women who are devoted to cows obtain their desire (too). Indeed, O Bhārata, nothing is hard to obtain for one devoted to cows!' 29

Devotion to cows is thus another pre-dawn āhnika duty. It is to be observed by women as well as men. If a woman wants a son, or marital happiness, or anything else, she has only to devote herself to the care and worship of cows. In more general terms, the care of cows by the higher castes is held to be of great merit precisely because it is dirty work that servants can be called upon to do. It is thus an important ritual act, especially in south India. It seems likely, however, that these rulings are intended not so much for the older established woman of the household but for her new daughter(s)-in-law. We may also note that the recitation of the gomatīmantra constitutes an exception to Tryambaka's blanket prohibition on mantras for women (e.g. section V, p. 278, notes 7–8) presumably because it is not from a Vedic text. For the long-

29. Sdhp.6r.9-6v.5. anyatrāpi // gavām madhye śucir bhūtvā gomatīm manasā japet // < Mbh.XIII.80.40a. gā vai paśyāmy aham nityam gāvah paśyantu mām sadā / gāvo 'smākam vayam tāsām yato gāvas tato vayam // Mbh.XIII.77.23 (gāvah paśyantu mām nityam gāvāh paśyāmy aham sadā . . .). yayā sarvam idam vyāptam jagatsthāvarajangamam / tām dhenum śirasā vande bhūtabhavasya mātāram // < Mbh.XIII.79.15. nākīrtayitvā gāh svapyān nāsamsmrtyaiva cotpatet // < Mbh.XIII.78.15a (svapyān smrtya punar utpatet). sāyam prātar namasyec ca gās tatah puṣtim āpnuyāt // < Mbh.XIII.77.15b (cf. note 26). evam rātrau divā cāpi sameṣu viṣameṣu ca / mahābhayeṣu ca narah kīrtayan mucyate bhayāt // < Mbh.XIII.77.24 (caiva for cāpi). putrakāmaś ca labhate putram dhanam athāpi vā / prītikāmā ca bhartāram sarvakāmāṃś ca mānavaḥ // < Mbh.XIII.80.43ab (patikāmā for prītikāmā). goṣu bhaktaś ca labhate yad yad icchati mānavaḥ / striyo 'pi bhaktā yā goṣu tāś ca kāmam avāpnuyuḥ // < Mbh.XIII.82.45 (kāmān for kāmam). na kimcid durlabham caiva gavām bhaktasya bhārata // iti // < Mbh.XIII.82.47b.

standing worship of the cow as a divinity, as evidenced in the earliest Sanskrit texts, see PVK II.ii.772-5.

Ablutions, etc. (Sdhp.4r.4-7v.9)

Urinating and defecating (mutrapurisotsargah; Sdhp.4r.4-4v.3). First, what is the ritual significance of this? Tryambaka explains that, before performing any religious ritual, 'it is necessary to urinate and so on because one who has not done so is not entitled to participate in religious ritual.' The proof of this is to be found in the unattributed statement that 'one who has held back (urine and excrement) should not perform a ritual.'30 This ruling recalls the ayurvedic distinction between urges which should be suppressed (greed, grief, fear, anger, etc.) and those which should not (natural urges relating to urine, faeces, semen, vomiting, sneezing and so on). Caraka devotes a subsection to this topic, beginning with the importance of not withholding urine and faeces (na vegan dharayed dhīmāñ jātān mūtrapurīsayoh). He proceeds to deal with each urge in turn, listing the ailments that result from suppressing it and the remedies to counteract them (Car.I.VII). The ritual consequences, however, are ignored.

Secondly, Tryambaka describes the 'appropriate place' where, according to Āpastamba, this should be done. 'One should urinate and defecate far from one's house, either to the south (the direction of Yama) or to the south-west (that of Nirrti; cf. Gonda 1980: 52–7).'³¹ But, according to a quotation attributed vaguely to 'traditional teaching' (smaranāt), 'this applies (only) to the daytime.' For practical purposes, 'daytime' here includes the early pre-dawn

30. noparuddhah kriyām cared ((?; see note 35) iti vacanena mūtrādyuparuddhasya kriyānadhikāradarsanāt tadutsargah kartavyah // Sdhp.4r.4-5.

^{31.} tatra deśaviśeṣam āhāpastambaḥ // dūrād āvasathān mūtrapurīṣe kuryād dakṣiṇām diśam dakṣiṇāparām vā // iti // Sdhp.4r.5-7 (Āp.) < Āp.I.11.31.2. Ap. in fact reads ārāc cāvasathān, while MS T1 reads ācārāc with a marginal emendation to dūrād as above. In the same context and quoting the same sūtra from Āpastamba, Sm.M.II.p.211 and Sm.C.II.p.237 give ārāc cāvasathān; Par.M.I.i.p.224 gives dūrād āvasathān. The latter reading is probably influenced by the better-known śloka from Manu that begins: dūrād āvasathān mūtram . . . (Manu IV.151; Sm.M.II.p.211; Par.M.I.i.p.224; Sm.C. II.p.237).

hours of morning (strictly speaking, the last division of the night). 'For it is said that one should urinate and defecate near one's house

at night.'32

For the details of how it should be done, Tryambaka turns to Angiras. 'Rising in the last division of night, one should sip water and cover the ground with grass. Then, in a clean place, with concentrated mind, covering one's head with one's garment, and resolutely refraining from speech, spitting and breathing (out), one should urinate and defecate.'33 As for why one should not speak, spit or breathe out, the answer is presumably 'unseen merit' (adṛṣṭārtha), the stock answer when the reason for a ruling is not obvious (see p. 58).

'The rule concerning the direction one should face at the various times' is provided by Gautama. 'One should urinate and defecate while facing north during the day and at dawn and dusk, but facing south at night.' ³⁴ There are in fact a number of other rulings that Tryambaka might have given instead. Yama, for example suggests facing west in the first part of the day, east in the next, north at midday, and south at night. Devala opts for facing north in the morning, south in the evening; or, as Manu phrases it, north in the daytime and south at night (Sm.C.II.p. 236–7). However all seem to agree that the two twilight periods of dawn and dusk should if possible be avoided, always bearing in mind that one should never obstruct these calls of nature.³⁵

Finally, Gautama provides a list of the specific places where one should neither urinate nor defecate: 'on ashes, on cow-dung (karī-

^{32.} etac ca divāviṣayam // rātrau mūtrapurīṣe tu gṛhābhyāśe samācaret // iti smaraṇāt // Sdhp.4r.7 < Sm.M.II.p.211 (smaraṇāt). Cf. Āp.I.11.31.3.

^{33.} tatra prakāram āhāngirāḥ // utthāya paścime rātrau tata ācamya codakam / antardhāya tṛṇair bhūmim śiraḥ prāvṛtya vāsasā // vācam niyamya yatnena ṣṭhīvanocchvāsavarjitaḥ / kuryān mūtrapurīṣe tu śucau deśe samāhitaḥ // iti // Sdhp.4r.7-10 (Ang.) < Sm.M.II.211 (yāme rātrer for rātrau tata; Ang.); Sm.C.II.p.234-5 (as Sm.M.); Par.M.I. p.221 (rātre for rātrau). Cf. Manu V.49; Yājn.I.16 and comm.

^{34.} kālabhedena dinniyamam āha gautamah // mūtrapurīṣe divā kuryād udanmukhaḥ / saṃdhyayoś ca / rātrau tu dakṣiṇāmukhaḥ // iti // Sdhp.4r. 10-4v.1 (Gaut.) < Gaut.I.9.41-3 (ubhe mūtrapurīṣe tu). Cf. Yājn.I.16 and comm.

^{35.} na vegam dhārayen noparuddhaḥ kriyām kuryāt // Gaut. quoted in Sm.C.II.p.236; unattrib. in Par.M.I.i.p.224. Cf. note 30.

sam; glossed as gomayam), in a ploughed field, in the shade (glossed as "in which one rests", e.g. in the shade of a tree, cf. Ap.I.30.16; one may urinate on one's own shadow, v.17), on the road, or in (any other) desirable places.' 36 Moreover, 'one should not void urine, excrement or any other impurity while facing the wind, fire, a brahmin, water, (the image of) a deity, or a cow.' 37 The other 'impurities', listed as twelve in Manu V.135 (cf. Sm.C.II.p. 250), include semen, blood, mucus, phlegm, tears and sweat. The Visnupurāṇa (as quoted by Sm.C.II.p.239) includes women among the things or people one should not face at such a time, along with the wind, fire, the moon, the sun, one's guru, and a brahmin.

Clearly none of the rulings given by Tryambaka concerning mūtrapurīṣotsarga are gender specific. He has simply taken rules originally intended for men and applied them to women too.

Cleansing rituals (saucam; Sdhp.4v.3-5r.4)

'One should cleanse oneself immediately', a process defined by Tryambaka as 'causing both smell and trace to be removed'.³⁸ Two verses from Gautama repeat this definition of śaucam. 'Cleansing in the sense of removing all trace and smell of impurity is achieved by using first earth and then water.'³⁹ Manu adds that as long as smell or trace remain, one must continue to apply earth and water (V.126; cf. Yājñ.I.17).

For 'the earth appropriate to women' (strīnām mṛ [d]), Tryambaka turns to Marīci. 'In the case of women and śūdras, black (earth is to be used).' 40 This rule amplifies Marīci's statement (quoted in Sm.C.II.p.242) that different coloured earth is appropriate for each varṇa: white for brahmins, red for kṣatriyas, yellow for vaiśyas, and black for śūdras. It is no surprise that women of all varṇas

^{36.} varjyān āha sa eva// na bhasmakarīṣakṛṣṭacchāyapathikāmyeṣu// iti// Sdhp.4v.1-3 (Gaut.) Gaut.I.9.10. Cf. Manu IV.45-8; Yājñ.I.16-17 and Mit., Vis.Sm.60.3-21.

^{37.} na väyvagniviprādityāpo devatā gās ca pratipasyan vā mūtrapurīsāmedhyān vyudasyet // iti ca // Sdhp.4v.2-3 < Gaut.I.9.13; cf. Sm.C.II.p.239.

^{38.} anantaram / gandhalepakṣayakaram śaucam kuryāt // Sdhp.4v.3 < Yājñ.I.17b.

^{39.} tathā ca gautamaḥ // lepagandhāpakarṣaṇe śaucam amedhyasa // tad adbhiḥ pūrvam mṛdā ca // iti // Sdhp.4v.4 (Gaut.) < Gaut.I.1.45-6.

^{40.} strīnām mrdam āha marīcih // krsnā strīśūdrayos tathā // iti // Sdhp.4v. 4-5 (Marīci) < Sm.C.II.p.242 (Kāśyapa).

are grouped with *śūdras* here. However, 'if one is unable to find the particular earth prescribed'—in Mahabaleshwar, for example, the earth is predominantly red; around Pune, predominantly black—then 'any kind will do.' As Tryambaka and Manu declare, 'whatever water or earth is to be found in a given place, that is recommended and with that the cleansing should be done.'41 The *Smṛticandrikā* modifies this statement further by listing all the places from which one may not take earth for this purpose: from rat-infested ground, molehills, a road (Yama); earth containing fire, grain husks, insects, bones (Devala); from an anthill, from water, from a house, from cultivated land (Vis.P.); and so on (Sm.C.II.p. 242–3). But none of these rulings are in any way exclusive to women.

For the rules concerning which hand to use ($hastaniyam\bar{a}[h]$), Tryambaka consults Devala. 'One who knows dharma should not use his right hand for cleansing his lower body; equally he should not cleanse above his navel with his left hand.'42

For the amount of earth to be used each time (mṛtparimāṇam), Tryambaka quotes Śātātapa. 'The morsels (of food) prescribed for the induvrata are the size of ripe (lit. 'moist' or 'juicy') āmalaka fruit, as are all oblations and also the lumps of earth used for cleansing oneself.'43 The induvrata or 'moon ritual' (also called cāndrāyaṇa) is a particular kind of controlled fast that lasts for thirty days and in the course of which the amount of food eaten reflects the waxing and waning of the moon. (The yavamadhya form begins with one morsel of food, increases by a morsel per day until the fifteenth day, and returns to one, thus being fat in the middle like a barley corn (yava). The pipīlikamadhya form begins

^{41.} uktamṛttikālābhe yā kācana grāhyā // tathā ca manuḥ // Sdhp.4v.5-6. yasmin deśe ca yat toyam yā ca yatraiva mṛttikā / saiva tatra praśastā syāt tayā śaucam vidhīyate // Sdhp.4v.6 (Manu) < Par.M.I.i.p.227 (tu for ca; Manu); Sm.C.II.p.242 (tu for ca; tathā for tayā; Manu). Not in any edns. of Manu consulted.

^{42.} hastaniyamam āha devalaḥ // Sdhp.4v.7 dharmavid dakṣiṇaṃ hastam adhaḥ śauce na yojayet / tathā ca vāmahastena nābher ūrdhvaṃ na śodhayet // Sdhp.4v.7-8 (Devala) < Par.M.I.i.p.228 (Devala); Sm.C.II.p.249 (tathaiva for tathā ca, Devala).

^{43.} mṛtparimāṇam āha śātātapaḥ // Sdhp.4v.8. ādrāmalakamātrās tu grāsā induvrate sthitāḥ / tathaivāhutayaḥ sarvāḥ śaucārthe yāś ca mṛttikāḥ // iti // Sdhp.4v.8-9 (Śāt.) (Sm.C.II.p.247 (smṛtāḥ for sthitāḥ; Śāt.); Sm.M.II. p.218 (as Sm.C.).

with fifteen morsels, decreases to one on the fifteenth day, and then works back to fifteen, thus being thin in the middle like an ant (pipīlika; cf. Baudh.III.8.33; Mit. on Yājñ.III.323; Manu XI.217-18; Vas.23.45,27.21; Vis.Sm. 47.5-6.)

Satatapa also provides the reference for the number of lumps of earth to be used $(mrts\bar{a}mkhy[\bar{a}])$. Cleansing urine is reckoned to take one lump of earth for the penis, three for the left hand, two more for both hands; and cleansing faeces, twice as many. In the case of women and śūdras, however, half as many is recommended by the wise.'44 The mention of the male organ (linga) demonstrates the male reference of the original ruling. Moreover, the Smrticandrikā version concludes with a ruling related to the voiding of semen not faeces. The last half-śloka is the first of the two examples of rulings specific to women discussed by Tryambaka in his introductory section (see section I, p. 39, note 25). Both the Smrtyarthasāra (p. 19) and Daksa (V.12) add that half of the śauca requirements are necessary at night; a quarter if one is sick; an eighth if one is on a journey; and that no particular number is prescribed for women, sūdras, and boys who have not yet undergone the upanayana ritual. This recalls my discussion above of the inconsistency entailed in equating on the one hand women in general with sūdras, and on the other unmarried women with uninitiated high-caste boys (section I, pp. 34-9). This example, in which women whether married or not are grouped together with both śūdras and uninitiated high-caste boys, merely adds to the confusion.

For the order in which the cleansing process should be carried out (krama[h]), Tryambaka quotes Vyāsa. 'First, one should cleanse oneself of faecal matter, then of urine; next, one should cleanse one's feet, and after that one's hands.'45

45. tatra kramam āha vyāsah // Sdhp.5r.1. vitšaucam prathamam kuryān mūtrašaucam atah param/pādašaucam tatah kuryāt karašaucam atah param//

iti // Sdhp.5r.2 (Vyāsa) < Sm.M.II.p.218 (Vyāsa).

^{44.} mṛtsamkhyām āha śātātapah // Sdhp.4v.9-10. ekā linge kure savye tisro dve hastayor dvayoh / műtraśaucam samākhyātam śakrti dvigunam bhavet/ strisūdrayor ardhamānam saucam proktam manisibhih// iti// Sdhp.4v. 10-5r.1 (Sat.) < Par M.I.i.p.228,230 (trigunam for dvigunam; 1 MS gives dvigunam; proktam śaucam for śaucam proktam); Sm.C.II.p.243,248 (śukle tu trigunam for sakrti dvigunam bhavet; variant reading tad dvigunam; proktam śaucam); Sm.M.II.p.218 (first śloka only; tisre for tisro, śukle tu for śakrti; last half-śloka on p.219, Adit.P.). Cf. Manu V.136; Vas.VI.18; Vis.Sm.60.25; Vis.P.III.11.17; etc.. Cf. section I, note 25.

Finally, we return to the point at which Tryambaka began in his introduction. The unattributed and partial quotation given there (section I, note 8) is now attributed to Baudhayana and given in full. It concerns 'the problem caused by not performing the purification rituals described'. 'One must make a constant effort to cleanse oneself (properly), for only then is one essentially pure, a (true) dvija; if one fails to perform these rituals of purification, then one's actions will bear no fruit.'46 The confusion about the status of women is very obvious here. In order to apply the ruling to women, we must invoke the *ūha* of gender. But the exhortation is to behave like a true dvija and women are repeatedly classed with śūdras. It seems that women are meant to be inspired in one place, humbled in the next, but are certainly never expected to think the matter through. As to what is meant by 'proper cleansing', Mit. on Yājñ.I.17 gives the most sensible answer: one need only use as much earth and water as is necessary to remove all trace and smell. The numbers of lumps actually prescribed are there for 'unseen' (adrsta) reasons; hence, for example, the rather startling ruling (given by Tryambaka himself in section IV, p. 286), that a woman who is menstruating requires sixty lumps to cleanse herself on the fourth day, a widow who is menstruating twice as many.

With regard to the practices described in both this section and the previous one, Vidyāmava remarks with satisfaction that they are easily followed in Indian villages even today. Indeed he laments their abandonment in the cities where 'every house has got its privy.' In his view, 'the old system' provided a number of advantages which are lacking in the new: early morning exercise ('whether they liked it or not'); no need for 'costly systems of sanitation and drainage'; and it did not compel a whole class of people (sweepers) 'to a degraded form of livelihood'. Most important of all, it kept houses clean without 'the necessity of setting apart a portion of it for the accumulation of filth' (1979:12-13). We may assume that many traditionalists today would share his opinion that modern sanitation is in fact a change for the worse.

^{46.} uktasaucākaraņe pratyavāyam āha bodhāyanaḥ // Sdhp.5r.2-3. sauce yatnaḥ sadā kāryaḥ saucamūlo yato dvijaḥ / saucācāravihīnasya samastā nisphalāḥ kriyaḥ // iti // Sdhp.5r.3-4 (Baudh.) < Dakṣa V.2 (dvijaḥ smṛtaḥ for yato dvijaḥ); Par.M.I.i.p.233 (Dakṣa); Sm.C.II.p.249 (Dakṣa); Sm.M.II. p.220 (as Dakṣa; Baudh.). Cf. section I, note 8; Vidyārṇava 1979: 12-13.

The sipping ritual (ācamanam; Sdhp.5r.4-5v.1)

First, as Devala explains, ācamana must be performed as soon as śauca is completed. 'When one has washed with water each foot in turn as far as the knee, one should wash both hands as far as the wrist, and then perform ācamana.' In fact, ācamana is a preliminary to all ritual acts (cf. Har. on Āp.I.5.15.1; Gobh.gr.I.1.2). It is to be performed before reciting the Veda (Manu V.138), both before and after meals, after sleeping, sneezing and spitting (cf. Gaut.I.1.40; Manu V.145; Gobh.gr.I.2.32), as well as after urinating or defecating (cf. ācamananimittāni; Sm.C.II.p.260ff.). That a male reference is usually assumed is demonstrated by the ruling that one should perform ācamana after touching a woman, or after talking to a woman or a śūdra during a meal.

A śloka from Yājñavalkya explains how this sipping should be done (ācamanaprakāra[ħ]). 'Sitting in a clean place, with one's hands between one's knees (antarjānu), and facing either north or east, a dvija should always sip (water) from the base of the thumb (brahmatīrtha).'48 The term antarjānu indicates a sitting posture with the knees spread (cf. Gonda 1980:62-3). The brahmatīrtha at the base of the thumb is one of several sacred spots on the hand. The others, according to Yājñ.I.19 and Vis.Sm.62.1-4, are the base of the smallest finger (prājāpatyatīrtha); the base of the index finger (pitṛtīrtha); and the tips of the fingers (daivatīrtha). Once again, we have the irony of a ruling for the dvija (now reclassified as male) being applied to women (who are consistently grouped with śūdras).

More important, Tryambaka omits the usual directives in such contexts (and in that of mūtrapurīṣotsarga; cf. Yājñ.I.1.16; Sm.C.II. p.235-6) concerning the sacred thread (yajñopavīta). The equivalent instruction in Gautama, for example, reads: sitting in a clean place, placing one's right arm between one's knees, and wearing the sacred thread (yajñopavītī), one should wash both

^{47.} śaucānantaram ācamanam āha devalah // Sdhp.5r.4. ity evam adbhir ā jānu prakṣālya caraṇau pṛthak / hastau cā maṇibandhābhyām kuryād ācamanam tatah // iti // Sdhp.5r.4-5 (Devala) < Sm.M.II.p.22i (Ap.Sm.); Sm.C.II.p.255 (paścād āsīte samyatah for kuryād ācamanam tatah).

^{48.} ācamanaprakāram āha yājňavalkyah // Sdhp.5r.5-6. antarjānuh šucau deśa upaviṣṭa udanmukhah / prāg vā brāhmeṇa tīrtheṇa dvijo nityam upaspṛṣ́et // iti // Sdhp.5r.6-7 (Yājň.) 〈 Yājň.I.18;Sm.M.II.p.221;Sm.C.II.p.252; Par.M.I.i.p.234; Śańkh.10.5; Vidyārṇava 1979:14.

hands as far as the wrist . . . and so on (Gaut.1.1.35; Par.M.I.i. p.235). Haradatta glosses yajñopavītī in two ways: first, as having the sacred thread in its normal place (over the left shoulder, cf. Manu II.63; Gobh.gr.1.2.2); and alternatively, as referring to the arrangement of one's upper garment (athavottarīyavinyāsārtham). This seems to be yet another example of a reference to an initiated person being reinterpreted so that it can be applied to the uninitiated. However, Haradatta proceeds to quote Baudh.I.5.15.1, according to which one should be yajñopavītī on a number of different occasions including during the ācamana ritual, and as he does so the alternative interpretation seems increasingly inappropriate. Yet Bühler has preferred this second interpretation in his translation of both passages (1975:54, 180-1). Tryambaka, however, has done his best to avoid the issue altogether. But even the quotation he has selected (Yājñ.I.18; see note 48) includes the term dvija, glossed in the Mitāksarā as na śūdrādih, an expression that surely excludes women too.

Nonetheless, it is obvious that neither Tryambaka nor Yājñavalkya wish to prevent women or śūdras from performing the ācamana ritual. For at the end of this subsection, Tryambaka quotes Yājñ.I.21 to declare that 'dvijas are purified by water reaching the heart, throat and palate respectively; women and sūdras by merely touching it once. '49 The second half of this sloka is the other example of rulings specific to women given in Tryambaka's introduction (section I, p. 40, note 26). The last phrase (sakṛt spṛṣṭābhir antataḥ) has been variously interpreted, as has the equivalent phrase of Manu 11.62 (śūdrah sprstābhir antatah). Antatah is glossed either as antena meaning 'at the extremity (of mouth or lips)', or as antargatena meaning inside (the mouth, Mit.). Kullūka specifies that water need only touch the extremity of the tongue and lips (cf. Apar.), even if it does not reach the throat; Rāghavānanda the tip of the tongue; Nandana the outside edge of the lips. Rāmacandra prefers the more straightforward and strictly grammatical interpretation of 'finally' to indicate that (although strī is not in fact specified in the Manu quotation) women and sūdras constitute

^{49.} yājñavalkyah hṛtkanṭhatālugābhis ca yathāsamkhyam dvijātayah // śuddhyeran strī ca śūdras ca sakṛt spṛṣṭābhir antataḥ // iti // Sdhp.5r.10-5v.1 (Yājñ.) < Yājñ.I.21; Par.M.I.i.p.236; Sm.M.II.p.222. Cf. Manu II.62; Vis.Sm.62.9; Śankh.10.4. Cf. section I, p.40, note 26.

the last varna category. 50 Whichever interpretation is accepted, however, women are entitled to perform ācamana. But, once again, both the intrinsic impurity of śūdras and the lower standards of purification required of them are ascribed to women.

Tryambaka quotes two further ślokas on the water to be used for sipping (ācamanārtham udakam). First, according to Parāśara. 'one should sip water that has been "drawn up" (i.e. from a well or river or other source of fresh water), free of foam or bubbles, neither heated by fire nor brackish (aksāra; glossed by Nand. on Vis.Sm. 62.5 as "any bad water")'.51 Or, to use Yājñavalkya's phrase, one should use water in its natural state (prakrtisthābhih; Yājñ.I.20). The second śloka, attributed to Pracetas, adds two exceptions (viśesam). First, 'according to the wise, (ācamana has the desired) purifying effect at night even when one uses water one cannot see.' Secondly, 'hot water (is allowed) in the case of sick people who are in the habit of drinking hot water.'52 The latter point refers to the traditional view, based on ayurvedic practices, that people suffering from fever (jvara) should drink hot water and never cold. In such a state, it is believed that one should observe a strict fast; only water is allowed, and this should be boiled and served warm on the grounds that cold water heightens fever (Jolly 1901:70-4).

Tryambaka does not concern himself with the mass of rules relating to when sipping should be done (ācamananimittāni; e.g. Sm.C. II.p. 260 ff.); when it should be done twice (dvirācamānanimittāni; e.g. Sm.C.II.p.264 ff.); nor the various exceptions and prohibitions relating to it (e.g. Sm.C.II.p.265 ff.).

50. kantham aprāptābhir api sūdro jihvausthāntenāpi sprstābhir adbhih pūto bhavati // Kull. on Manu II.62. antato jihvāgreņa // Rāgh. on Manu II.62. antato utenāsyāntenausthenety arthah // Nand. on Manu II.62. strī ca sūdras cāntatah varnāntatah sprstābhih adbhih pūyate // Rāmac. on Manu II.62.

51. ācamanārtham udakam višinasti parāšarah // Sdhp.5r.7. adbhih samuddhrtābhis tu hīnābhih phenabudbudaih / vahninā ca na taptābhir akṣārābhir upaspṛṣet // iti // Sdhp.5r.8-9 (Par.) < Par.M.I.i.p.236 (na ca for ca na; Śanikh.); Sm.M.II.p.222 (taptābhir na for taptābhir; Śanikh.); Sm.C.II.p.253 (Śanikh.10.6; Yājā.I.20; Manu II.61; Gobh.gr.I.2.22-23.

52. višesam āha pracetāḥ // Sdhp.5r.9. rātrāv avīksitenāpi šuddhir uktā manīsinām / udakenāturānām ca tathosnenosnapāyinām // iti // Sdhp.5r.9-10 (Pracetas) (Sm.M.II.p.223 (Yama); Sm.C.II.p.254 (avīksitenaiva for avīksitenāpi; Yama)

Cleaning the teeth (dantadhāvanam; Sdhp.5v.1-9)

According to Sat.Br.X.5.2.11-12, the mouth is clammy in the morning because the two internal deities that live in the eyes (cf. section IIC, p.215 below) have been making love all night and shedding seed. Tryambaka merely remarks that, according to Atri, 'when the mouth is stale (i.e. after the night's sleep), men (narāḥ, superordinate) are always impure; one should therefore chew on (lit. 'eat') either a green (lit. 'moist') or a dry teeth-cleaning twig.'53 This is still the practice in villages today, and even in towns teeth-cleaning sticks are sold on busy railway stations. In terms of āhnika, it is an independent ritual act rendering the mouth (as opposed to the whole body) pure. It is therefore not simply a part (aṅga) of the morning bath (cf. Vīr.Ā.p.121).

In comparison with other smrti sections on teeth-cleaning twigs, Tryambaka's is brief. In Vis.Sm.61, for example, there are detailed rules concerning the types of twig that may or may not be used, varying from those of particular trees (cf. Br.Sam.85) to those with particular qualities (sweet, sour, withered, perforated, smelly, smooth and so on). Even more surprising is Tryambaka's omission of the gender specific rules concerning the appropriate length of a teeth-cleaning twig. According to Vis.Sm.61.16, the twig should be as thick as one's little finger and twelve angulas long. The Smrticandrikā, however, quotes Garga to prove that the length of the twig should vary according to one's āśrama and gender: ten angulas for a brahmin, nine for a kṣatriya, eight for a vaiśya, seven for a śūdra, and four for a woman (Sm.C.II.p.278). If one takes this to be the usual diminishing scale of ritual purity, then even high-caste women are now not equal to but inferior to the śūdra male. Perhaps Tryambaka did not wish to go that far.

For an alternative to the teeth-cleaning twig, Tryambaka turns to the *Smrtyarthasāra*. 'One may clean one's teeth with one's fingers but one should avoid using the index finger; strong teeth

^{53.} atha dantadhāvanam // Sdhp.5v.l. tatrātriḥ // mukhe paryuṣite nityaṃ bhavanty aprayatā narāḥ / tad ārdrakāṣṭhaṃ śuṣkaṃ vā bhakṣayed dantadhāvanam // Sdhp.5v.l-2 (Atri) < Par.M.l.i.p.252 (bhavaty aprayata naraḥ for bhavanty aprayatā narāḥ; Atri); Sm.M.II.p.240 (as Par.M.; °dhāvane for °dhāvanam; Atri); LaghuŚāt.74 (as Par.M.; tasmāt sarvaprayatnena for tad ārdrakāṣṭhaṃ śuṣkaṃ vā); Śm.C.II.p.276 (Śāt.; as LaghuŚāt).

are formed by using the middle finger, the fourth (or ring-) finger, or the thumb.' 54 The arbitrary nature of this ruling becomes evident when it is compared with similar pronouncements in the *Smṛti-candrikā*. The latter explains, for example, both that one may not use one's fingers except the thumb and fourth finger; and that one may use grass, leaves, water or one's fingers, but not the fourth finger (Sm.C.II.p.272 ff.).

The days on which one should not clean one's teeth (varjadivasā[h]) are listed in a śloka that Tryambaka attributes to Viṣṇu. 'One should avoid cleaning one's teeth on a day when offerings are made to the dead, on one's birthday, on the day of a marriage, when one is suffering from indigestion (ajīrṇa), when one is observing a vow (vrate), and on a fast day.'55 Since these rulings concern matters of ritual rather than bodily purity, we may assume that on the days mentioned, although the stale taste of morning may persist in the mouth, it will not render one ritually impure.

Tryambaka explains that 'since the above prohibition on teeth-cleaning on a fast day applies (as it stands; i.e. assuming the *ūha* of gender) to women as well as to men, Manu adds a modifying rule for women.'56 It runs as follows. 'None of these are polluting to women on a fast day: flowers, ornaments, clothes, perfume, ointment, cleaning the teeth and collyrium (for the eyes).'57 The implication is that a man undergoing a fast is polluted by these things. However, according to Tryambaka's next quotation, attributed to Viṣnu, this modification is itself modified if a woman's husband is away (prositabhartrkānam viśeṣam): the prohibition

^{54.} smṛṭyarthasāre // angulyā dhāvayed dantān varjayet tu pradeśinīm / madhyamānāmikānguṣṭhair dantadārdhyam bhavaty api // Sdhp.5v.3-4 (Sm.A.) Sm.A.p.25 (tṛṇaparṇodakenāngulyā vā dantān dhāvayet pradeśinī varjyam . . .); Sm.M.II.p.244 (dantadhāvo for dantadārdhyam; Sm.A.).

^{55.} varjadivasān āha viṣnuḥ // Sdhp.5v.4. śrāddhe janmadine caiva vivāhe 'Jīrṇadoṣataḥ / vrate caivopavāse ca varjayed dantadhāvanam // iti // Sdhp.5v. 4-5 (Viṣṇu) < Sm.C.II.p.277 ('Jīrṇadūṣitaḥ for 'Jīrṇadoṣataḥ; prete for vrate; Yama); Sm.M.II.p.243 ('dūṣitaḥ for 'doṣataḥ; Sm.C.).

^{56.} anena vacanena upavāse purusānām iva dantadhāvananisedhe prāpte strīnām višesam āha manuh // Sdhp.5-6.

^{57.} puspālankāravastrāni tathā dhūpānulepanam / upavāse na dusyanti dantadhāvanam añjanam // iti // Sdhp.5v.6-7 (Manu) < Nirn.I.p.20 (Manu); Sm.M.II.p.244 (strīyā for tathā; °dhāvanavarjanam for 'dhāvanam añjanam; Manu).

on teeth-cleaning is reapplied (cf. section IV, p. 291). Thus, 'if her husband is away, a woman should not eat on a day when offerings are made to the dead, or on the day of a sacrifice, or when she is observing a vow (niyame); and in this context "she should not eat" means "she should not clean her teeth." '58 The gloss derives from the fact that the twig is chewed at one end to form a brush with which the teeth are cleaned.

This issue of teeth-cleaning, never clearly spelled out, seems to involve three quite distinct aspects, each relevant at the appropriate time and to the appropriate individual. First, as mentioned above, it is an independent ritual act to make the mouth pure after the night's sleep. If this is not done, one remains ritually impure, and thus unable to participate in the ritual aspects of the coming day. In the case of women, the matter is somewhat confused by the well-known saying that a woman's mouth is always pure (Manu V.130). However, as I explain in section III in relation to Tryambaka's discussion of the unique purity of women, this means merely that a woman's mouth is always pure for her husband to kiss. If this were not so, he would too easily render himself impure. But this is a special case. It is not designed to excuse women from the ritual act of cleaning their teeth in the early morning. We may also note in passing that the saying arose because of the general assumption that women are a priori impure; hence the need to make an exception for the intimate relations of husband and wife. There is no equivalent assumption concerning the impurity of men and therefore no need for a parallel statement that a man's mouth is always pure for his wife to kiss.

Secondly, cleaning the teeth is a sensual pleasure. The Vedic student, for example, is enjoined to avoid such pleasures as sleeping on a bed, cleaning his teeth, bathing for pleasure, applying collyrium to his eyes or ointments to his body, wearing shoes or carrying a parasol (Vas.VII.15). Gautama too specifies both bathing and cleaning the teeth among the pleasures to be avoided by the Vedic

^{58.} prositabhartṛkāṇāṃ viseṣam āha viṣṇuḥ // Sdhp.5v.7. śrāddhe yajāe ca niyame nādyāt proṣitabhartṛkā / nādyāt dantadhāvanaṃ na kuryād ity arthaḥ // iti // Sdhp.5v.8 (Viṣṇu) < Sm.M.p.244 (first half-śloka only; Mādhavīya); Par.M.I.i.p.253 (first half-śloka only; niyamān for niyame; Vyāsa); Sm.C.II.p.277 (first half-śloka only; patyau ca proṣite tathā for nādyāt proṣitabhartṛkā; Vyāsa).

student; the others include honey, meat, perfumes, garlands, sleeping in the daytime, playing musical instruments, dancing and singing (I.2.19). Haradatta glosses snānam as 'bathing for pleasure' (sukhārtham usnatoyādinā kanthād adhah praksālanam); dantadhāvanam as 'removing dirt from the teeth' (dantamalāpakarsanam). Both are described as bodily rather than ritual acts, performed for obvious (drsta) not otherworldly (adrsta) reasons. Ap.I.2.7.11 declares simply that the Vedic student should be dusty (rajasvalo malinagātrah, Ujj.); and that he should have dirty teeth (raktadan, 'having red or discoloured teeth', a Vedic form, glossed by Ujj. as pakvadanta[h], 'decaying teeth'). Even after the student has completed his Vedic studies, he may not indulge in such sensual pleasures in his teacher's presence. Thus if his teacher visits him or if he visits his teacher, he may not wear garlands, oil his hair, wear a turban or shoes and so on, or clean his teeth until he is once more out of his teacher's sight (Ap.I.2.8.1-5). Clearly, this is the context in which to understand the prohibitions on teeth-cleaning given by Tryambaka. On a śrāddha day, on a day when one is observing a vow or fast (in the case of men), one should not indulge in the sensual pleasure of cleaning the teeth.

But this does not explain why the rule for fasting should supersede the usual āhnika rule for teeth-cleaning only with respect to men. The ruling makes sense, however, if we allow a third aspect to the issue of teeth-cleaning: that of making oneself attractive, an aspect that seems to be applied more regularly to women than to men. Since women are expected to make themselves attractive as long as their husbands are around, the rule for fasting is waived in their case. But as soon as their husbands go away, the wife need (indeed, should) no longer make herself attractive: the rule for fasting is reimposed and therefore she should not clean her teeth (see section IV, p. 291). We may also note that cleaning the teeth is one of the many activities to be avoided by the menstruating woman until after her ritual bath on the fourth day (see section IV, pp. 286-7). Since a man is not supposed to have sexual intercourse with his wife at this time, it makes sense that she should not make herself attractive to him; indeed, as Tryambaka explains in his section on general behaviour, the menstruating woman should keep her mouth hidden from her husband in order to discourage him polluting himself (Sdhp.23v.3-4 Sk.P.III.2.7.26b-27a; section IV, pp. 273-4).

However, there are two further contradictions here. First, in his list of things to be avoided (varjanīyāḥ), Tryambaka rules that austerities (tapas) are not to be observed by women (section IV, p. 275, note 7); yet fasting is clearly a form of tapas. Secondly, according to Tryambaka (and Manu), marriage is for women the equivalent of upanayana for men, and serving her husband the equivalent of serving one's teacher (section I, p.35, notes 15, 16), Yet the behaviour required of the Vedic student is specifically not applied to the married woman except when her husband is away or dead. In fact, only the woman whose husband is away, and the widow, are actually expected to adopt the behaviour and lifestyle of the Vedic student (section IV, pp. 291, 299–300). While the analogy remains an uplifting one, therefore, in practice the wife's service to her husband is equivalent to the student's service to his teacher only when the husband-teacher is no longer there.

Finally, the rule that one who suffers from indigestion (ajīrņa; see note 55) should also not clean his teeth suggests that there is a fourth or āyurvedic aspect to the matter. Other remedies include sleeping in the daytime, and pills or stomach rubs made of pepper, asafoetida and so on (Jolly 1901:77).

The ritual bath (snānam; Sdhp.6v.5-7r.3)

After a brief section on looking after cows (gosevanam; see above, pp. 65-9), Tryambaka proceeds to enumerate the various rulings concerning the pre-dawn ritual bath.⁵⁹ Before dealing with these, it is necessary to comment briefly on ritual bathing in general.

First, the bath required for cleansing purposes is called 'dirtremoving' (malakarṣaṇa) and is another issue altogether (Sm.C.II. p.290). This is the bath performed 'for pleasure' that is forbidden to the Vedic student (Har. on Gaut.I.2.19; Āp.I.2.7.11; Vas.VII.15). Secondly, the ritual bath is of three kinds: nitya (obligatory, i.e. every day); naimittika (on particular occasions); and kāmya (if one desires particular rewards; cf. Dakṣa II.48; Sm.C.II.p.291). Tryambaka is concerned primarily with nityasnāna, the daily bath obligatory to all varṇas (cf. Baudh.II.4.3b; Sm.A.p.26; Sm.C.II. pp. 291 ff.; only briefly with naimittikasnāna; and not at all with kāmyasnāna.

The number of obligatory (nitya) baths prescribed for a man varies according to his āśrama: one for the Vedic student, two for

householders, two or three for forest hermits, and three for the renunciate (cf. Yājñ.I.95,100, III.48; Manu VI.6, 22; Sm.C.II. p.483; Sm.A.p.26, etc.). If one bathes only once, it must be shortly before dawn; if twice, before dawn and at midday; if three times, before dawn, at midday and shortly before sunset. When we look at the āhnika duties set out by Tryambaka for women, however, we see that the midday bath normally prescribed for their husbands is omitted. Since Tryambaka does not draw attention to it, it is not clear whether the omission is significant or not. However, we may also note that, since there is no distinction according to varna, women cannot here be grouped together with sūdras. By default, therefore, they are now classed with the least advanced āśrama for men, that of the (temporary, not perpetual) Vedic student. This recalls, perhaps unintentionally, the claim that marriage for a woman is equivalent to Vedic studentship for a man (Manu II.67; see section I, notes 15,16). If the omission is significant, then this is one of the few aspects of the lifestyle of the Vedic student that the married woman adopts.

Tryambaka's first point, attributed to Visnu, is that 'for brahmins, kṣatriyas and vaiśyas, the (ritual) bath must be performed with mantras; for śūdras and women—O son of the Kurus—it is silent (i.e. without mantras). According to Baudhāyana, 'bathing in the sense of total immersion (in water) is enjoined as fulfilling all desires; while sprinkling (the body) with water while reciting mantras is restricted to the twice-born. In this is the logical consequence of the exclusion of women from Vedic studentship. Despite the compensatory 'initiation' of marriage, women are classed in ritual terms with the uninitiated. Hence their ritual bath is 'silent': the recitation of mantras is forbidden.

Tryambaka's second point is that 'a woman should not bathe naked.'62 According to Vyāsa, 'a woman should never be alone, nor

^{60.} tatra viṣṇuḥ// brahmakṣatravišām caiva mantravat snānam iṣyate/
tūṣṇīm eva hi śūdrasya strīṇām ca kurunandana // iti// Sdhp.6v.5-6 (Viṣṇu)
< Sm.C.II.p.484 (under mādhyaṃdinasnānam; Viṣṇu); Par.I.i.p.271 (Viṣṇu).
Cf. Sm.A.p.26.

^{61.} bodhāyano 'pi // apovagāhanam snānam vihitam sārvakāmikam / mantravat prokṣaṇam cāpi dvijātīnām višiṣyate // iti // Sdhp.6v.6-7 (Baudh.) < Baudh.II.4.3b (sārvavarnikām for sārvakāmikam).

^{62.} nagnāyā snānam nisiddham // Sdhp.6v.7-8.

should she ever bathe naked.'63 This quotation is also included in a longer passage attributed to the Skandapurāna in the section on general behaviour (Sdhp.23v.7, section IV, pp. 273-4). The first point recalls Manu's remark that a woman should never be independent but always supervised by a man whether father, husband or son (Manu IX.3, V.147-8; Gaut.II.9.1; cf. section IV, p. 276, note 9). It also recalls the warnings that even a learned man should not spend time with a woman alone (e.g. Manu II.213-15). The implication is that a woman alone will either get up to mischief or come to harm. This kind of ruling derives from the view that women are inherently unfaithful, promiscuous and weak-willed, a view that Tryambaka himself discusses (and supports, with qualifications) in his comments on the inherent nature of women (strīsvabhāva; see section III). The second point, that one should not bathe naked, is also applied to men; in this context, 'naked' (nagnah) is taken to mean a man wearing only one garment (i.e. a loin-cloth) instead of two (e.g. Kull. on Manu IV.45; Nand. on Vis.Sm.64.5; Gaut.I.9.60-1, etc.).

The Smṛtyarthasāra provides Tryambaka with a further rule specific to women. 'Whenever a man is required to bathe "with his clothes on" (sacelam; i.e. as opposed to with just his lower garment), a woman whose husband is living (suvāsinī) should not bathe her head; similarly, if one has a headache or matted hair (one should also not bathe the head).'64 Curiously, according to āyurveda, while one of the causes of a headache is drinking too much water, one of the treatments is immersing the head in cold (though never hot) water, the opposite of what is stated here (Jolly 1901:118).

Suvāsinī means literally 'a woman with fine clothes'. But a word or phrase may have three meanings or functions (vrtti). According to the primary or literal function (abhidhā or, for the mīmāmsaka, śakti; Nyāyakośa p.854), the statement 'the cowherd's house is on the Ganges' (gangāyām ghoṣah) means that it is magically perched upon the water. According to the secondary or indirect

^{63.} tathā ca vyāsaḥ // naikākinī kvacid bhūyān na nagnā snāti vai kvacit // iti // Sdhp.6v.8 (Vyāsa) (Sk.P.III.2.7.30b (ca for vai). See also Sdhp.23v.7 (Skānda); section IV, pp. 273-4.

^{64.} smṛtyarthasāre viseṣa uktaḥ // Sdhp.6v.9. yatra pumsaḥ sacelam syāt snānam tatra suvāsinī / kurvītaivāśiraḥsnānam śirorogī jatī tatha // Sdhp.6v. 9-10 (Sm.A.) < Sm.A.p.32 (sacailam for sacelam; kurvatī vā for kurvītaivā°, latter given as variant).

function (lakṣaṇā), it is on the bank of the river (gaṅgātīre ghoṣaḥ; Mīmāmsākośa VI.pp. 3340 ff.). According to the third or suggested function (vyanjanā), it is in a cool and sacred place. Lakṣaṇā may also be of two types: that in which the context gives the meaning, as in the example of the cowherd's house; and nirūdhalakṣaṇā, in which the indirect meaning is now the established one regardless of the context. Suvāsinī is in this last category. A widow is not permitted to wear fine clothes (section IV, pp. 299-300); a welldressed woman therefore cannot be a widow. So engrained are these ideas that the term no longer refers to a woman's clothes at all but solely and directly to her marital state. Similarly, the literal meanings of subhagā and durbhagā ('fortunate woman' and 'unfortunate woman'; see section IIA, pp. 55-6), have given place completely to the established meanings (nirūdhalakṣaṇā) of 'woman whose husband is living' and 'widow'. For a woman's good fortune is judged and marked by the survival of her husband. The masculine equivalents of these terms, on the other hand, have no such established meanings; they refer in fact to a man's clothes and his fortune.

As for the reference to washing the head, the widow may well have had her head shaved (an issue that Tryambaka considers in section IV, pp. 303–4). The suvāsinī, by contrast, would have a full head of hair, the washing of which would presumably be too time-consuming on a purely ritual occasion. The special occasions on which a man is obliged to bathe 'with his clothes on' (i.e. naimittikasnānam) are without exception due to inauspicious and therefore polluting causes: if he has touched an outcaste, a cāndāta, a woman who is menstruating or has recently given birth, a corpse and so on (cf. Gaut.II.5.28–30; Manu V.85, 103; Mit. on Yājñ.III.30; Sm.C.I. p.118). Vas.IV.38 specifies that he should submerge both his body and his head. Hence the modifying rule for the married woman, whose hair is invariably long; for the ascetic with long matted hair; and for one suffering from a headache.

Tryambaka's last point in this sub-section explains that 'this bathing should be done in rivers and so on.'65 In a quotation attributed to the *Harivaṃśa*, Umā explains to Arundhatī. 'The flowing water of a river is recommended (for bathing), O daughter of Soma; and bathing in a clean tank or pond that is both large and full of fish (or lotuses) is also recommended; but always in daylight. But if this is not possible, if a woman is confined (to the

house; for example, when she is pregnant), then she should bathe from an earthenware pot; and she may use the water of nine pots. This is the ancient law.'66 In his comments on pregnancy, Tryambaka adds that a pregnant woman should take her bath with warm water (kosnena vārinā; Sdhp.40 r.10-40 v.1, section IV, pp.288-91).

The directive that one should as far as possible bathe in fresh water is frequently given: that is, in rivers, ponds, lakes, waterholes, springs, waterfalls and temple tanks 'dug by the gods' (cf. Manu IV.203; Vis.Sm.64.16-17). What is not recommended is bathing in water belonging to someone else, such as a well or a reservoir built by him, for in doing so one partakes of that man's sin (cf. Manu IV.201-2; Vis.Sm.64.1; Yājñ.I.159). If one is unable to bathe in the right places, then, as Tryambaka explains, one may bathe in one's own courtyard or house using water from pots. According to Vis.Sm.64.17, however, the most effective water for ritual purposes is that of the Ganges (cf. also Ag.P.155.6); the least effective is that brought in pots.

About the details of the actual bath—the kind of earth to be used for washing, which clothes one may wear, at what point and in what manner one may enter the water, and so on—Tryambaka says nothing. Nor does he give any rulings concerning tarpana, the offering of water to the gods, rsis and ancestors, normally performed as a part (anga) of the ritual bath. All the many mantras prescribed for twice-born men are, of course, omitted. Tryambaka also fails to mention kāmyasnāna, the ritual bath performed in order to obtain specific rewards. But since this is most often performed when on a pilgrimage to a sacred tīrtha, and since Tryambaka discourages both men and women from going on such pilgrimages (see section IIB, pp. 134-7), this omission is not inconsistent. The prohibitions on bathing for the menstruating woman, and the obligation to bathe on the fourth day of her menstrual cycle, are dealt with in section IV, pp. 284-7.

With regard to the nakedness of women, but outside the specific context of bathing, we may note in passing that the term nagnikā has an interesting history. Several of the grhyasūtras recommend a nagnikā bride. The term is defined by Vaikh.6.12 as one between the ages of eight and ten (aṣṭavarṣād ā daśamān nagnikā). At the

66. tathā ca harivaṃśe // arundatīm praty umā // ·Sdhp.6v.10-7r.1. nadījalam prasravaṇam praśastaṃ somanandini / śubhe tatāke vāpy ādau vistīrṇe jalajāyute / gatvā snānam praśastaṃ tu divaiva khalu sarvadā // alābhe tv avaruddhā strī ghaṭasnānaṃ samācaret / navaiś ca kumbhaiḥ snātavyaṃ vidhir eṣa sanātanaḥ // iti // Sdhp.7r.1-3 (Hariv.) <? Not in Hariv. crit. edn. index.

time of the earlier grhyasūtras, however, the custom of marrying an adolescent girl was only just beginning to give way to that of child marriage. Thus Gobh.gr.III.4.3-6 makes a general statement about the gotra of the (presumably adolescent) bride, then adds as an afterthought that a nagnikā is best (nagnikā tu śresthā; v.6). Mān.gr.1.7.8 recommends successively a girl who has not yet experienced sexual intercourse (kanyām asprstamaithunām), who is younger than the groom (yavīyasīm), and a nagnikā. Astāvakra's commentary defines the latter term as 'one who has not yet developed female sexual characteristics' (aprāptastrībhāvām ayauvanarasām). The reference to sexual inexperience suggests that an adolescent bride was the accepted custom, and thus that the requirement of a nagnikā or pre-adolescent girl is an afterthought. If the latter were the rule, the former epithet would-one hopes-be unnecessary. Mātrdatta's commentary on what is almost certainly an incorrect reading of Hir.gr.I.19.2 clearly demonstrates this overlap in marriage customs. Faced with the apparent ruling that a man should marry a bride who is both a nagnikā and a brahmacāriņī (i.e. leading a celibate life), Mātrdatta seeks to evade the contradiction by defining the former as 'one who has begun to menstruate (nagnikām āsannārtavām) and who is therefore fit to throw aside her clothes (tasmād vastraviksepanārhā nagnikā), that is, fit for sexual intercourse (maithunarhety arthah).' This obviously contradicts the accepted definition of the term.

In fact, Hir.gr.1.19.2 should read anagnikā (Bhandarkar 1893: 151 ff.; Thieme 1971:174). Thieme discusses the implications of both terms. He divides the life of a woman into four stages: balya ('childhood'; i.e. until menstruation); kaumāra ('unmarried girlhood'; i.e. the three years or, according to some, three months following puberty, during which period a husband should be found); yauvana ('youth'; i.e. a woman's child-bearing years); and sthavira ('old age'; i.e. beyond child-bearing). Hence a woman should be protected by her father in her girlhood (kaumare), by her husband in her married life (yauvane), and by her son in her old age (sthavire; Vas. V.3; Manu IX.3 etc.). If she reaches the third stage and is still unmarried, she is no longer under her father's supervision: she may find her own husband (Manu IX.90; Vas.17.67-8; alternatively, Vis.Sm.24.40; see also the story of Savitri in section V). Nagnika and anagnikā belong to the first two stages. As the Grhasangraha (Gobhilaputra's appendix to the Gobhilagrhyasūtra) explains, a girl is called nagnikā as long as she has not started menstruating (yāvan na rtumatī bhavet; 'zu ergänzen: aber kurz davorsteht',

Thieme); she is called anagnikā when she has begun menstruating (rtumatī; 'zu ergänzen: aber erst seit kurzem', Thieme); one should therefore give one's daughter in marriage when she is anagnikā ('zu ergänzen: aber nicht schon eine prāptayauvanā', Thieme 1971:175; Grhasangraha 11.17). But as the age of marriage dropped from the teens to pre-teens—and even to the age of four (Br.P. 165.7) or five (Par.M.I.ii.p.77, Marīci)—the ideal of an anagnikā bride was replaced by that of a nagnikā.

The pattern of later texts is the same. The ideal bride is not physically mature and sexually inexperienced but physically immature; a child still young enough to run around 'naked'. According to Vas.XVII.70, for example, a father should give his daughter in marriage while she is still a nagnikā; if she remains at home after the onset of menstruation, he will incur the sin of a possible conception lost (cf. rtukāladharmāh, section IV, pp. 287-8). According to Gaut.II.9.21-3, a girl should be given in marriage before she reaches puberty (prāg rtoh); according to some, before she wears any clothes (prāg vāsasah pratipatter). According to Sm.C.I.p.213, a girl is called nagnikā as long as she does not cover her body out of embarrassment (yāvan na lajjayāngāni . . . avagūhet) when in the presence of men (puruṣasannidhau). Angāni ('limbs') is glossed as yonyādīny ('private parts, etc.'). Alternatively, she is nagnikā as long as she need not wear an (upper) garment (yāvac celam na grhņāti), or as long as she does not menstruate (yāvat rtudaršanam). When nakedness carries such associations, it is hardly surprising that a married woman, even when bathing, is not permitted to be naked.

Getting dressed (vastradhāranam; Sdhp.7r.3-9)

Tryambaka begins by quoting from the Matsyapurāna. 'After bathing in this way, one should perform the ritual of sipping according to the rule, and then, rising up (from the sitting position), one should put on clean white clothes (vāsasī śukle śuddhe).'67 Vāsasī, in the dual form, indicates both upper and lower garments. This, together with the requirement to wear white (śukle), clearly applies not to women but to men. For women, white is the colour of death,

67. tato vastradhāraṇam // Sdhp.7r.3. tatra matsyapurāṇe // evam snātvā tataḥ kuryād ācamya ca vidhānataḥ / utthāya vāsasī sukle suddhe tu paridhāya ca // iti // Sdhp.7r.4 (Matsy.P.) < Par.M.I.i.p.262 (paścād for kuryād; Matsy.P.); Sm.M.II.p.251 (as Par.M.; vai for ca; Matsy.P.); Sm.C.II.p.296 (as Par.M.; vidhivat punaḥ for ca vidhānataḥ; vai for ca; Matsy.P.).

worn by widows (Wood 1980:260; Rai and Singh 1983:84–5; Fuller and Logan 1985:89–92 etc.) and Jaina nuns (many of whom are also widows; Jaini 1979:246, note 8, 262–4, illus.27,28,30; but cf. Reynell 1985:86.4.2.iv). In his comments on widowhood, Tryambaka rules that the widow should not wear dyed garments (vikṛtam; glossed by Tryambaka as manjiṣṭādir anjitam, 'dyed with Indian madder, etc.'; Sdhp.46r.8) and then describes how the widowed daughters-in-law of Dhṛtarāṣtra wear 'white garments' (śuklottarīva, Sdhp.47[2]r.10 (Mbh.XV.32.15; see section IV, pp. 299–300). The Mitākṣarā, however, glosses 'white' (śukle) as 'washed' (dhaute; Mit.on Yājn.I.131).

With regard to men, although the householder is usually enjoined to wear white garments (e.g. Manu IV.35; Yājñ.I.131), the Smrticandrikā quotes Bhṛgu (acc. to the Mysore edn.; Garga acc. to Gharpure) to the effect that while a brahmin should wear white, a kṣatriya should wear red or bright garments, a vaiṣya yellow ones, and a śūdra dark blue or dirty ones (nīlaṃ malavat; Sm.C.II.p.298). Cloth died blue with indigo is invariably forbidden (e.g. Āp.Sm.VI. 4 ff.; Mit. on Yājñ.III.292; cf. Sdhp.20 v.10-21r.2). According to Uśanas, black is prohibited; according to Gautama, all dyed cloth is prohibited (Sm.C.II.p.298). But there are no recommendations concerning the colours that a woman should or should not wear.

Another significant difference between the rulings on dress for women and those for men is that only the latter refer to the sacred thread. For example, Āp.II.2.4.22-3 explains that the householder should always wear an upper garment (as well as a lower one); but if he is poor, he need only wear the sacred thread on his upper body. According to Vas.XII.14, the *snātaka* must wear both upper and lower garments and two sacred threads. The rulings for women as explained by Tryambaka make no mention of the sacred thread for the obvious reason that women are now excluded from the *upanayana*, and the 'initiation' of marriage does not really count.

Nor may we find any similarities between the rulings on dress for women and those recommended for the Vedic student (with whom married women are so often compared). For the emphasis in this context is on the material of which the garments are made. The lower garment of the brahmin student should be made of hemp, that of the ksatriya of flax, and that of the vaisya of wool, each dyed the appropriate colour. The upper garment should ideally consist of the skin of an animal: the black antelope, the spotted deer, and

the goat or cow respectively (e.g. Manu II.41; Vas.XI.64-7; Āp.I. 2.39-I.3.10). What the staff, girdle and thread should be made of in the case of each twice-born varna is also discussed (e.g. Manu II.42 ff.). Evidently, none of this is of any relevance to the women of Tryambaka's day.

Since Tryambaka's aim is to give general rules that are, in principle; applicable to both men and women, we must expect to gloss over the anomalies. His second quotation, from Uśanas, seems more straightforward. 'After taking one's bath, one should put on uncontaminated clothes (anupahatam vastram), according to the rule '68

The term anupahata (lit. 'undamaged') or, more commonly, ahata (lit. 'unbeaten') is interesting for, depending on the context, it may have a variety of related meanings. First, since clothes are 'beaten' in the Indian washing process, often with a stick, ahata may denote 'unbeaten' or 'unwashed' and therefore dirty clothes. Thus Devala remarks that, when performing rituals, a man should wear cloth he has washed himself (svayam dhautena), not that washed by a washerman (nejakadhautena), and certainly never cloth that is 'unwashed' (ahatena; Sm.C.II.p.299). The second meaning is both more usual and more appropriate to Tryambaka's ruling. According to this interpretation, ahata may mean 'unwashed' in the sense of being unused and therefore perfect. The Smrticandrikā gives two definitions along these lines. In the āhnika section, ahata is said to denote brand-new cloth (yantranirmuktam, straight from the loom; Sm.C.II.p.299, Satyatapas). Such cloth should be worn on ritual occasions by the sacrificer and his wife (e.g. Sab. on Jai.X.4.13); it is also appropriate for auspicious rituals such as marriage (Sm.C.II.p.299). Alternatively - in a quotation attributed to Pulastya in the āhnika section (Sm.C.II. p. 298) and to Pracetas in the upanayana section (Sm.C.I.p.76) the term denotes cloth that, although washed a little (īsaddhautam), is still new and white, with its fringes still intact (sadaśam), unworn, and therefore ritually pure (sarvakarmāsu pāvanam). In the upanayana section, however, the term is applied exclusively to the dress of the (male) brahmin initiate (suklam ahatam vāso brāhmanasya; Sm.C.I.p.75). When applied by Tryambaka to the daily dress of all orthodox women, it must presumably be under-

^{68.} uśanā snātvānupahatam vastram paridadhyād yathāvidhi // Sdhp.7r.5 (Uśanas) < Sm.M.p.252 (Uśanas).

stood more loosely to denote garments that are in perfect condition, perfectly clean, and therefore ritually pure.

A third possibility is that ahata denotes 'undamaged' cloth in the sense that it has never been 'cut' or 'stitched'; that is, the full woven length of the dhoti or sari as opposed to the cut cloth of the bodice or shirt. On these grounds, even today, men are required to remove their shirts before entering the inner sanctum of a temple. Similarly, in some south Indian temples even fifty or sixty years ago, women were required to enter without a blouse (Sanjukta Gupta: personal communication; cf. also Thapliyal 1979:59). This issue gains an added significance in the context of rulings related to whether or not a woman should wear a bodice (see below).

Tryambaka then gives the most important modifying rules (vastradhārane viśeṣam) relating to women. He quotes Śankha. '(A woman) should not show her navel; she should wear garments that extend to her ankles; and she should not expose her breasts.' ⁶⁹ In section IV, this quotation, again attributed to Śankha, is repeated together with the ruling that she should not go outside without an upper garment (nānuktā grhān nirgacchen nānuttarīya . . ; Sdhp. 22r.9–22v. 1; see p.273). In his comments on widowhood, however, Tryambaka insists that the widow should not wear a bodice (Sdhp. 46r.7–8, section IV, p.299). In this context, therefore, the bodice is one of the marks of the woman whose husband is alive.

A parallel to these rules on how a woman should wear her sari may be found in the rules concerning how a man should wear his dhoti. The latter should be tucked in at three points: near the navel, on the left side, and at the back. A brahmin who does this incorrectly is held to be a śūdra (Sm.M.II.p.351-3; Sm.C.II.p.300). However, both the purpose and the emphasis of the two sets of rules are quite different. A man is required to fold and tuck his garment in the 'right' way, presumably for otherworldly or 'unseen' (adrṣṭa) reasons; no mention is made of which parts of his body the garment is intended to conceal. But the rules for women give no guidance on how one should fold, wind and tuck the sari. This is especially surprising in view of the fact that there are a number of ways of

^{69.} vastradhārane višesam āha šankhaḥ // Sdhp.7r.5. na nābhim daršayed ā gulphād vāsaḥ paridadhyān na stanau vivṛtau kuryāt // iti // Sdhp.7r.5-6 (Sankh.) < Mit. on Yājn.I.87; Apar. on Yājn.I.83; Sm.C.III.p.585-6(gulphā-bhyām for gulphād). Not in the Śankh.Sm. See also Sdhp.22r.10-23v.1, p. 273.

wearing the sari and that in Maharashtra (and thus presumably in this Maratha kingdom) the sakaccha style was held to be a mark of the upper classes, the vikaccha of the lower ones (cf. Altekar 1978:289-91; plates IV,V,VII). The rules concerning a woman's dress merely enjoin which parts of her anatomy she may not reveal: her breasts, her navel and her legs down to the ankle. This is obviously another kind of ruling altogether.

The first point to stress is that the prohibition on showing the ankles can only apply to the wealthier class of woman who is not required to work outdoors. Any visitor to India today will notice that women working in the fields or in the coastal fishing villages wear their saris hoisted well above their ankles so as not to impede their work. In this context, Tryambaka's ruling is a mark of social distinction as well as decorum.

Is this also true of the ruling that a woman should not expose her breasts? *Dharmaśāstra* and *nibandha* literature are in agreement on this point: the breasts should be covered, either by a bodice or by the sari, or by an additional 'upper garment'. In the Gandhāra sculptures, certainly, the women appear fully covered. But how may we account for the many examples of bare-breasted women in the sculptures and paintings of southern and central India?

Is it a matter of caste or class? If (as seems to be the case in the prohibition on showing the ankles) dharmasāstra rulings apply only to the higher or wealthier varnas, then one would expect the semi-nude female figures to be of the lower orders such as maid-servants and dancing girls. But this is not so. In the paintings of Ajanta and the sculptures of Bharhut, for example, it is the court ladies and not the maid-servants who are without upper garments, even in public scenes.

It is important to disentangle several related questions here. First, what is the role of the artist (*śilpin*) in Indian society? Secondly, what is the relationship between the artist and the specialist in religious law (*dharmaśāstrin*)? Finally, what may we deduce about the dress of court women in eighteenth-century Thanjavur? In a study of this nature, my answers will of necessity be brief.⁷⁰

With regard to the first question, two artistic conventions seem to be operating at once. According to the realistic convention, the

^{70.} I am grateful to Dr T.S. Maxwell, among others, for discussing these issues with me.

artist portrays social dress and customs as he sees them around him. According to the supernatural convention, he presents mythological figures as conceived by the tradition he espouses. The line between these two conventions is not always clearly drawn. Cōļa bronzes, for example, tend to portray the dress of royalty of that period combined with traditional iconographic features (cf. Nagaswamy 1983:46-51, 165-70). Thus the ornaments, head-dress and lower garments worn by Pārvatī seem to reflect the former; the sacred thread presumably belongs to the latter (cf. Nagaswamy 1983:54, 144-5, 168; *The Image of Man* 1982:67; Ions 1967:92; Rowland 1970:328-9; etc.).

But to which convention does her naked upper body belong? We do not deduce from Manet's 'Le Déjeuner sur l'Herbe' either that it was the custom for high-class women to picnic naked amidst fully clothed men or that the lady in question is a courtesan. Do we need to assume from the paintings of Ajanta or the sculptures of Bharhut that women were in the habit of going around halfdressed? It is true that nudes in European art are usually restricted either to mythological characters (e.g. Venus, 'The Three Graces', 'The Judgement of Paris') or to private scenes of bathroom or bedroom (Clouet's 'Lady in the Bath', Manet's 'Olympia', Ingres' 'The Bather of Valpincon' and 'Odalisque with Slave'). Indeed, Manet's 'Le Déjeuner sur l'Herbe' caused an uproar when it was first shown, precisely because it depicted what was apparently a common public scene. It is perhaps surprising that there is no parallel condemnation of inappropriate semi-nudity in Sanskrit literature. But it has long been the custom in all Indian temple sculpture - Hindu, Buddhist and Jain - to use the half-naked and (according to Western standards of beauty) voluptuous female body as a decorative motif. In the realm of art, the female form is both exposed and extolled.

It is clear that the second question regarding the relationship between *dharmaśāstra* and art is crucial here. Where there were no specific dharmaśāstric guidelines, the artist presumably reproduced what he saw around him. If such guidelines existed, however, it seems unlikely that he would deliberately go against them. On these grounds, therefore, we may suppose that the many representations of women with naked breasts did not contravene the *dharma*-

śāstra rulings current at the time.

Judging by Tryambaka's statements, however, by the eighteenth

century, they did. How may we explain this? The question may be approached in two ways: with reference to the different social customs prevalent in north and south India; and in relation to

foreign, especially Muslim, influence.

The Ajanta paintings show royal women with naked breasts while female servants wear blouses or dresses. If it was customary for high-class women in the cooler north to wear upper garments and those in the hot south not to, then was Tryambaka simply ruling that the women of the Thanjavur court should adopt the northern rather than the southern habit? Certainly, if women were expected to enter south Indian temples without a blouse (see ahata above), this was evidently considered proper female attire. But the issue is by no means clear, Hāla's Saptaśataka, for example, describes southern women wearing bodices (kañcukī; IV.95, VII.20) or upper garments (dukūla; IV.69). The significance of the south Indian heat becomes evident in the Śāhendravilāsa where the women of Śāhajī's court are described as being torn between wearing bodices for modesty's sake and removing them to keep cool (VII.78–9, 83).

Perhaps the question of foreign influence is more relevant. The bodice (kañcuka, kūrpāsa(ka), colī) is listed among the 'foreign elements' in Thapliyal's book on the subject and she notes that upper class women were especially influenced by foreign fashions (1979:64-6). In particular, the importance of Muslim influence must be explored. For it is indisputable that as Muslim power and culture descended from the north of India, Islamic ideals of female modesty spread, especially among the ruling classes. Not surprisingly, the sculptures of Bharhut (Śuṅga period, 185-72 B.C.), Sanchi (Śuṅga, early Andhra, later Andhra, 185 B.C.-A.D. 320), Amaravati (especially later Andhra, 25 B.C.-A.D. 320) and Ellora (fifth to eighth centuries A.D.), and the paintings of Ajanta (first century B.C.-seventh century A.D.; Rowland 1970), long precede the invasion of Islam into the Deccan (A.D.1296) and its further descent into southern India (1310; see Leslie 1983(2): appendix B).

It is more difficult to pinpoint the relative chronology of the Sankha ruling. Kane assigns the core of the Sankhadharmasūtra to the period 300 B.C. – A.D. 100 (PVK I.i.p.142), but this is not to say that the quotation given here is part of that early compilation. The question of chronology is especially difficult in relation to a text (or texts) known only from quotations. If we look at the works in which this particular ruling is cited, however, we may note that

all three predate the Muslim invasions of the south by at least a hundred years: the Mitākṣarā, 1100–1120 (PVK I.ii. §71; 1120–5, Derrett 1973(I):50); Aparārka's commentary, 1125, Northern Konkaṇa (PVK I.ii. § 80; 1115–30, Derrett 1973(I):50); and the Smṛticandrikā, the great authority in the south, 1150–1225 (PVK I.ii. §86).

But, whatever the relationship between female attire in the largely autonomous court of Thanjavur in the early eighteenth century and Islamic ideals, we may be sure that Tryambaka was a product of his time. Another product of the period is a collection of illustrations entitled Drawings of the Costumes of the Southern Peninsula of India by a Native of Tanjore, compiled in 1815 and depicting a man and a woman in each of several categories (David 1815). This shows that women of high status wore bodices (e.g. 'Rajapoot ... Rajawar ... Kharkana brahmin ... Mogul ... priestess' etc.). A mid-way category shows women without bodices but covering their breasts with the loose end of the sari often worn in the sakaccha style (e.g. 'oilmonger . . . brahmin? . . . Sathare . . . a kind of brahmin . . . Vishnu brahmin' etc.). Finally, women of low status leave the breasts uncovered altogether ('shoemaker . . . well-digger . . . conjurer . . . marava . . . washerman . . . weaver' etc.). Tryambaka is surely making a similar point.

He also rules that '(a woman) should not dress herself and so on while her husband is watching.'71 The following two ślokas are attributed to Vyāsa. 'If her beloved (husband) is watching, she should neither anoint (her head) with oil, bathe, massage unguents (e.g. sandalwood paste; see plate 2) into her body, clean her teeth, arrange her hair, eat, vomit, sleep, dress, nor beautify herself in any way (prārambham maṇḍaṇānām).'72 The phrase prārambham maṇḍaṇānām covers clothes, ornaments, oils and so on. The last śloka is quoted again when Tryambaka deals with the proper behaviour of the wife when she is eating (see section IIC, p. 226, note 116). There is no parallel ruling that a man should not dress himself in the presence

paśyati priye // iti // Sdhp.7r.7-9 (Vyāsa) < Sm.M.I.p.157 (Vyāsa). Cf. section.II.C, p.226, note 116.

^{71.} vastradhāranādikam pašyati patyau na kartavyam // Sdhp.7r.6-7.
72. tathā ca vyāsaḥ // tailābhyangam tathā snānam śarīrodvartanakriyām /
mārjanam caiva dantānām alakānām prasādhanam // bhojanam vamanam
nidrām paridhānam ca vāsasām / prārambham maṇdanānām ca na kuryāt

of his wife; nor even a general rule that might be applied to both husband and wife.

Wearing the tilaka mark (tilakadhāraṇam; Sdhp.7r.9-7 v.9)
Tryambaka's next concern is to show that putting the auspicious tilaka mark on the forehead is a necessary part of the wife's toilette (plate 5). In doing so, he lists all the other things that indicate that a woman's husband is still alive; a description, in fact, of the suvāsinī (see pp. 84-5). The two ślokas, attributed here to Mārkaṇḍeya, are also to be found in Tryambaka's encyclopaedic commentary on the Rāmāyaṇa, the Dharmākūta; they are attributed there to Vyāsa and are part of a lengthy comment on the tilaka metaphor given below. The same two ślokas are attributed to Aśvalāyana in the section on general behaviour (Sdhp.22v.5-7; see section IV, pp. 273-4); and to the Skandapurāṇa as quoted in the Madanaratna in Sdhp.41r.5-7 (in an altered form to apply to the pregnant woman; see section IV, pp. 288-91). They read as follows.

'The devoted wife (pativratā) who wishes her husband to live long should not neglect (dūṣaye[t]; lit. 'cause to be polluted') these things: haridrā (i.e. haldi, yellow turmeric powder; put between the eyebrows and used as an unguent); collyrium (or lamp-black, for the eyes; plate 3); kunkuma (saffron or a reddish paste; to make the tilaka mark on the forehead; also used as an unguent); sindūra (saffron or a red powder; to mark the parting of the hair); the short-sleeved bodice; betel (to make the lips red and the breath fresh; a late idea, cf. PVK II.ii.p.734; cf. also Kām.I.4.16); the auspicious ornament (of marriage, mangalyābharanam; i.e. the mangalasūtra); and the adorning of ears, hands and carefully styled hair (i.e. with ornaments, flowers and so on; plate 4).'73

^{73.} tāsām tilakadhāraḥam āha mārkaṇdeyaḥ // Sdhp.7r.9. haridrām kajjalam caiva sindūram kunkumam tathā / kūrpāsakam ca tāmbūlam mangalyābharaṇam subham // keśasamskārakabarīkarakarṇavibhūṣaṇam / bhartur
āyuṣyam icchantī dūṣayen na pativratā // iti // Sdhp.7r.9-7v.1 (Mārk.) <
Sk.P.III.2.7.28-9 (kunkumam for kajjalam; kajjalam for kunkumam;
keśasaṃskārakam caiva karakarṇādibhūṣaṇam); Dharmāk.III.p.93, lines
17-19 (Vyāsa); Sm.M.I.p.157 (kunkumam for kajjalam; kajjalam for kunkumam; °kanṭha° for °karṇa°; Vyāsa). See also section IV, pp. 273-4
(Sdhp.22v.5-7; haridrākajjalam for haridrām kajjālam; Āsv.); section IV,
pp. 288-9 (Sdhp.41r.5-8; dūrayed garbhinī na hi for dūṣayen na pativratā;
madanaratne skānde).

Haridrā is the yellow substance with which deities are smeared, especially Ganeśa as Haridrāganapati. It is believed to be a mark of good fortune, one that could ward off demons (Stutley 1977:110). It is also one of the signs that a woman is (once more) available to her husband for, as Tryambaka himself explains (section IV, pp. 286-7), she should anoint her body with unguents of haridra and kunkuma after she has taken her ritual bath on the fourth day of menstruation. Collyrium, obtained by inverting a small earthenware dish over a sooty flame, is applied to the inner eyelid to outline the eyes and exaggerate their length. Since it makes a woman attractive, it is prohibited to the menstruating woman (section IV. pp.284-5), the woman whose husband is away (p.291), and the widow (pp.299-300). According to Meulenbeld (1974:438), two different substances are used: one for medicinal, the other for cosmetic purposes. Saffron was used originally for both kunkuma and sindura, that is, for both the tilaka mark on the forehead and the red line in the hair parting; but nowadays a less expensive red powder or paste is used. The tilaka is usually a round dot, although this may vary according to family or caste tradition: the women of Vai in Maharashtra, for example, wear the tilaka as a horizontal red line. The sindura is more commonly associated with north Indian women and is rarely found in Tamil Nadu today (cf. Fuller and Logan 1985:90). Both tilaka and sindūra indicate that a woman is married and her husband lives. For example, a Khajuraho inscription dated A.D. 953 describes how enemies were killed and their wives thereby deprived of the use of sindura (cf. Altekar 1978:301).

As mentioned above (p.90), the short-sleeved bodice, worn under the sari by married women, is traditionally not worn by the widow (see section IV, p. 299). Betel, ornaments and flowers make a woman attractive: like collyrium, they should be avoided by the menstruating woman, the woman whose husband is away, and the widow (see section IV, pp. 284-5, 291, 299-300). Complicated hair-styles (e.g. Altekar 1978: plates VIII-XI; Nagaswamy 1983:46-51,158,165-70) are also prohibited to the widow either because her head is shaved, or her hair close-cropped, or alternatively because she must wear it in a simple bun (see section IV, pp. 299-300, 303-4). The menstruating woman, on the other hand, should not comb her hair (see p. 284).

The mangalasūtra, the auspicious thread on which beads (usually black or gold) are strung, is fastened around the neck of the bride by the groom during the marriage ceremony (cf. PVK II.i.537). Chapter XV of the Laghvāśvalāyanasmrti describes the sacrament of marriage in detail and provides the earliest reference to the marriage thread (māngalyatantu, v.33; Dh.kośa III.iii.p.2048). Mantras are recited to ensure the wife's fidelity to her husband and Gaurī bestows saubhāgya on the bride. Saubhāgya originally and literally meant 'good fortune' or 'prosperity', but it came to have as its established meaning (virūdhalaksanā) the good fortune of the happily married woman whose husband is alive. The prefix sau, with which the married woman is addressed, stands for saubhāgyavatī, meaning 'fortunate woman' (i.e. by virtue of her marriage; Baudh.gr.I.6.30). The mangalasūtra, the tilaka, and the red line of sindura in the hair, are all indispensable signs of the married woman whose husband is alive; as long as he lives, they must be worn.

Both the famous tilaka metaphor from the Rāmāyana and Tryambaka's comment on it are taken from his own work. As he himself explains, 'that is why (wearing the tilaka is specified) in the Dharmākūta (commentary) written by me on the Rāmāyana.'74 He begins by quoting Rām. III.8. 'When the sun resolutely remains in the direction frequented by Death (Yama; thus the south), then the northern direction like a woman without her tilaka does not shine.'75 The Dharmākūta explains. 'The lady, in the form of the northern direction, whose husband—husband of the directions, jewel of the day (the sun)—has gone to the south (has died) is described as not wearing the tilaka. Therefore the lack of tilaka and so on is the defining mark of the widow (vidhavāyā lakṣaṇam). (Correspondingly), wearing the tilaka and so on is the defining mark of the woman whose husband is alive (suvāsinīnām lakṣaṇam).'76 The image is drawn from the division of

^{74.} ata eväsmatkṛtarāmāyaṇadharmākute // Sdhp.7v.1-5.

^{75.} sevamāne drdham sūrye dišam antakasevitām / vihīnatilakeva strī nottarā dik prakāšate // Sdhp.7v.1-2 (Dharmāk.) < Rām.III.8; Dharmāk. III.p.93, lines 9-10 (v.8).

^{76.} atra dinnāyakasya dinamaņer antakadešagamanaprayuktatayā[/] uttaradigrūpāyā nāyikāyā vihīnatilakatvapratipādanena tilakādyabhāvo vidhavāyā lakṣaṇam / tilakādimattvaṃ suvāsinīnāṃ lakṣaṇam iti sūcitam // Sdhp.7v. 3-5 (Dharmāk.) < Dharmāk.III.p.93, lines 11-13 (pratyuktatayā for prayuktatayā).

the year into two parts: daksināyana, when the sun 'abides in' (or, more accurately, when the ecliptic tends towards) the south, during which time the days become shorter and the nights longer; and the uttarāyana, when the sun 'abides in' the north and the days become longer once more. In daksināyana, the sun sets in a more southerly direction, leaving the northern sky dark. At such times, the northern direction, bereft of the sun's rays, does not 'shine'. Similarly, a wife whose husband has died is bereft of the tilaka mark that radiates her good fortune and so she too, as it were, no longer shines.

In order to put these rulings concerning the tilaka for women into perspective, let us consider the equivalent rulings for men. In the Vīramitrodaya (Vīr.A.p.248-52) and in the Smrtimuktāphala (Sm.M.II,p.292-310), for example, elaborate rules are laid down for the marks to be made on a man's forehead after his bath Whether called tilaka or pundra(ka), these are evidently sectarian marks intended to indicate the religious persuasion of the wearer. The ūrdhvapundra or ūrdhvatilaka (a vertical mark of one or more lines) indicates the follower of Visnu; the tripundra (three horizontal lines) that of Siva. According to the Smrticandrikā, the ūrdhvapundra may be made with earth taken from a selection of sacred spots such as the top of a mountain or the bank of a sacred river. There are rulings on how the mark should be made (with which fingers, etc.), what it should look like, and on which twelve parts of the body it should be placed (on the forehead, chest, throat, arms, etc.; Sm. C.II.pp.302 ff.; Vrddhahārītasmrti II.58-72). Sankh.gr.II.10.6 gives the five parts of the body that should be marked with the tripundra in sacred ash. Elsewhere, we read that the ūrdhvapundra is made with earth after one's bath; the tripundra with sacred ash after performing homa; the (circular) tilaka in sandalwood paste after worshipping the gods (devapūjā; PVK II.i.p.673). There are even rulings on the size and shape of the tilaka or pundra according to a man's varna: like a bamboo leaf for a brahmin; like a fish for a kṣatriya: smaller still for a vaiśya; and like a half-moon for a sūdra (Vīramitrodaya on Yājñ.I.20-21; Gharpure 1936).

Tryambaka's section on the tilaka for women explains none of this. The sectarian marks so important to men are deemed irrelevant to their wives. In the next quotation from Vasistha (see below), there is a brief reference to the pundraka or sectarian mark; but that is all. The remaining references to the tilaka have no relation

to either Viṣṇu or Śiva. The mark is made with neither sacred earth, sacred ash, nor sandalwood paste, but with kunkuma, the sign of a woman's marital happiness or saubhāgya. For the tilaka is the visible symbol of a woman's religious allegiance as distinct from that of men. It declares first that her husband is her deity; secondly, that he is still alive to receive her daily service and worship. As we have seen, the bulk of the rulings on a woman's appearance carry the same message: her husband lives; all religious devotion must be directed to him alone. A man without his sectarian mark is a man without a god; a woman without her tilaka is one whose god is dead.

The next four ślokas are also taken from the Dharmākūta; in both texts, they are attributed to the Vasiṣṭhasamhitā. 'The short bodice (kancukī), the marriage necklace (kanṭhasūtram), a pair of earrings, collyrium, glass bangles, anointing with turmeric (haridrā) and putting the sectarian mark (pundraka) on the forehead, arranging the hair, wearing ornaments on one's feet and nose, betel and so on—all these are declared to be the marks of women who have been blessed with good fortune (punyayoṣitām; i.e. they are not widows). If a woman wears glass ornaments at wrist and throat, her behaviour is meritorious; and her cooking is said to be pure.'77 'If she does not wear glass ornaments at wrist and throat, she is understood to be a widow (i.e. in this life) and (she will also become a widow) in life after life.'78

Glass bangles (a late development; cf. Altekar 1978:298) are another indispensable sign of the married woman whose husband is alive. When he dies, she breaks them (e.g. Wood 1980:172; Jameson 1976:251; etc.). The ritual purity of a woman's cooking is important for eating itself; for the ritual of eating (see Parāskara's *Bhojanasūtra*, traditionally learned by heart and followed to the

77. tathā ca vasiṣṭhasamhitāyām// kañcukī kanṭhasūtram ca karṇapatre tathānjanam / kācakābharaṇam caiwa haridrāsnānapuṇḍrakam // keśaprasā-dhanam caiwa pādanāsāvibhūṣaṇam / tāmbūlādīni lakṣmāṇi procyante puṇyar yoṣitām // maṇibandhe ca kaṇṭhe ca kācakābharaṇair yutā / sā nārī puṇya-caritā tasyāḥ pākaḥ śuciḥ smṛtaḥ // Sdhp.7v.5-8 (Vas.) < Dharmāk.III.p.93, line 20—p.94, line 1. (kañcukaṃ for kañcukī; saut du même au même from kācakābharaṇam caiva to keśaprasādhanam caiva; Vas.).

78. karamūle kanthamūle kācakābharanavarjitā / sā nārī vidhavā jūeyā janmajanmāntaresv api // iti // Sdhp.7v.8-9 (Vas.) < Dharmāk.III.p.93, lines

14-15 (Vas.).

letter by young initiates; LSJ): and for the ritual of offering food to the deity. The cooking of a high-caste married woman whose husband is living is pure. If she is menstruating, however, it is not: hence the prohibition (see section IV, p. 284). In the case of a widow, in Maharashtra as in other parts of India, if she shaves her head, her cooking is deemed pure; if she does not, it is unacceptable (LSJ). To say that a woman wears glass bangles and necklace is thus to say that her husband is alive; that in turn is a mark of her virtue and purity; hence her cooking is pure.

Nose- and toe-rings seem to be another late development. Altekar notes the conspicuous absence of the nose-ring in sculpture and painting throughout India before the Muslim invasions. He concludes that it was originally a Muslim ornament (1978:301 ff.; cf. PVK II.i.537). By the time of Tryambaka, however, it was another indispensable sign of saubhāgva.

To conclude, the rules on dress for a man classify him in religious terms. The sacred thread is a mark of the twice-born, one who has undergone initiation followed by years of religious education. The colours of his garments and the way they are worn show his varna. The symbols on his forehead mark his sectarian allegiance. These are the signs of the religious status of a man, his reward for merit accumulated in past lives, and so now his innate virtue and purity. Similarly, the rules on dress for a woman classify her in religious terms, but in a markedly different way. That she is a woman is itself a demerit earned in a previous life (see section III, pp. 246–72). All the rulings on dress, however, imply compensatory merits. Her entire appearance, from the flowers in her hair to the rings on her toes, signify that her personal deity is alive. That in itself is proof of her religious virtue, her ritual purity and thus of her authority in the home.

IIB At Dawn (Sdhp. 7v.9-10v.1)

Serving the sacred fire (agnisusrūsā; Sdhp. 7v.9-10r.6)

The word śuśrūṣā is well chosen. In this context, it is a general term denoting the practical aspects of the fire sacrifice. It thus covers both the śrauta and grhya rituals detailed below. Secondly, it carries with it all the associations of religious service and devotion. For example, the brahmin who chooses to be a perpetual student is instructed to 'serve' his teacher diligently all his life (paricaret, Manu II.243; glossed by Sarv. as susrūset). If his teacher dies, then he should 'serve' his teacher's son, his widow or sapinda relation (Manu II.247; guruvac chuśrūṣām anutisthet, Kull.). If none of these are alive, he should spend the rest of his life 'serving' the sacred fire (agnisusrūsā; Manu II.248). Thirdly, the term reinforces the associations of obedience, subservience and attentiveness suggested by bhartrśuśrūsā ('serving one's husband'), already established as the single most important goal for women (see Tryambaka's introduction, section I, pp. 29-43). These ideas are further explained in Tryambaka's detailed definition of the term in his conclusion (section V,

especially pp. 312-13).

Strictly speaking, the term agnihotra denotes the Vedic ritual of fire sacrifice described in detail in the śrautasūtras (see Dumont 1939). It involves three fires (treta; i.e. the āhavanīya, gārhapatya and dakṣināgni), takes place in a special enclosure, and consists primarily of an oblation (homa) of cow's milk into the āhavanīya fire twice daily, at sunset and at dawn. Only those who have reached a certain age ('when he has a son and his hair is still black', Śab. on Jai.I.3.3; but cf. Trik. I.78c-9b) and who are rich enough to pay for the priests, may set up the three srauta fires. Once a man has done so, he is required to perform the twice-daily sacrifice for the rest of his life as a householder. The morning and evening oblations are in fact two halves of one ritual. In essence, this is a magical rite to ensure the continued passage of the sun through the heavens ('un charme solaire', Dumont 1939:viii). The evening performance is thus of particular importance since it marks the sun's disappearance and determines its return the following day. The apparent emphasis on the morning oblation is probably due to the fact that the discussion of the proper time for the ritual traditionally revolves around that morning performance (Bodewitz 1976:3). In fact, the correct time of the oblation varies (depending on the text) from just before to just after samdhyā ('juncture', i.e. sunset or sunrise; e.g. Āp.śr. VI.4.7-9; Kāty.śr.IV.14.6, IV.15.1,12-15). The first oblation in the morning is offered to Sūrya; the first in the evening to Agni; the second in both cases to Prajāpati.

The term sāyamprātarhoma denotes the simpler grhya counterpart of the śrauta ritual, as described in the grhyasūtras and later smṛtis. It involves the single domestic fire (grhyāgni; also called aupāsana, vaivāhika, smārta, etc.); and consists of an oblation (homa) of cooked food such as boiled rice or barley (Aśv.gr.I.2.1; Ap.gr.III. 7.19; Gobh.Sm.I.131, III.114). Like its śrauta equivalent, it is offered in two parts, evening and morning (hence sāyamprātarhoma), with similar differences of opinion as to the precise time. The single or aupāsana fire is established by every ritually independent male, whether this independence is marked by the end of his studentship (for one who does not return to the joint family), his marriage (if that does not immediately follow the former), the death of his father (in the case of the eldest son) or the partition of the joint family (for younger sons; Sankh.gr.I.1.2-5; Gobh.gr.I.1.7.12; Mān.gr.II.1.1). A particular age or degree of wealth is not stipulated. Thus if a man is unable for reasons of time or money to perform the more complex and costly srauta ritual of agnihotra, he should perform the simpler aupāsana ritual. If he has the choice, he should choose the former (Sm.C.II.p.412-13). According to some texts, he might even do both, in which case there arises the problem of which should be performed first (e.g. Kāty.śr.IV.13.12 and comm.). According to the Trikandamandana, there are two views on the kindling of the śrauta fires: that it is obligatory (nitya), and that it need only be done in order to obtain certain desires (kāmya, Trik.I.6); the latter view is ascribed to Baudhāyana (Trik.I.7). Failure to perform either ritual, out of unbelief or idleness, takes one to a variety of hells (Sm.C.II.p.417). The deities to whom the oblations are offered in the sayampratarhoma are the same as those in the śrauta agnihotra: Sūrya, Agni and Prajāpati.

Is Tryambaka concerned with the *śrauta* or the *grhya* ritual, or with both? To answer this question, I shall consider one of his rulings out of sequence. Sdhp.8r.5-6 informs us that, according to Manu, the (householder's) wife should perform (these) three rituals daily: service (*śuśrūsā*) relating to the *agnihotra* ritual; *samdhyā* or twilight

worship; and the obligatory bali offerings.' Does this reference to the agnihotra indicate an exclusive interest in śrauta ritual, or is it being used more loosely here to cover both forms of the fire sacrifice?

Tryambaka certainly begins with rulings that only make sense in the context of the śrauta ritual. In Sdhp.8r.1-4, for example, he describes the layout of the traditional agnihotra enclosure (see below, p. 120, notes 11, 12). In Sdhp.8v.9, he explains that the wife should take her place after the uddharanam; that is, after coals have been taken from the gārhapatya fire to light the other śrauta fires (see p.130, note 25 below). In Sdhp. 9v.3-5, however, he informs us that the ruling just given on the close link between the wife and the sacred fires of the agnihotra ritual is equally applicable to the aupāsana ritual (see p.140, note 40). He thus seems to differentiate between the śrauta and smārta fire sacrifice, and to cover both.

In fact, the obvious parallels between śrauta and smārta fire rituals have created a confusing overlap in terms and concepts (cf. Bodewitz 1976:191 ff.). Ap.1.4.14.1, for example, gives agnihotra first in the list of ritual obligations to be fulfilled by the newlymarried man (cf. also Ap.I.4.13.22). In this context, the term must mean the morning and evening offerings into the grhya fire (sāyamprātarhoma). For, as indicated above, the śrauta ritual is open only to those who have reached a certain age and position; it is certainly not an automatic requirement of the householder (but cf. Trik.I.78c-9b). The establishment of the grhya fire, on the other hand, often coincides with the marriage ceremony. The aupāsana fire ritual is presumably called agnihotra merely to give it the higher ritual status. For the same reason, Hir.gr.1.26.3 declares that the man who makes offerings in the grhya fire is held to be an āhitāgni (i.e. one who has set up the three śrauta fires). (Mātrdatta omits this chapter in his commentary, which suggests that it is in fact a later addition.)

It is therefore unwise to assume that Tryambaka's references to the agnihotra always indicate the śrauta ritual. As we shall see, some of them most certainly do. But his stress on the importance of fire worship, without any provisos regarding the age, wealth and

^{1.} tathā ca manuḥ// agnihotrasya suśrūṣā saṃdhyopāsanam eva ca/kāryam patnyā pratidinam balikarma ca naityakam // iti // Sdhp.8r.5-6 (Manu) Sm.M.II.p.355 (Manu). Not in Mandlik or N.S. edns. of Manu. Attrib. to Manu in the Smṛtiratnākara acc. to the 1946 N.S. edn. of Manu (p.532-3).

so on of the householder concerned, suggests that Tryambaka's main interest is in the ritual responsibilities of the wife of the independent householder and not merely with those of the wife of the āhitāgni. Tryambaka professes to have written a treatise on the religious duties of Hindu women. The text itself reveals that his interest is limited to orthodox women of the three higher varṇas, in particular to those at court. A further restriction to the wives of āhitāgnis is unlikely.

The term sandhyā means literally the 'juncture' between night and day, thus the twilight periods of dawn and dusk; a third 'juncture' is that between morning and afternoon, hence midday. In the context of ritual, the term denotes the religious acts performed by twice-born men at these two (e.g. Gaut.I.2.16-17; Manu II.101; Yājñ.1.24-5) or three (e.g. Apar.p.49; Sm. C.II.p.354; Vidyārṇava 1979:32) junctures of the day, hence the 'twilight ritual' or 'prayer' (saṃdhyopāsanam, saṃdhyāvandanam). As already shown, saṃdhyopāsanam is one of the three ritual responsibilities Tryambaka stipulates for the orthodox Hindu wife (see note 1). But precisely what does he mean by this?

First, what is normally meant by samdhyopāsanam? The principal component is the repeated recitation (japa) of mantras, primarily the gayatri preceded by om and the three vyahrtis. Subsidiary components include sipping (ācamana); ritual breathing (prānāyāma; lit. 'restraint of the breath'); sprinkling with water (mārjana); a ritual to drive out sin (aghamarsana; i.e. removing the sin of the preceding night or day; cf. Manu II. 102); offering water to the sun (arghyadāna); and the worship of Sūrya in the morning or Varuna in the evening (upasthāna). Each of these also involves the recitation of Vedic mantras (PVK II.i.p.314-19; Vidyārnava 1979:32-41). The proper setting for the ritual is outside the village (Ap.I.11.30.8; Gaut.II.16; aranye, Sankh.gr.II.9.1); in particular, by a river, in the shade of an asvattha tree, or in a similar sacred place (Baudh.gr.II.4.2). Only the agnihotrin who must perform the śrauta ritual at sunrise in his house may perform the samdhyā at home (Ujj. on Ap.I.11.30.9). The morning ritual is performed standing, the evening one sitting (Gaut.II.17; Sm.C.II.p.352-3).

The parallels with both the *śrauta* ritual of *agnihotra* and the *smārta* ritual of *sāyamprātarhoma* are obvious. All three rituals are performed morning and evening (the midday *saṃdhyā* is often omitted); all three involve an offering to Sūrya and invocations to

both fire and the sun; all three are in origin magical rites to ensure the continued rising and setting of the sun. The aghamarsana ritual to remove sin recalls a similar interpretation of the agnihotra (see Bodewitz 1976: 153 ff.). So close are these parallels, and so prevalent the current custom of twilight worship, that Gonda maintains that the modern ritual of samdhyopāsanam has not only borrowed from the Vedic ritual of agnihotra but has replaced it (1970:74). Certainly, the adoration of the sun is an important part of the śrauta ritual. Gonda's remark is even more persuasive if the term samdhyā is taken to denote not merely the twilight prayers but the full morning or evening ritual (agnihotrahoma or sāyamprātarhoma) that normally follows them (see below). In this context, it is interesting to note that when the Smrtimuktāphala quotes the śloka given above concerning the three ritual responsibilities of the orthodox wife (see note 1), the term samdhyopāsanam is glossed as sāyamprātarhoma, the grhya counterpart of the agnihotra (Sm.M.II. p. 355). We may conclude that there is a further confusing overlap of terms.

Secondly, what is the proper time for the performance of the ritual? This question is approached in two ways: in relation to the actual time of sunset or sunrise (thus creating a further parallel to the discussions of agnihotra and sāyamprātarhoma); and in relation to the morning fire sacrifice (thus clearly differentiating between homa and samdhyā). For example, the morning samdhyā ideally begins before sunrise and continues until the sun appears; the evening samdhyā begins as the sun sets and continues until the stars appear (Aśv.gr.III.7.3-6; Har. on Gaut.I.2.17; Sm.C.II. p. 352-3). While Vidyārnava specifies an exact time of forty-eight minutes for each ritual (1979:32), according to Manu the longer the time spent the better since it brings long life, fame and so forth (Manu IV.93-4). Alternatively, it should be performed after one's morning ablutions (Yājñ.I.98) and before the homa offering (Daksa II.28.2; Sm.C.II.p.422).2 In the case of the man who performs both the śrauta and the smārta ritual of homa, the samdhyā ritual should be performed before either of them (Kāty.śr.IV.13.12 and comm.).

Now it is obvious that a lengthy samdhyā would make it difficult

^{2.} saṃdhyākarmāvasāne tu svayam homo vidhīyate // Dakṣa II.28.2a. prātaḥ saṃdhyāvandanānantaram agnīn āhavanīyādīn yathoktena vidhinā hutvā aupāsanāgnim vā // Mit. on Yājā.I.99.

for the householder to perform the homa ritual at the right time, that is, at dawn. In fact, according to Manu II.15 (cf. also Sm.C.II. p.426), the morning sacrifice (yajñah; glossed as agnihotrahomah) may take place either before or after sunrise (udite 'nudite caiva) or somewhere in between the two (samayādhyuṣite; glossed by Medhātithi as 'at dawn'; by Kullūka as 'when neither sun nor stars can be seen'). Some authorities insist that the ceremony must be completed before the sun has risen 'by one hand's length' (hastād ūrdhvam) above the horizon (Gobh.Sm.I.122-3; Sm.C.II.p.426); others allow that it may be performed until the end of the morning period (samgava, see p. 45; cf. Āśv.gr.I.9.5 and comm.; Sm.C.II.p. 426). Either way, the difficulty of trying to perform two rituals at roughly the same time remains. Usually, as reported above, the samdhyā is performed first; sometimes it is performed after the homa ritual.

Tryambaka evidently prefers the latter. After his comments on the morning ablutions (see section IIA, pp.69–88, and the clothes and ornaments a woman should wear (see pp.88–101), he moves straight on to deal with the morning fire ritual (agniśuśrūṣā). Only when he has done that, does he give a series of rulings on arghyadānam, one of the subsidiary components of the saṃdhyā-ritual (see below, pp. 149–55).

The role of the wife

Before continuing with Tryambaka's discussion of the fire sacrifice, I shall take another of his rulings out of sequence. It concerns his definition of agniśuśrūṣā in relation to women. What exactly is the wife permitted or expected to do? 'At the time of the oblation,' Tryambaka explains, 'the wife should serve the sacred fire in the sense that she should do such things as adorning (the hearth).'3 By this, he presumably means such things as cleaning the area and decorating it with powder designs, flowers and so forth. It is remarkable that this is virtually all Tryambaka tells us about what the wife is actually required to do.

In my comment on Tryambaka's introduction (see section I), I touched briefly on the issue of a woman's right to offer sacrifice. The exclusion of women from Vedic education and upanayana,

^{3.} homasamaye patnyā agner alankārādišuśrūsā kartavyā // Sdhp.8r.4-5.

combined with the growing tendency to deny the modification (ūha) of gender, led to an almost unanimous rejection of that right. According to Manu, for example, the sacrifice performed by a woman is displeasing to the gods and inauspicious for men; a brahmin may not eat the food offered there (Manu IV. 205-6). It is argued (e.g. in Manu XI.37) that the person who performs the sacrifice must be skilled in srauta ritual (vaitānakuśalah; glossed by Rāgh. as śrautakarmakuśalah) and thoroughly versed in the Veda (vedapāragah). It follows that if a girl (kanyā) or a young woman whether married or not (yuvatih; glossed by Kull. as anūdhā ūdhāpi tarunī) performs the agnihotra sacrifice, she will go to hell; as indeed will an insufficiently educated or uninitiated or foolish man (Manu X1.36-7; cf. Sm.C.II.p.424; yet cf. pp.141-9 below). In V.155, Manu goes further still: no sacrifice (yajña), no ritual observance (vrata), and no fast (uposana) may be performed by a woman separately (prthak; glossed by Sarv. as bhartrā vinā; i.e. independently of her husband). Vis.Sm.XXV.15-16 adds that a woman who observes such a fast or vrata during her husband's lifetime will deprive him of long life and will herself go to hell.

It is evident from such examples that the main thrust of orthodox opposition is ranged against the independent religieuse (see Leslie 1980:27 ff.; 1983(1): 100). It is not necessarily intended to prevent the orthodox high-caste wife from taking her legitimate part in religious ritual jointly with her husband. In fact, as Jaimini declares, husband and wife are jointly entitled to perform the sacrifice and so should do it together (ekakarmyam; Jai.VI.1.17). But what exactly is the wife's role in such ritual acts? If we examine the rulings on precisely this issue of the joint ritual duties of husband and wife, we find that here too the role of the wife is gradually whittled away.

R.V.VIII.31.5, for example, is quite explicit. Husband and wife are joint sacrificers. Together they press out the soma juice (sunutah; glossed as somābhiṣavam kurutah, v.5); together they approach the sacrificial grass (barhih; glossed as yajñam, v.6); together they invite the gods to the sacrificial feast in order to attain immortality (amṛtāya; glossed as amaraṇāya samtānābhivrddhaye, v.9). Sāyaṇa comments that this is a hymn of praise to the married couple performing a sacrifice (yajane dampatyoh; or, in the phrase of some MSS, yajamānadampatyoh). He glosses dampatī as 'the two performers of sacrifice, that is, husband and wife' (yajñakāriṇau jāyāpatī). The Taittirīyabrāhmaṇa intones: may husband and wife become one through their joint good deeds (sam patnī patyā sukṛtena

gacchatām); may they, yoked like oxen, bear together the burden of the sacrifice (yajñasya dhuryāyuktāvibhūtām); may they jointly destroy their enemies; and share the rewards in heaven (Tait.Br. 111.7.5.11: Sab. on Jai. VI.1.2.).

According to Ap.II.5.11.17, a man needs a wife for two reasons: to bear him children and to perform the religious rituals that must be performed jointly with a wife (prajāsahatvakarmabhyah). A wife who takes part in the kindling of the agnihotra fire with her husband becomes permanently associated with the rituals connected with it (karmabhih sambadhyate; v.14). It is for this reason that, as long as she performs her part in the joint sacrifice and bears children (dharmaprajāsampanne dāre), her husband may not take a second wife (v.12; according to the Ujivalā, this means she must bear sons). Moreover, a wife who fulfils her religious obligations (dharmasampattih) is one who is both conscientious about and capable of (śraddhā śaktiś ca) the required śrauta and smārta rituals (śrautesu gārhyesu smārtesu ca karmasu; Ujj. on v.12).

By playing her part, the wife obtains an equal share in the rewards of the sacrifice. Thus, in the Buddhacarita, when the Buddhato-be abandons his orthodox Hindu wife, she laments that he is depriving her of her legitimate share in the merit obtained by joint sacrifice. She maintains that he has no right to pursue a religious path, either in the home or in the forest, without her (VIII.61-2). For the married couple (dampatī) is initiated together (dīkṣitāv ubhau; i.e. in the kindling of the sacred fire); purified together by the performance of Vedic rituals (vedavidhānasamskrtau); and therefore destined to enjoy the same rewards after death (samam

bubhukṣū parato 'pi tatphalam; VIII.63).

Even Manu, whose extremist pronouncements on women are well known, insists that the wife is ordained to take part in joint religious rituals. According to Manu IX.28, for example, a man relies on his wife for five essential things: children, religious rituals (dharmakāryāṇi; glossed by Rāgh. as balyagnihotrādīni, 'the bali offering, the fire sacrifice, and so on'), obedient service (śuśrūṣā), sexual pleasure, and (the reward of) heaven for both himself and his ancestors. Manu IX. 96 explains that, since women were created to have children (prajanārtham; glossed alternatively as 'conception', 'pregnancy' or 'childbirth') and men to continue their line (samtānārtham; glossed as 'impregnating' and 'implanting the seed'), the religious duties applicable to all (sādhāraņo dharmah) should be performed jointly by husband and wife. Medhātithi comments that a man has no authority to act alone (ataḥ kevalasyādhikārābhāvāt); hence even wives who deserve to be hated (dveṣyāḥ) should not be abandoned (i.e. superseded).

Similar sentiments abound in the epics and purāṇas. The wife is frequently referred to as 'one who shares in her husband's religious duties' (sahadharmacarī; e.g. Mbh. XIII.134.7a; Rām.II.117.30b; etc.). Sītā is portrayed performing a number of rituals jointly with Rāma before his installation as heir presumptive (Ram.II.5-6). She even takes part in Daśaratha's śrāddha ceremony together with Rāma and Lakṣmaṇa (Rām.II.103). The Mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇa concludes that a man cannot fulfil his religious duties to gods, ancestors and guests without a wife: for the wife shares the sacrifice, bears the children and prepares the food (21.70-2).

According to Pānini, this participation in the sacrifice is indicated in the word patnī. For the feminine form of pati ('owner', 'lord', 'husband') is simply pat \bar{i} . When the final i of pat \bar{i} is replaced by nbefore the feminine suffix \bar{i} , it denotes a wife 'related through sacrifice' (yajñasamyoge), thus one who takes part in the sacrifices of her husband (Pān.IV.1.33). Since the śūdra is not entitled to perform sacrifices, his wife may not be called patni, or is called so only by analogy (upamānāt siddham; Pat. on Pān.IV.1.33). When Jaimini declares that the patnī is entitled to perform sacrifices because she is 'closely connected with wealth' (arthena ca samavetatvāt; Jai. VI.1.14), he is taking the term in this most literal sense of 'female owner'. As the chief wife of equal caste, the patnī is the joint owner of wealth and thus meets the stipulations required of the performer of sacrifice (cf. Jai.VI.1.10; see section I). Since the wealth required for the sacrifice is in fact common to both husband and wife, they should perform the sacrifice together (Jai.VI.1.17).

The pūrvamīmāmsā material is illuminating in many respects. For example, in his commentary on Jai.VI.1.17, Śabara explains that certain important rituals such as the darśapūrnamāsa (new and full moon ceremonies) and the jyotistoma (a class of soma ritual) would be ineffective if either the wife or the husband did not participate. In the cases he cites, both sacrificer and patnī must gaze at the ghee.⁴ But how active, and how important, is the latter's participation in other rituals?

4. Gazing at the ghee (ājyāvekṣaṇa) is one of several actions to be performed by the wife in the darśapūrnamāsa ritual; cf. Smith 1984:576-7.

111

Certainly, in several Vedic rites, the wife plays both an active and an essential role. In the horse-sacrifice (asvamedha), for example, four (or three) of the king's wives (mahisī, the consecrated queen; vāvātā, the favourite; parivrktī, the neglected one who has borne no son; and pālāgalī, the low-born wife) anoint the horse and weave pearls into its mane and tail (Sat.Br.XIII.2.6.4-8; Kāty.śr.XX. 5.15-17; Dumont 1948:480). When it has been killed (samjñapanam; Katy.śr.XX.6.10), they circumambulate the horse nine times, fanning it as they walk (Kāty.śr.XX.6.12-13; Śat.Br.XIII. 2.8.2-4; Dumont 1948:482). In the Rāmāyana, the queen decapitates the animal herself (Rām.I.14.33-5). She then lies beside the horse under the cover of a garment and simulates sexual intercourse with it (āśvaśiśnam upasthe kurute, Kāty.śr.XX.6.16; vonipradese, comm.; Baudh.śr.15.29). After a ritual exchange of abuse, the queens dissect the animal with special needles (Kāty. śr. XX, 7,1-2). Similarly, in the ceremony of the king's consecration (rājasūva), three of his wives (mahisī, vāvātā and parivrktī) are among the people of importance to the king to whom the 'jewelofferings' (ratnahavis) are given (Sat.Br.V.3.4,13; Tait.Sam.I.8.9; Heesterman 1957:49-57). In the vājapeya (lit. 'drink of strength') ritual, the sacrificer's wife (wearing a skirt of kuśa grass to counter the effects of her impure lower half) accompanies her husband in a symbolic joint ascent to heaven (Sat.Br.V.2.1.8-11). In the soma sacrifice, she ritually cleanses the animal about to be sacrificed (Sat.Br.III.8.2.1-6); makes the foundation brick for the fire-altar (Sat.Br.VI.5.3.1); and at one time she may even have chanted the sāman verses now sung by the udgātr (Sat.Br.XIV.1.35). For the wife is the 'bottom half' (jaghanārdhā, Sat.Br.III.8.2.2; V.2.1.8) of the sacrifice, half the sacrificer's own self (Sat.Br.V.2.1.10). As Sabara comments on Jai.VI.1.18, statements such as 'he binds the wife with a rope and the sacrificer with a girdle in order to make them a couple' (mithunatvāya; Tait.Sam.VI.1.3.5) only make sense if the sacrifice is performed jointly by husband and wife.

In theory then, the patnī is as much a sacrificer as her husband. But, as Śabara also explains, the ritual function of the wife is totally different from that of the male sacrificer: hers is a necessarily supportive role. Her participation therefore does not in any way disturb the 'singleness' (ekatvam) of the sacrificer (Sab. on Jai.VI.1.17). This point is picked up in Jai.VI.1.22 and 23. It seems that some theorists argued that the dual number in the joint sacrifice refers not

to the husband and his wife but to two men (dvayoḥ puṃsor adhi-kāraḥ, Śab. on Jai.VI.1.22; e.g. the sacrificer and the priest). Jaimini disagrees. The sacrifice is performed by one man not two (ekaḥ pumān ādadhīta na dvau; Śab. on Jai.VI.1.23); the dual number indicates the 'quality' of the single man (guṇasya tu vidhā-natvāt; Jai.VI.1.23); the word 'second' thus denotes the wife (patnyā dvitīyaśabdaḥ syāt; Jai.VI.1.23). The Vedic 'sacrificing couple' is reduced to a male sacrificer with his female 'second'. It is clear which way the trend is going.⁵

Having established the essential 'singleness' of the male sacrificer in the joint sacrifice, the next question concerns which acts should be performed by the man alone, and which by his assistant wife. Jai. VI.1.24 explains. Since the wife is not equal (atulyatvāt; i.e. to the husband), she should perform only those acts which are specifically laid down in the Veda for her to do (tasyā yāvad uktam; cf. Sab., vacanaprāmānyāt), such as the invocation of blessings and celibacy (āśīr brahmacaryam). I have already noted that Jaimini does not in fact maintain that women are not entitled to study the Veda (see section 1). He merely insists that in the joint sacrifice the wife is 'not equal'. But all later commentators, from Sabara onwards, gloss this vague 'inequality' in terms of Vedic education, or rather the lack of it. The sacrificer is a man and therefore learned in the Veda (yajamānah pumān vidvāms ca); whereas the wife is a woman and therefore not learned (patnī strī ca avidyā ca; Śab. on Jai. IV. I. 24).

Oddly enough, Śabara does not take exception to the term āśīḥ, 'the invocation of blessings', that is, Vedic mantras. Kumārila, in his commentary, the Tuptīkā, does. According to him, the wife, being without Vedic education, would be unable to pronounce the mantras correctly (but cf. section I above). The term āśīḥ must therefore be reinterpreted to mean 'embellishments' (saṃskārāḥ) such as bathing, anointing, applying collyrium and so on. Even the term brahmacarya (celibacy) must be reinterpreted to mean 'freedom from all passions' (Kum.Ţu.VI.1.24; Jha 1934:993). Lesser things

5. The secondary importance of the patnī and the passivity of her ritual role is exemplified in two photographs in Staal's analysis of the agnicayana ritual as performed by Nambudiri brahmins in 1975. She sits beside her husband, in a semicircle with the priests, but her head and body are bowed low behind a large umbrella so that — as antarjanam ('inside person')—she is hidden from view (Staal 1983:I, pp. 314-15, plates 45A, 45B; see also p. 383, plate 62).

laid down for the wife to do, such as gazing at the ghee (e.g. Śab. on Jai.VI.1.17, see above; Āp.śr.II.6.6), may be interpreted literally. Sandal is so influenced by later views on the matter that he translates even Jaimini's reference to āśīḥ as 'paring of the nails', commenting that the term covers the shaving of the head and face as well. He does add, however, that other commentators have taken āśīḥ to mean Vedic benedictions (Sandal 1974 on Jai.VI.1.24). Tryambaka, on the other hand, follows Kumārila. But, for him, the transition from Vedic mantras (āśīḥ) to 'embellishments' (saṃskārāḥ) no longer requires explanation. He merely states that the wife's service to the fire implies 'adorning and so on' (alankārādi).

This issue of the right (adhikāra) of the wife to perform sacrifice is discussed at some length in the first kānḍa or 'section' of the Trikānḍamanḍana, Bhāskara Miśra's exposition of the somayāga aphorisms of Āpastamba, also known as the Āpastambasūtradhvanitārthakārikā. Bhāskara Miśra wrote at a time when it was evidently still possible to assert that, according to some, the wife was equally and jointly responsible for the sacrifice (before A.D. 1100 according to PVK.I.i.p.551; in the eleventh or twelfth century A.D. according to Smith, 1984:75-80). Judging by the repeated juxtaposition of unreconciled opposing views, however, this produced an uncomfortable ambivalence.

The section on the adhikāra of the wife opens by presenting three distinct views. According to the first, all the specifications (lakṣaṇaḥ) enjoined for the sacrificer, except the traditional learning of the Veda (svādhyāyamātraṃ tyaktvā), are applicable to all the sacrificer's wives (Trik.I.43). According to the second, the sacrificer shares these rights regarding the sacrifice only with his chief wife (savarṇayā jyeṣṭhabhāryayaiva). According to the third, the sacrificer may not share these rights with a wife married solely for pleasure (kāmapatnī) after the śrauta fires have been lit (Trik.I.44). Trik.I.45 then declares that the adhikāra of the married couple acting together in the sacrifice (dampatyor ubhayor mithaḥ) is indeed equal (tulya eva). In accordance with this view, even the ability (kartṛtvam) to make sacrificial offerings (dravyatyāge) is equal (Trik.I.46a). (The term tyāga denotes the ritual renunciation of the fruit of the offering by the sacrificer and the assigning of that fruit

^{6.} I am indebted to Frederick M. Smith for directing me to this work and for lending me portions of his provisional translation. Cf. Smith:1984.

to the relevent deity.) In the context of an optional rite (kāmyatve). the ritual should be performed if either husband or wife have a particular desire (Trik.I.53a). According to an alternative view ascribed to Rudradatta (comm. on Trik.I.46b), however, the husband actually makes the offering (tyāgam patih kuryāt) while his wife merely 'approves' it (patnī tam anumanyate; glossed as anujānāti, 'she gives her consent'); hence their inequality in the sacrifice (adhikāre 'pi vaisamyam; Trik.I.47a). What is meant by the wife's 'approval' or 'consent' is unclear. Following this line of thought, the sacrificer has the entitlement (adhikāravān) with regard to the major offerings (prādhānyena) which are independent (svanistha; glossed as svatantra); while the wife, being dependent upon her husband (patnī tatparatantrā satī) has the entitlement regarding subsidiary offerings (angabhūtādhikārinī); hence the religious responsibilities of the husband are heavier (patidharmā balādhikāh; Trik.I.48). In the context of a kāmya rite, the ritual should be performed only if the husband is the one with the desire (Trik.I.53b). Bhāskara Miśra is evidently unwilling to endorse either of the two prevailing views.

By the time of later commentators, however, all injunctions for the joint sacrifice that are not specifically given in the feminine form are taken to refer only to the male sacrificer, the husband. Even those expressed in the feminine are reinterpreted according to current notions of the religious inequality of women. This inequality is in turn justified by the insistence that women are not allowed to study the Veda.

Against such a background, it is no surprise to read in the Mahābhārata that it is the wife's job to look after all the items her husband will need for the sacrifice (Mbh.XIII.47.32-4). According to Trik.III.100, some authorities disregard the patnī altogether; the commentary explains that she is not so much a part (anga) of the sacrifice as a part of the sacrificer, for her position is akin to that of a sacrificial utensil (yajñāpātrānīva patnī; Smith 1984:128). So passive is her role that the question of whether she need participate at all is raised. In Sītā's absence, Rāma has a golden image of her made to symbolise their religious partnership in the horse-sacrifice (Rām.VII.91.25). The Aitareyabrāhmana goes even further, asking if a man without a wife may offer the agnihotra. The conclusion is not only that he may, but that he should; for a man who fails to do so is a 'mock man' (anaddhāpuruṣa), that is, one who offers oblations

to neither gods, ancestors or men (Ait.Br.32.8.p.824-5). Bodewitz (1976:119) translates the term anaddhāpurusa as 'barbarian', taking it merely as a derogatory term. Sāyana explains that such a man is 'false' (anrtah) by virtue of his failure to perform his sacrificial duty. In another context, he glosses the term as alīkapuruṣa, 'a false or counterfeit man' (on Sat.Br.VI.3.1.24; cf. S.B.E.XLI. p.197). Since the essential sacrificer even in the joint sacrifice is the male, failure to perform that sacrifice in the absence of a female 'second' merely shows that he is not a 'real' man. As Bodewitz points out (1976:119-21), a man without a wife (apatnīka) may be either a once-married man whose wife has died or disappeared, or a man who has never married. The latter alternative opens the way for the internalization of the sacrifice. The wife is substituted by faith (śraddhā; Ait.Br.32.8) or intellect (buddhi; Bodewitz 1976:121. note 10). The sacrificer now offers in and to the self. In the realm of dharmasastra, however, the substitute is a wife made of kuśa grass (upādhiś cātra kuśamayī patnī) with whom a man may offer sacrifice for the rest of his life (Sm.C.II.p.442; Ait.Br.32.8.p.826; contrast Apar. on Yājñ.I.89.p.114-15). According to Trik.II.8. if the sacrificer's wife is absent, a wife of gold or kuśa grass (sauvarnī kuśapatnī vā) may be substituted (cf. Trik.III.96); but the wife may never use such an image of her husband to perform the sacrifice in his absence (patyuh pratinidhim krtvā patnī naivam samācaret).

Tryambaka also deals with this question of whether the wife's presence and 'participation' is strictly necessary, and comes to the opposite conclusion (see below, pp. 132-41). For the moment, however, let us note simply that his ruling on the wife's duties in the joint sacrifice follows the trend of thought indicated by Sabara and Kumārila. In general terms, as Tryambaka explains in section IV, the good wife should be like Lopāmudrā, who takes her husband's religious duties as her own (pativratā, sadharminī) to the extent that she seems to be no more than her husband's shadow (tavāngacchāyayā tulyā; Sdhp.22v. 10ff.; cf. pp. 273-4, 281-2). In the context of the fire sacrifice, the patnī's task is the supportive and peripheral one of decorating the hearth.

Where the patnī may walk

Tryambaka opens his section on agnisusrūṣā by giving two practical details: first, how the wife should enter the agnihotra hall or enclosure; secondly, where she is permitted to walk.

The first of these is a ruling specific to the patnī. 'For the purpose of the fire ritual, the wife should enter the agnihotra hall by its southern door.' Tryambaka quotes from the Kātyāyanaśrautasūtra. 'There are two doors, one to the east, another to the south; the husband enters by the eastern door, the wife by the southern one.'8

These rulings indicate that Tryambaka is thinking primarily of the śrauta ritual involving three fires and taking place in a special enclosure (agnyagāra; Āp.śr.I.2.10). The ritual for setting up the sacred fires (agnyādheya, °ādhana) gives details regarding the construction of this enclosure (cf. Śr.kośa I.i). Strictly speaking, two enclosures should be made (agnyagāre kurvanti; Kāty.śr.IV. 7.8). First, a raised place is prepared, sloping towards the east (prācīnapravanam devayajanam; Āp.śr. V.4.1). Next, an east-west line is drawn. On this are marked the centres of the ahavanīva and gārhapatya fireplaces, the former to the east, the latter to the west. The ahavaniya or 'oblatory' fire is kindled by fire brought from the gārhapatya, and the homa offering is performed in it (Kāty.śr.IV. 8.24; I.8.44). The garhapatya or 'domestic' fire (lit. 'belonging to the grhapati or master of the house') is kept permanently alight (Ap. śr.VI.2.13). The two fireplaces are built eight paces apart (astāsu prakramesu) if the sacrificer is a brahmin, eleven if he is a ksatriya, twelve if he is a vaisya (Ap.śr. V.4.3). Around each fire an enclosure is built. The ahavanīya enclosure, with its rafters or roof poles (vamśa) pointing east, encloses only the āhavanīya fire. The gārhapatya enclosure, with its rafters pointing north, encloses both the garhapatya fire and, south-east of that, the daksina or 'southern' fire (Kāty.śr.IV.7.9; Āp.śr.V.4.2,5). These two enclosures are open to each other on the inside to form one larger unit. There are two entrances into this double fire-hall. The entrance into the ahavaniya enclosure is to the east; that into the garhapatya enclosure is to the south (Kāty.śr.IV.7.10 and comm.) More specifically, the sacrificer (yajamānah, Kāty.śr.comm; patih, Tryambaka) should enter the āhavanīya fire-hall by the eastern door; the patnī should enter the gārhapatya fire-hall by the southern one (Kāty.śr.IV.7.10 and

^{7.} agnišušrūsārtham agnihotragrhe daksiņayā dvārā patnyā pravestavyam // Sdhp.7v.9-10.

^{8.} tathā ca kātyāyanaḥ // dakṣiṇapūrve dvāre // pūrvena patiḥ praviśati // dakṣiṇena patnī // iti // Sdhp.7v.10-8r.1 (Kāty.) < Kāty.śr.IV.7.10,19,20 (dakṣiṇapūrvadvāre for dakṣiṇapūrve dvāre; pūrvena praviśati, v.19).

comm.) Additional information not supplied by Tryambaka includes the shapes of the three fireplaces (the āhavanīya is square, the gārhapatya circular, the dakṣiṇa the shape of a halfmoon; see figure 7); and where the sacrificer and his wife should sit (the former to the south-west of the āhavanīya fire; the latter to the south-west of the gārhapatya fire, facing north; Āp.śr.VI.5.1.2, II.5.2,8).9

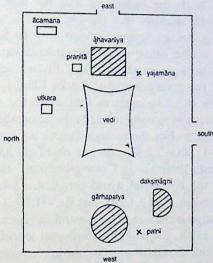


Figure 7. Layout of the ritual enclosure

There are two main points of interest here. First, the ruling that the sacrificer and his wife should enter by different doors (Sdhp.7v.10-8r.1 (Kāty.śr.IV.7.10,19-20) seems to be contradicted by another ruling in Tryambaka's source that for the agnihotra ritual one should enter by the southern door (dakṣiṇena praveśanam agnihotreṣṭiṣu; Kāty.śr.IV.15.29). According to the commentary, this applies to the priest, the sacrificer and the patnī. The Śatapathabrāhmaṇa, however, agrees with the first ruling: the sacrificer should enter from the east (pūrvenāhavanīyaṃ parītya; Śat. Br.II.3.3.13); if he were to take his place after entering from the south, he would fail to reach heaven (Śat.Br.II.3.3.16). Neither Dumont nor Bodewitz draws attention to this apparent contradiction. Dumont gives only the second ruling (1939:2). Bodewitz assumes the first without

9. For a detailed description of the construction and layout of a ritual enclosure in 1975, together with diagrams and photographs, see Staal 1983: I, 244ff.

comment (1976:58-60 and note 5). The issue evidently needs further clarification.

Secondly, Tryambaka's brief quotation reinforces a very common but significant set of identifications and associations: the sacrificer with the āhavanīya fire and the eastern direction; the patnī with the garhapatya fire and the south. Traditionally, heaven is identified with both the āhavanīya and the east. For example, Ait.Br.25.1 (p.648) declares that the āhavanīya is sacrifice (yajña), the āhavanīya is heaven (svarga). According to Sat.Br.XII.4.1.3, the ahavaniya is the other world (antariksaloka; i.e. the intermediate region between earth and sky). Elsewhere, the āhavanīya is the world of the gods (devaloka; Sat.Br.VII.3.1.10, XII.9.3.10). Similarly, Sat.Br.II.3.3.16 explains that when the sacrificer walks towards the east, he is moving towards the heavenly world and will thereby gain heaven. For the eastern direction is towards the gods (Sat.Br.VII.3.2.1; XIV.2.2.28), the region of the gods (Sat.Br.III. 1.1.2,6; cf. Gonda 1980:52-7). Correspondingly, the garhapatya is identified with the terrestrial world (ayam eva lokah, Sat.Br.XII. 4.1.3; manusyalokah, VII.3.1.10). Sat.Br.VII.1.1.3 and 7 explain that the garhapatya is the size of a man and the circular shape of the womb and the earth, for it is this terrestrial world (cf. Sat.Br.IX. 2.3.14). Unlike the 'divine' āhavanīya, the gārhapatya fire is 'human' for it is the world of men (Sat.Br.VII.3.1.10). The roof poles of the gārhapatya enclosure point north for that is the region of men and the appropriate direction for an unconsecrated person (adīksitasya). Only for a consecrated person (diksitasya) may the poles point east as in the ahavaniya enclosure (Sat. Br. III. 1.1.7; III. 6.4.12). The south, however, is the direction or world of the ancestors (Sat.Br. III.1.1.2; III.6.4.12; IX.3.4.11) and, by extension, of death itself (cf. Gonda 1980:52-7). Thus the sacrificer is associated with the gods and heaven; the patnī with men and the world of the ancestors. More dramatically, if the sacrificer entered from the south as the patnī does, he would fail to reach heaven (see above, Sat.Br.II. 3.3.16). Consequently, if she does reach heaven, it will not be on her own account but by virtue of her association with her husband.

Tryambaka's second point concerns where the patnī is permitted to walk. '(Any) walking about in the agnihotra enclosure should be done along the sacred path (or place; tīrtha).'10 The quotation that

^{10.} agnihotragrhe tīrthenaiva samcārah kartavyah // Sdhp.8r.1.

follows is not a ruling exclusive to women but a general one concerning any movement within the sacrificial area. First, however, it is necessary to give some explanation of the terms used.

Tīrtha and samcara denote the special path (mārga; comm. on Kāty.śr.I.3.42) along which one may walk within the sacrificial area. For rituals involving an uttaravedi or northern altar—such as the varuṇapraghāsa, animal and soma sacrifices—it lies between the cātvāla and the utkara (Kāty.śr.I.3.42 and comm.; Āp.śr.XII. 5.4, Rudradatta comm.; Āśv.śr.I.1.6 and comm.). In all iṣtis such as the new and full moon rituals, it lies between the praṇītā and the utkara (Kāty.śr.I.3.43; Āśv.śr.I.1.4,7 and frontispiece, Ān.).

The cātvāla is the trench or pit from which earth is taken to construct the mahāvedi or great altar (avatah, comm. on Āśv.śr.I.1.6; cātvālāt purīṣam, comm. on Kāty.śr.I.8.39). It is situated to the north-east of the altar (Sen 1982; plans 3,5,6). It is not included in Dumont's 'plan de la hutte et de l'emplacement du sacrifice' (1939:xv) nor in Sen's plan for the agnihotra, darśapūrṇamāsa and iṣṭis (1982: plan 4), presumably because it is not relevant in the agnihotra. In Staal's diagram of the elaborate agnicayana ritual, the cātvāla is positioned on the northern boundary of the mahāvedi, to the north of the bird-altar and east of the utkara. It is not included in the smaller sacrificial hall appropriate for the simple agnihotra ritual (1983:I, endpapers, 262-3, 394; 398, plate 65).

The utkara ('rubbish heap') is a mound to the north of the altar (vedi or mahāvedi; Sen 1982: plans 3,4; Staal 1983:I, endpapers) where the earth required for constructing the altar is put (comm. on Āśv.śr.I.1.4, p.5). According to Staal, it is made in the shape of a turtle (1983:I, 258-9, plate 36B). Other discarded items such as darbha grass, and flowers and so on may also be placed there (comm. on Āp. śr.II.1.6-7). In the building of the fire-altar, for example, instructions are given that any imperfect or discoloured brick should be broken up and thrown on the utkara, the proper place for what is not needed (Śat.Br.VIII.7.2.16).

The pranītā is where specially purified water is kept in a water pot, to the north-east of the altar (comm. on Āśv.śr.I.1.4, p.6; Sen 1982: plan 4; Dumont 1939:xv). It is called pranītā because the water is 'brought forward' by the adhvaryu from the gārhapatya fire to its place by the āhavanīya fire (Śat.Br.I.1.1.12-21).

Tryambaka's version of all this is taken from the Baudhāyana-dharmasūtra and runs as follows. 'The sacred area (tīrtha) of (or

path to) the sacrifice is between the cātvāla and the utkara. (When coming) from the cātvāla, (it lies) between the āhavanīya fire and the utkara. Until the ritual is over, the performers of the sacrifice (i.e. the priests), the sacrificer and his wife should walk there (i.e. only along that path). When the ritual is over, they may walk around in the area where there is no utkara (i.e. on the other side of the enclosure).'11 Tryambaka supplies his own glosses. 'Visamsthite means "as long as the ritual is not completed". Samcarah means "entering and leaving". Samsthite means "once the ritual is completed, that is, afterwards."'12

The quotation is obviously a general one to be taken in so far as it is appropriate. Since the cātvāla is not required for the agnihotra ritual, we may perhaps assume that the pranītā is meant. Sen, in his diagram of the vedi for the agnihotra, darśapūrnamāsa and istis, marks the samcaras of the sacrificer and the priests (Sen 1982: plan 4). That of the patnī is missing. Tryambaka, however, includes

it (cf. Katy.śr.IV.13.13 and comm.).

When dealing with the various instructions concerning the right way to approach the sacrifice, it is important to distinguish between three kinds of entrance or approach. First, there are the two physical entrances into the sacrificial enclosure: the eastern and the southern doors (see above). Within the enclosure lies the vihāra (lit. 'separation', i.e. of the fires), the sacrificial area containing the three fires (comm. on Āśv.śr.I.1.4, p.5). Before going to his place, the sacrificer should sip water from the place prescribed for sipping (ācamana) inside the enclosure but outside the vihāra (Āśv.śr., Ān., frontispiece; Sen 1982: plan 4). The vihāra itself must be approached from the north (Baudh.I.7.15.1). Śat.Br.II.3.3.14 even declares that there is a door on the northern side. But this is misleading: there is no northern entrance to the enclosure; the door is a metaphorical one within it (Bodewitz 1976: 60, note 5). Once inside the enclosure, one should walk between the gārhapatya and āhavanīya fires, thus ap-

^{11.} tathā ca bodhyāyanaḥ // antareṇa cātvālotkarau yajñasya tīrtham // ā cātvālād] āhavanīyotkarau // tataḥ kartāro yajamānaḥ patnī prapadyeran // visaṃsthite // saṃsthite ca saṃcaro 'nutkaradeś[āt] // iti // Sdhp.8r.1-3 (Baudh) < Baudh.1.7.15.15-19 (ca prapadyeran for prapadyeran). Cf. Baudh.Sm.I. 7.14-17 (SS).

^{12.} visamsthite asamāpte karmani[/] samcarah pravešo nirgamaš ca[/] samsthite samāpte karmani pašcād ity arthah // Sdhp.8r.3-4.

proaching the vihāra from the north. In this context, the statement that one who enters from the south will miss the sacrificial 'boat' (literally, see Sat.Br.II.3.3.15-16) means not that the patnī is barred from heaven (because she enters the enclosure from the south) but that once inside the enclosure everyone should approach the vihāra from the north. The third type of 'entrance' is that mentioned here by Tryambaka: the sacred path to the sacrifice from the north-east by which one may come and go during the ritual, the tīrtha or samcara. Following Kātyāyana (patnī ca pūrvavat; Kāty.śr.IV.13. 13), we may assume that this last rule of entry applies to the patnī as it does to her husband (patny api yajamānavad eva samcarena praviśya; comm.).

Which wife is the patnī?

Tryambaka evidently assumes that the patnī should be present at the sacrifice, both for the morning and the evening rituals (cf. Āp.śr.VI.5.1; contrast Baudh.sr.III.4.8-9; Mān.śr.I.6.2.16). After the two rulings already dealt with above (see notes 1,3), his next concern is the question of which wife should be accorded this privilege. Such a problem only arises in a polygamous household.

In fact, although monogamy is usually presented as the ideal, polygamy seems always to have been practised, especially among royal or noble (i.e. wealthy) families. There are many references to it in the Rgveda. R.V.X.145, for example, is intended as a charm to wean the husband's affections away from a co-wife (cf. also R.V.X. 159; A.V.III.18). Sat.Br.XIII.4.1.9 refers to the four wives of the king, all of whom (including the pālāgalī, the low-born wife) have a part to play at the sacrifice (see above). Baudh.I.8.16.1-5 declares that a brahmin may marry four wives (i.e. one of each vama), a kṣatriya three, a vaiṣya two, and a ṣūdra one; and then proceeds to discuss the mixture of caste that would result (cf. Manu III.13, v.14 refutes this; Vas.I.24-5).

Yet Āp.II.5.11.12 forbids a man to take a second wife as long as the first is able to produce children and perform her part in the religious sacrifice. Verse 13 adds that if the first wife is deficient in these two important respects, then he may take another wife, as long as he does so before the sacrificial fires are kindled (prāg agnyādheyāt). For Manu IX.81, the major point at issue is the wife's ability to bear sons: if she is barren (vandhyā), she may be superseded in the eighth year; if her children all die (mṛtaprajā), in

the tenth; if she bears only daughters (strījananī), in the eleventh (cf. the tenth, twelfth or fifteenth years respectively, Trik.III. 84a-5). He adds, however, that a disagreeable wife (apriyavādinī) should be superseded at once (cf. Trik.III.85b). The Smṛticandrikā puts the question in its religious perspective. Rejecting the views of Āp.II.5.11.12-13, Devanṇabhaṭṭa quotes 'another smṛti'. If a wife is barren or produces only daughters, if she is past menstruation (vigatārtavā), diseased (vyādhitā) or insane (unmattā), then she may be abandoned. But if she is innocent of any serious crime (aduṣṭā; glossed by Kull. on Manu VIII.388 as atipātakādidoṣarahita'), then she should be abandoned only in sexual terms (tīrthatah; glossed by Dev. as yonitah) and not in matters of religion (na tu dharmatah; Sm.C.II. p.439-40). The institution of polygamy may therefore continue without endangering the apparently monogamous requirements of religious ritual.

Tryambaka's assumption here that polygamy is the norm reinforces my earlier suggestion that his treatise was intended primarily for a prosperous ksatriya court (see pp.19-20). Certainly, the custom is unknown among the brahmin ritualists of the Apastamba tradition in Tamil Nadu both today and in the recent past (Smith 1984:133-4). It is interesting, therefore, that Tryambaka does not discuss the important question of whether the ksatriya may sacrifice

at all. For it is by no means obvious that he may.

Āp.śr.VI.15.10, for example, declares that a priest may not perform the agnihotra sacrifice for a kṣatriya (na rājanyasya juhuyāt). Instead, the latter should send food to a brahmin at the time of the sacrifice (or before he himself has eaten; mukhataḥ, Hir.śr.III.7.19, p.357; cf. Dumont 1939:88) to symbolise the ritual (Āp.śr.VI.15.11). However, if a kṣatriya performs the soma sacrifice and speaks the truth (yo vā somayājī satyavādī), then the priest may perform the agnihotra for him (Āp.śr.VI.15.13; Hir.śr.III.7.19,p.357). Mān.śr.I.6.1.54 explains that the agnihotra sacrifice may be performed for a kṣatriya if he observes religious law (dhārmukasya); if not, it should be performed only on new- and full-moon days (parvasv itarasya); either way, the kṣatriya should send food to a brahmin daily to represent the sacrifice.

This exclusion of the ksatriya is predictable. According to the Kāthakasamhitā, there is no agnihotra for the ksatriya because he ignores religious observances and takes life (avratyo hi sa hanti; Kāṭh,Saṃ,VI.6,p.56). The reasons given by the Maitrāyaṇīsamhitā

are that the kṣatriya is engaged in impure actions (avajñiyam amedhvam carati), eats food which should not be eaten (atyanannam), and defeats the brahmin (jināti brāhmanam; Mait.1.8.7. p. 126). On new- and full-moon days, however, he keeps his observances and thus may perform the agnihotra. On the other days, he should give food to a brahmin. For the brahmin is Agni: what is eaten by the brahmin is sacrificed to Agni (Kāth.Sam.VI.6.p.56). Bodewitz discusses this idea of the brahmin as the recipient of the sacrificial offering (1973:223, note 14). I shall consider the importance of the atitihipūjā for the ksatriya householder in section IIC, pp. 183-210. For the moment, we need only note two apparently contradictory points. First, Tryambaka assumes the practice of polygamy, a custom normally associated with ksatriyas, thereby implying a predominantly ksatriya court. Secondly, he advocates the twice-daily agnihotra sacrifice without qualification or proviso regarding the ksatriya lifestyle.

Problems relating to polygamy and sacrificial ritual date back a long way. The pūrvamīmāmsakas, for example, discuss whether or not the term patnī should be given in the dual or plural to coincide with the actual number of the sacrificer's wives. As Sabara explains on Jai.IX.3.20, a text used in new- and full-moon sacrifices instructs one to 'attire the wife' (patnim sannahya). If the sacrificer has more than one wife, should he employ the modification $(\bar{u}ha)$ of number in order to make the singular reference dual or plural? Jaimini rules that there should be no modification (avikārah; Jai. IX. 3.20). Śabara explains that the term patni is used merely to indicate the sacrificer's assistant and is not intended as a reference to the number of his wives (na cātra dvitvam bahutvam vā vivaksyate). Even in the case of a modified sacrifice in which more than one wife participates, there should be no modification of the text (Jai.IX.3.21 and Sab.). Thus, however many wives an individual man may have, for the purpose of religious ritual the sacrificer has only one patnī.

I have already discussed the views of Jaimini and Pāṇini regarding the definition of $patn\bar{i}$ (section IIB, pp.107-15). Only the wife who shares in the sacrifice and its rewards with her husband may be called $patn\bar{i}$. All other wives are merely $j\bar{a}y\bar{a}$ ('one who gives birth') or $bh\bar{a}ry\bar{a}$ ('one who is to be supported or maintained', presumably because she bears children). In fact, throughout his treatise on the religious duties of women, Tryambaka adheres to Pāṇini's rule, using the word $patn\bar{i}$ only in connection with the sacrifice. For, in

the context of a largely polygamous court society, it is too limiting a term. He usually prefers the most general terms such as strī, nārī and yoṣit, words which do not distinguish between 'woman' and 'wife' (but which in the context of Tryambaka's approach can only mean the latter; see section III). Words denoting an unmarried woman (e.g. kanyā, 'daughter', 'unmarried girl') appear rarely, as in the description of Pārvatī as 'daughter of the Himalayas' (section 1, p. 30, note 2). Words carrying associations of chastity (e.g. satī), devotion (e.g. pativratā) and the 'good fortune' associated with marriage (e.g. sumangalī, saubhāgyavatī) are more common; as are those denoting the negative aspects of the 'unwifely' woman (e.g. pumścalī, 'one who runs after men', a loose woman; cf. section III, p. 248, note 9). In the context of the fire ritual, however, Tryambaka is concerned not so much with definition as with the practical problems of a polygamous household. For detailed rules are laid down regarding precedence among wives.

Tryambaka explains. 'If a man has many wives, the worship of fire should be performed only by the senior wife.' 13

Jyesthā (lit. 'first, 'best', 'eldest') means the wife that a man marries first (jyesthā prathamodhā; Medh. on Manu IX.122). In discussions concerning the precedence of either the wives themselves or of their sons (e.g. in matters of inheritance), the first or senior wife is usually contrasted with any subsequent or junior wife (paścād ūdhā kanisthā; Medh. on Manu IX.122). The reason is clear. The wife who is married first participates in the kindling of the sacred fires. She thus becomes associated with the religious rites celebrated in them (Ap.II.11.14; Sm.C.II.p.438). A wife who is married subsequently, once the sacred fires are already established, is therefore deemed a 'second (dvitīyā; Sm.C.II.p. 439, Viṣṇu) or 'junior' (kanisthā) wife. The first wife is thus the legitimate one, married with full ceremony, and both intended and required to participate in her husband's religious obligations (prathamā dharmapatnī syād; Sm.C.II.p.439, Kāty.; cf. Trik. III.93). She is usually of the same varna as her husband (cf. Manu III.12). His religious duty fulfilled, a man may then remarry for more personal reasons such as sexual pleasure (dvitīyā rativardhinī; Sm.C.II.p.439, Kāty.). Kātyāyana adds that the rewards of any subsequent union

^{13.} agniśuśrūsanam bahubhāryasya jyesthayaiva kartavyam // Sdhp.8r. 5-6. Cf. Vis.Sm.26.1.

are 'seen' or obvious (dṛṣṭam eva phalam); but, unlike the first marriage, such a union produces no 'unseen' or otherworldly effect (nādṛṣṭam upapadyate; Sm.C.II.p.439, Kāty.). According to one of the three views put forward by the Trikāṇḍamaṇḍana, a wife married for pleasure has no entitlement (adhikāra) to the sacrifice (Trik.I.44b, see above). It follows that junior wives need not be of the same varṇa as their husband.

It is evidently assumed that the first wife will be of the same varna as her husband. If this is not the case, however, the term ivestha cannot be applied to the wife married first. For varna is more important than timing (cf. section IIC, pp. 165-6, note 12.) As Manu IX.85 explains, if twice-born men marry women of different varnas, then seniority (jyaisthyam), honour (pūjā) and living quarters (vesman) should be allocated according to varna (tāsām varnakramena). The jvesthā is thus the first wife of the same varna as her husband. For only that wife is entitled to attend to her husband's personal needs (śarīraśuśrūsām) and to participate in the daily religious rituals (dharmakāryam va naityakam; Manu IX.86). If a man has several wives of the same varna, then he should offer sacrifice with the 'eldest' among them, that is, with the one he married first (jyesthayā saha; Vis. Sm.26.1). However, if he has several wives of different varnas, he should offer sacrifice with one of the same varna as himself, even if she is the 'youngest' or most recently married wife of all (kanisthayāpi; Vis.Sm.26.2).

Tryambaka continues. According to Yājnavalkya, 'if a man has a wife of the same varna (as himself), then he should not ask any other (wife not of the same varna) to perform this religious duty. If he has several wives of the same varna (as himself), then no-one except the senior wife (should be appointed) in religious rites.'14

Several possibilities are hinted at here. Ideally, the patnī is of the same varna as the sacrificer. Thus anyone who foolishly (mohāt) appoints a wife of a lower varna to perform the joint sacrifice when the wife of equal varna is alive is held in the same contempt as a cāndāla (Manu IX.87 and Rāgh.); or as a brahmin-killer (Sm.C.II. p.438, Kāty.); and his acts will bear no fruit (Sm.C.II.p.439, Viṣṇu). If he has more than one wife of the same varna, then he should appoint the most senior among them (jyeṣthaiva sahadharma-

^{14.} tathā ca yājāavalkyaḥ // satyām anyām savarnāyām dharmakāryam na kārayet / savarnāsu vidhau dharm[y]e jyeṣṭhayā na vinetarā // iti // Sdhp. 8r.7-8 (Yājñ.)<Yājñ.I.88; Sm.C.II.p.437-8; Par.M.I.ii.p.115 (vinetarāḥ).

cārinī; Apar. on Yājñ.I.88). The implication—spelled out by Vis.Sm.26.3 — is that if there is no wife of the same varna (samānavarnāyā abhāve), then he should appoint as patnī a wife from the next varna (anantarayaiva). Nandapandita explains that a brahmin may appoint a ksatriya wife, a ksatriya may appoint a vaisya wife, This ruling also holds in times of difficulty (āpadi ca; glossed by Nand. to mean 'if the wife of the same varna has not returned in time or if a serious accident has befallen her').

But on no account may a śūdra wife play the part of patnī (Vis.Sm. 26.4; Manu III.14). For a woman of 'the black varna' (krsnavarnā vā rāmā) — that is, a śūdra woman — is intended for sexual pleasure (ramanāyaiva) and not for religious ritual (Vas.XVIII,18; Apar. on Yājñ.I.88; Sm.C.II.p.437; Par.M.I.ii.p.116). I have already noted that the wife of a śūdra has no right to the title or office of patnī because her husband is not entitled to offer sacrifice (see section II B, p. 110). In the case cited here, however, the right of the twice-born husband is not at issue. Yet the śūdra wife still may not act as patnī. Indeed, the gods and ancestors will not accept any offering in which she has taken part (Manu III.18). For the dharmapatnī must be without fault (nirdoṣā; Sm.C.II.p.438, Dakṣa); and the śūdra woman is demonstrably (i.e by virtue of her birth) at fault. So degraded is she, that she will demote the brahmin who marries her to her own level of śūdra (Manu III.15-19). We must conclude, therefore, that -at least in the context of religious ritual, and with reference to the śūdra woman alone — the widespread idea (noted in section I) that the varna of a wife is defined by that of her husband 'just as a river merges with the sea' no longer applies.

Conversely, if the jyesthā is at fault (dose satī; Sm.C.II.p.438, Daksa), she can no longer be the dharmapatnī: she must be replaced. Tryambaka explains. 'If the jyesthā is at fault, then (the ritual duty) must be performed by a junior wife. 15 He quotes Kātyāyana to the same effect. 'If a man has many wives, then such rituals as the agnihotra should be performed with a wife of the same varna as himself; if there are many of the same varna, then with the senior wife

as long as she is not at fault.'16

15. jyesthā garhitā cet kanisthayaiva kartavyam // Sdhp.8r.8.

^{16.} tad āha kātyāyanah // agnihotrādisusrūsām bahubhāryah savarnayā / kārayet [t]ad bahutve ca jyesthayā garhitā na cet // iti // Sdhp.8r.8-10 (Kāty.) < Sm.M.I.p.157 (° śuśrūsā for °śuśrūsām, Kāty.); Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1109 (agni-

Two points may be made here. First, it is unclear when a wife is sufficiently 'at fault' to be disqualified from taking part in the joint sacrifice. We have already established that she may be rejected sexually for any number of reasons ranging from barrenness and disease to insanity, but none of these bar her from the joint sacrifice (Sm.C.II.p.440). The implication is that only a serious crime (atipātakādidosa; Kull. on Manu VIII.388) can do that. The Trikāndamandana suggests infidelity and hostility to one's husband (vyabhicāravatī ... dvesinī drohinī; Trik.I.79c); alternatively, sexual intercourse with his student or teacher, or (deliberately) aborting a foetus (sisyagām gurugām garbhahantrim; Trik.III.89). Secondly, the replacement should ideally be of the same varna as the husband. Neither Tryambaka nor Kātvāvana suggests that even an unsuitable jyesthā may be replaced by a wife of a lower varna. However, an atipātaka crime must constitute a time of distress or difficulty (āpadi; cf. Vis.Sm.26.3). Under these circumstances, the replacement may be of the next varna down.

If there are several junior wives of the same varna, however, how should the choice be made? According to Tryambaka, 'when there are several junior wives, (the religious ritual) should be performed by one who is the mother of sons (lit. "heroes"). If several junior wives have borne sons, then it should be performed by one who is obedient to (her husband's) command, full of good qualities, and solicitous (dakṣa; lit. "skilful", "clever", "industrious"). '17 In support of the latter ruling, Tryambaka quotes Kātyāyana. 'From among those of his wives who have given birth to sons, he should appoint one who is obedient to (his) command, solicitous, gentle-voiced and pure (in character). '18

šiṣṭādi° for agnihotrādi°, bahutvam cej for bahutve ca, Kāty.); Apar. on Yājñ.I.88 (agnišiṣṭādi for agnihotrādi, tu jyeṣṭhā yā for ca jyeṣṭhayā, Kāty.); Par.M.I.ii.p.117, Kāty..

^{17.} kanisthāsv api vīrasuvaiva kartavyam / vīrasuvo 'pi bahvyaś cet tāsām madhye ājñāsampādinī guņavatī dakṣā ca yā tayaiva kartavyam // Sdhp.8r. 10-8v.1

^{18.} tathā ca kātyāyanaḥ // tathā vīrasuvām āsām ājñāsampādinī ca yā/dakṣā priyamvadā suddhā tām atra viniyojayet // Sdhp.8v.1-2 (Kāty.) < Sm.M.I.p.157 (Kāty.); Kāty. Sm.19.4 (yā vā syād vīrasūr for tathā vīrasuvām; priyā for ca yā; Jīv.); Gobh.Sm.I.5.1 (Ān., as Jīv.); Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1109 (yā vā syād vīrasūr āsām, Kāty.); Apar. on Yājñ.I.88 (as Dh.kośa); Par.M.I. ii.p.117 (as Dh.kośa, Kāty.).

However, Tryambaka continues: 'if that (wife who has been appointed) is unable to perform the various services (śuśrūṣādi) (required of her) every day, then each (wife) should do them in turn day by day in order of seniority. (Alternatively,) if the one (who has been appointed for that day) is unable (to take care of everything required of her) within the one day, then all the wives should take part: they should divide the work (between them), each according to her (particular) knowledge (or expertise).' 19 As evidence for these rulings, Tryambaka quotes Kātyāyana's considerably abbreviated version of the same ideas. 'If (one wife) is unable (to do everything every day), then (they should all take it) in turn; according to the (nature of the) work and in order of seniority. If (one wife) is unable (to do everything within one day), then they should (all) do (it) at once, dividing (the work between them) according to their expertise.' 20

It seems that Tryambaka is now suggesting that all the wives of the sacrificer may assist their husband in the joint ritual. This is certainly one of the three views mentioned in Trik.1.43-4. Given Tryambaka's previous rulings, however, it seems an unlikely conclusion for him to reach. I suggest that he is no longer discussing which wife should assist her husband in the joint sacrifice. Instead, the general term śuśrūṣādi probably covers all the duties that might come under the heading of strūdharma, whether religious or domestic (see section V, pp. 312-13). In this more general sense, then, the wives in a polygamous household should share the available work between them in accordance with both their individual talents and the accepted rules of precedence. In fact, the rule is vague enough to allow for almost any eventuality. (For a vivid autobiographical account by a co-wife of life in a joint family today, see Bennett 1983:187-200.)

19. pratidinam ekā śuśrūṣādi kartum aśaktā cet tadā dinakramena yathājyaiṣṭhyam śuśrūṣām kuryāt // ekasmin dine yady ekā kṛṭṣnam kartum aśaktā tadā sarvās tat karma yathājñānam vibhajya kuryuh // Sdhp.8v.2-4.

^{20.} tathā ca kātyāyanah // dinakrame yathākarma yathājyaiṣthyam ašaktitah / vibhajya sahasā kuryur yathājñānam ašaktitah // iti // Sdhp.8v.4-6 (Kāty.) < Kāty.Sm.19.5 (dinatrayeṇa vā for dinakrame yathā°; svašaktitah for ašaktitah; saha vā for sahasā; ca šāstravat for ašaktitah; Jīv.); Sm.M.I. p.157 (dinakrameṇa vā for dinakrame yathā°; °jyeṣtham for °jyaiṣthyam, Kāty.); Gobh.Sm.II.160 (as Sm.M. except svašaktitah for ašaktitah; saha vā for sahasā; ašāthyavat for ašaktitah; Ān.). Cf. Dh. kośa I.ii.p.1109; Apar. on Yājñ.I.88; Par.M.I.ii.p.117 (all attrib. to Kāty.).

At which point should the wife participate?

According to Tryambaka, the ritual 'adorning of the fire' (agnyalankaranam) — which he has already established as the wife's part in the ceremony (section IIB, pp. 107-15) — should be performed immediately after such activities as sweeping round (the fires; parisamūhanādy°). '21 His evidence for this is a quotation attributed to Baudhāyana. 'The (learned) teachers declare that one should always (i.e. when oblations are offered) sweep around (the fires), sprinkle water around (them), strew darbha grass around (them), pour water around (them), put fuel on (them), and (then) adorn (the hearth).'22

These are all preliminary rituals to be performed after the fires have been lit (uddharanam; see below) and before the central ritual of offering cow's milk into the fire. Parisamuhana is the ritual of wiping with a wet hand three times around each of the three fires in turn, moving from the north-east to the north and keeping one's right side towards the fire, while reciting mantras (Śānkh.gr.I.7.11; Aśv.gr.I.3.1. and comm.). According to some, it is performed either before or after the agnihotra offering; according to others, it is performed both before and after it (Ap. śr. VI.3.1-3; Hir. śr. III.7. 16, p.341). Tryambaka evidently assumes it should be done beforehand. Paryuksana is the ritual sprinkling of water with mantras around each of the fires, again going from north-east to north (Aśv.śr.II.2.11-13 and comm.; Mān.śr.I.6.1.10). Paristarana is the ritual scattering of darbha grass round the fires as in the darsapūrņamāsa sacrifice; that is, so that the grasses to the east and west point north, and those to the north and south point east (Katy.śr.IV. 13.15 and comm.; Ap.śr. VI.3.5; Hir.śr. III.7.16, p.341; Mān.śr. I. 6.1.11). Parisecana is the ritual pouring of water around the fires (Ap.śr.VI.5.4, Rudradatta comm.). Upasamādhāna is the act of placing fuel on the fires to ensure that they are burning properly. In Baudhāyana's list of preliminary ritual acts, that of adorning the hearth comes after these.

It is clear, even from this brief quotation, that Tryambaka's

^{21.} agnyalankaranam ca parisamūhanādyantaram kartavyam // Sdhp.8v.6.

^{22.} tathā ca bodhāyanaḥ // sarvatra parisamūhanaparyukṣaṇaparistara [ṇa]-pariṣecanopasamādhānālankaraṇam ity ācāryāḥ // iti // Sdhp.8v.6-7 (Baudh.)

emphasis is quite different from that of Baudhayana. The latter merely lists the various actions leading up to the offering of milk without indicating which should be performed by whom. Tryambaka, having defined the wife's participation in the ritual as alankāra, uses Baudhāyana's quotation to demonstrate when she should play her part.

According to some, however, all that is required of the patnī is her presence. Kāty.śr. IV. 13.13, quoted above (section IIB, p. 121). explains that the patni enters the sacrificial enclosure and takes her place in the vihāra in the same way as her husband does. But the paddhati on the commentary remarks that, according to oral tradition (sampradāya), the patnī does nothing else beyond taking her seat (upavešanavyatiriktam patnī kim api na karoti; Weber edn., p. 404). Now even the act of decorating the hearth is denied her. Moreover, as Tryambaka turns his attention to the issue of when the patnī should take her seat, he too seems to have accepted this even more restrictive definition of her role. For there is in fact no further reference to her participation in the ritual.

Tryambaka continues. 'Apastamba declares that the patnī should take her seat in her own place immediately after the ritual of milking.'23 The quotation reads as follows. 'The agnihotra should be performed by a man together with his wife; the wife should take her seat in her own place.'24 'However, Baudhayana maintains that the wife should take her seat immediately after the fire has been taken (from the garhapatya fire to light the other two fires).'25 The quotation for this statement reads: 'the patnī should be present at the

evening and the morning (sacrifice).'26

The patnī's 'own place' (svāyatana) is the seat assigned to her for the duration of the ritual, to the south-west of the garhapatya fire (Ap. śr. II. 5.2; Baudh. I. 7.15.26; Sen 1982: plan 4).

The ritual of milking (dohana) is described in some detail in the śrautasūtras. According to some, the agnihotra cow may not be

- 23. dohanānantaram svāyatane patnyupavešanam āhāpastambah // Sdhp. 8v.8.
- 24. patnīvad asyāgnihotram bhavati // svāyatane patny upaviśati // Sdhp. 8v.8-9 (Ap.) < Ap. sr. VI.5.1-2. Cf. note 34, below.
- 25. bodhāyanas tu [/] uddharanānantaram evopaveśanam āha//Sdhp.8v.9 26. sāyam prātar evaiṣā patny anvāste// iti// Sdhp.8v.9-10 (Baudh.) < Baudh.śr.III.4.8.Cf. section II.D, p.234, note 2.

milked by a śūdra (Kāty.śr.IV.14.1); according to others, it may (Āp.śr.VI.3.11-14). According to some, the cow should be accompanied by a male calf (pumvatsa; Kāty.śr.IV.14.1); according to others, the calf may be female (strīvatsa; Śāṅkh.śr.II.8.6-7). The cow is placed to the south of the āhavanīya enclosure with its head facing north, north-east or east. The calf is brought to it, then taken away. Finally, the cow is milked. A special earthenware vessel (agnihotrasthālī; defined Āp.śr.VI.3.7 and comm.) is used to collect the milk (Kāty.śr.IV.14.1 and comm.; Āp.śr.VI.3.15).

Uddharanam is the ritual lighting of the ahavanīya fire with a brand or coals taken from the gārhapatya (gārhapatyād āhavanīyasyoddharanam; Kāty.śr.IV.13.2). It is performed by the priest and is the first of the series of rituals that form the agnihotra sacrifice. Soon afterwards, the sacrificer takes his place (Kāty.śr.IV.13.12). The patnī enters the vihāra at the same juncture and along the same path (Kāty.śr.IV.13.13). According to the Baudhāyanaśrautasūtra, before the cow is milked, the priest should enflame the garhapatya fire, transport the flame to the āhavanīya, and arrange the sacrificial utensils (Baudh.śr.III.4.1-6). In this text, however, there is no clear instruction concerning when the patnī should take her place. The sūtra quoted by Tryambaka (Baudh.śr.III.4.8; see note 26) merely makes the general statement that her presence is required at the sacrifice. Moreover, Tryambaka fails to mention the following sūtra which seriously undermines this ruling: that is, according to some, she need only attend the evening sacrifice (sāyamsāyam ity eke; Baudh.śr. III. 4.9), and not the morning one at all. However, he does quote it in his section on evening rituals (see section IID, note 2). Mān.śr.I.6.2.16 agrees (sāyam patny anvāste na prātah). In the Apastambaśrautasūtra, on the other hand, the instructions referring to the patni are given after both the uddharana and dohana rituals have been described (Ap.śr.VI.5.1-2) Sdhp.8v.8-9, note 24). But this is not exclusive to the patnī. For in Ap.śr.VI.5.3, we read that the sacrificer too must make his way to his seat in the prescribed way. Thus both sacrificer and wife are present for the crucial homa ritual

Tryambaka concludes. 'The important thing is that both (husband and wife) should be present for the homa offering.'27

^{27.} home tübhayoh sannidhānam mukham // Sdhp.8v.10.

How important is the presence of either husband or wife?

Tryambaka begins with the question of the husband's absence. 'If the sacrificer is not present then his wife certainly should be,'28 He quotes Kātyāyana. 'If both husband and wife are absent, the sacrifice may not be performed by a priest. For when both (husband and wife) are absent, the offering is worthless.'29 'But if a brahmin has business to take care of, he may assign (the responsibility of) the fire to his wife, appoint a priest (to conduct the ritual), and then leave home. But he should not stay away for long unnecessarily.'30

The first point to notice here is that the religious obligation to perform the daily agnihotra ritual does not require a man to stay at home all the time. Indeed, the absence of the householder was a common enough occurrence for rulings to be made about it. This becomes particularly obvious when we realize what is meant by 'leaving home'. Trik.III.62-4 and 66 define it variously as going to the outskirts of the village (gramantam), going beyond the village boundary (sīmāntam), crossing a river that flows directly into the sea (nadīm ambudhigāminīm), and so on. Such constricting definitions make it necessary for the husband to be allowed to 'leave home'. The resulting rulings lay down what constitutes a good reason for going; and what precautions he should take. Manu IX. 74, for example, declares that a man who has business to attend to (kāryavān) away from home should see to the maintenance of his wife while he is away; for even a virtuous woman is corrupted when distressed for the lack of it (avrttikarsitā). A man might journey abroad for any number of reasons related to his individual fulfilment (puruṣārtha, Medh.; as opposed to reasons relating to the sacrifice, kratvartha). Manu IX.76 mentions several: religious reasons

^{28.} yajamānāsannidhāne patnyāvasyam sannihitayā bhavitavyam // Sdhp. 8v.10-9r. 1.

^{29.} tathā ca kātyāyanaḥ//asamakṣaṃ tu dampatyor hotavyaṃ na rtvigādinā/dvayor apy asamakṣaṃ tu bhaved dhutam anarthakam//Sdhp.9r.1-2 (Kāty.) < Sm.C.II.p.424 (Kāty); Par.M.I.i.p.312 (Kāty.); Gobh.Sm.III.1 (hi for tu; Ān.); Kāty.Sm.20.1 (Jīv.; as Ān.). Cf. note 40.

^{30.} niksipyāgnim svadāresu parikalpya rtvijam tathā/ pravaset kāryavān vipro na vṛthaiva ciram vaset // Sdhp.9r.2-3 (Kāty.) < Sm.C.II.p.424 (vṛthaiva na for na vṛthaiva, Kāty.); Par.M.I.i.p.312 (as Sm.C. except parikalpyā° for parikalpya°; Kāty.); Kāty.Sm.19.1 (as Sm.C. except kvacit for vaset; Jīv.); Gobh.Sm.II.156 (as Jīv. except parikalpyā°; mṛṣaiva for vṛthaiva).

(dharmakāryārtham); to acquire learning (vidyārtham); to gain fame or ensure a good reputation (yaśo 'rtham); and for the sake of pleasure (kāmārtham; glossed by Kull. as bhāryāntaropabhogārtham, 'to enjoy the favours of another woman', or perhaps 'another wife').

Manu's concern is to lay down rules for how long a woman should wait for her husband to return. Tryambaka, in his section on the duties of the wife whose husband is away, explains how such a woman should dress and behave (see p. 291). Here, however, he is concerned with the arrangements that a man must make regarding the daily fire ritual if he has to go away.

Tryambaka's emphasis is quite different from Manu's. While the latter decrees that a deserted wife should wait for her husband for three, six or eight years (Manu IX.76), Tryambaka insists that he should not stay away long without good reason. While Manu and his commentators list the reasons a man might have to go away, Tryambaka rules that the only acceptable reason for such a journey is to earn money in order to pay the costs of the daily fire sacrifice. Moreover, the freedom to leave home to earn this money applies only to the man, never to his wife.

Tryambaka explains. 'This injunction regarding leaving home is acceptable (only) for the purpose of earning money and only in relation to a man. In the case of the wife (patnī), since she does not (or is not expected to) earn money, she need not leave home.'31 Tryambaka uses the word patnī here to suit the context of the wife who participates in the joint sacrifice. The ruling itself, however, would clearly apply to any wife. Tryambaka does not consider the question of the unsupported wife; Manu does. If a man goes away without providing for his wife in his absence, she may earn her own living by 'blameless handicrafts' (silpair agarhitair; Manu IX.75). Tryambaka, writing from within the sheltered confines of a court, evidently does not envisage the possibility of a wife needing to earn money for herself. But if such a thing were necessary, like Manu, Tryambaka would undoubtedly expect her to earn her living within the home. According to the Trikandamandana, however, a wife may travel abroad as long as either her husband or one of her co-wives is tending the sacred fires (Trik.III.67; cf. III.58,61).

^{31.} ayam ca pravāsavidhiḥ / arthārthatayā puruṣasyaivānumataḥ // patnyās tu [/] arthārjanābhāvān na pravāsaḥ // Sdhp.9r.3-4.

Tryambaka continues with an unattributed quotation taken from the *Trikānḍamaṇḍana*. 'But (it is otherwise) for a man. It is reasonable for a man who performs the (daily) *agnihotra* ritual to leave home in order to earn money, because the sacrifice can only take place if there is money (to pay for it). But he should not go away for (other reasons) such as going on a pilgrimage (tīrthādyartham).'32 In fact, 'leaving home for the purpose of going on a pilgrimage is forbidden on account of this ruling that (staying at) home and (attending to) all the duties of the household(er) is the best thing for the man who is entitled to perform sacrificial rituals. Thus the ancient sages forbid the man who is established in the householder stage of life to go (on any pilgrimage) to a sacred place.'33

Tryambaka's description of the sacrifice that can only take place if there is sufficient money is obviously a reference to the śrauta fires (see pp.103-5). These are established, not at marriage like the aupāsana fire, but when a man already has a son and is wealthy enough to be able to afford to pay the priests. Vas.VIII.9 explains that a man who has 'enough (wealth) to set up the (three) fires' (alam agnyādheyāya) should become an agnihotrin. And if he has 'enough' to cover the expenses of a soma sacrifice (alam ca somāya), then he should perform that too (Vas.VIII.10). Alam is glossed by Devannabhatta as samartha: if, that is, he has the 'capacity' or 'means' (Sm.C.II.p.417). With regard to the soma sacrifice, this 'capacity' or 'means' is defined by Manu XI.7 as having enough food to support one's dependants (bhrtyavrttaye) for three years or more (traivārsikam bhaktam . . . adhikam vāpi; cf. Yājñ.I.124; Sm.C.II.p.417-18). With regard to setting up the śrauta fires, Devannabhatta explains that a man must be wealthy (dhane sati), not poor (nirdhanah, Prajāpati; alpadhanah, Dev.; Sm.C.II. p.420). This is undoubtedly what Tryambaka means when he rules that a man may leave home in order to earn money for the sacrifice. Only if the sacrifice itself is endangered by the lack of money to pay

^{32.} purusasyāpi [/] dhanāny arjayitum yuktah pravāso hy agnihotrinah / dhanair hi sambhaved ijyā tīrthādyartham tu na vrajet // Sdhp.9r.4-5<Trik. 1.96b-97a.

^{33.} yasyeştidharmeşv adıkāritāsti varam grham grhadharmās ca sarve / evam grhasthāsramasamsthitasya tīrthe gatih pūrvatarair niṣiddhā // iti vacanena tīrthārtham pravāsah pratiṣiddhyate // Sdhp.9r.4-7.

expenses may the householder (i.e. agnihotrin) relinquish his personal responsibility for it, and that only briefly.

Unlike Manu IX.76, Tryambaka does not allow the householder to leave home for the sake of glory or amorous adventures. Even the desire to visit sacred places, such as the Ganges or the Himalayas, is unacceptable. Given the history of the Thanjavur Marathas (see Leslie 1983(2):appendix B), this is curious. For every one of their grandfathers, householders by definition, must have left their homes in Maharashtra to seek their fortunes in the south. Some of them may have taken their wives with them at the outset, but most must have travelled alone, perhaps sending for their wives and families later. This is an important point. For these rules apply only to the householder who leaves home alone. If he takes his wife with him, then he should also take the sacred fires. Husband and wife would thus continue to perform the agnihotra together. But if he travels alone, the fires must remain at home under the guardianship of his wife; and in that case, he should only leave home in order to earn money to pay for the sacrifice. Clearly, those engaged in or accompanying military expeditions a generation or two earlier took little notice of such requirements. They were similarly untroubled by rulings that one's right to sacrifice is destroyed by living in another country, for example, in such barbarous places as Bengal and Kalinga (e.g. Trik.I.164).

The Smrticandrikā makes some allowance in this direction. According to Paithīnasī, if one's sacrificial duties are interrupted as a result of being harassed by enemies (pīdyamānasya śatrubhih), then one is allowed two months' grace (Sm.C.II.p.436). Perhaps by Tryambaka's time, in the uneasy peace of Mughal supervision, such a proviso was no longer necessary. Perhaps by then the rulings of pious brahmins were more firmly reinstated. Or perhaps Tryambaka merely believed they should be. Alternatively, the ruling that a kṣatriya (and a vaiśya; comm. on Āśv.śr.II.1.3-5) might send food to a brahmin in lieu of the ritual may have been made precisely to allow him more time to attend to his main occupation (see Pp. 122-3)

Tryambaka returns to an earlier statement and quotation concerning the patnī (see note 24 above). 'With reference to the wife, however, Āpastamba's ruling that "the agnihotra should be (performed) by a man together with his wife" defines the close connection tion (sambandha) of the wife to the sacrifice. She should therefore

never abandon the agnihotra, nor stay elsewhere.'34

The plural term, āpastambācāryaiḥ (see notes 34, 44) requires some clarification. Its use here, as in most late texts, indicates not several 'teachers' but a single authority deserving of special respect. Initially a custom in modern Indian languages (e.g. Marathi, Gujarati), especially with named teachers, this honorific plural percolated back into Sanskrit at a fairly late date (LSJ). Since Tryambaka reserves such respect solely for Āpastamba, this almost certainly means that he belonged to the Āpastambaśākhā of the Krṣṇa-yajurveda tradition (cf. p. 25: Leslie 1983 (2), appendix C).

'Staying elsewhere' means away from home and thus away from the *agnihotra* enclosure and the sacrifice. Tryambaka's point is that there is an essential link between the *patnī* and the sacrifice; more specifically, between the *patnī* and the sacred fires. I shall return to this point below. For the moment, we need only note that the sacrifice may proceed in the absence of the husband but never in the absence of the wife (cf. Trik.III.57-60; but also Trik.III.61).

Tryambaka anticipates the objection that the wife should be allowed to go on pilgrimages. It is certainly true that all over India today large numbers of women embark on long pilgrimages, both for their own and for their families' sakes (cf. Morinis 1984:302); and it seems likely that it was always so. (For a statistical analysis of the purposes of pilgrimage in West Bengal today, see Morinis 1984:312-16; for a more general account of pilgrim motivation throughout India, see Bhardwaj 1983:148-62.) But the practice is condemned most emphatically by Tryambaka.

'According to the scriptures, all the rewards obtained by visiting sacred places are (to be found) in the agnihotra itself.'35 Tryambaka quotes from the Trikāṇḍamaṇḍana. 'Brahmā, Viṣṇu, Siva, Sūrya, cows and brahmins, ancestors and gods, ritual observances, places of pilgrimage and austerities; all these are (to be found) in the agnihotra hall.'36 The quotation continues with three lines of

^{34.} patnyās tu [/] patnīvad asyāgnihotram bhavati (< Āp.sr.VI.5.1) // iti āpastambācāryaiḥ [/] agnihotre patnīsambandhaniyamanāt // agnihotram vihāya kutrāpi na stheyam // Sdhp.9r.7-9 (niyamāt, 'ruling' is corrected in the margin to niyamanāt, 'definition'). Cf. 24.

^{35.} agnihotra eva sarvatīrthaphalāvāpter avagamāc ca // Sdhp.9r.9-10.

^{36.} tathā ca trikāṇḍamaṇḍanaḥ // brahmā viṣṇuḥ śivaḥ sūryo goviprāḥ pitrdevatāḥ / agnihotragṛhe santi vratatīrthatapāṃsi ca // Sdhp.9r. 10-9v.1 (Trik.) < Trik.1.97b-98a.

commentary that qualify the claim. 'But we say that not even all the places of pilgrimage (together) can equal the agnihotra. Or, alternatively, only when a (learned) brahmin has relinquished his right to perform the sacrifice (yajñādhikāre . . . nivrtte) may he wander about visiting sacred places. For the great sages who are by nature without sin have declared that the merit (to be found) in (visiting) a sacred place is the reward of the sacrifice.'37 For, as the Trikāndamandana explains elsewhere, all sacred places reside in the altar itself (sarvāni tīrthāni vasanti vedyām), and all deities may be worshipped in the agnihotra ritual; it is therefore pointless (vyartham) to journey abroad in order to worship any one of these (Trik., prakīrnakānda 27). Interestingly, Morinis' comments on 'the anti-pilgrimage tradition in Hinduism' do not even touch on this orthodox, specifically dharmasastric theme of the rejection of pilgrimage on the grounds of the superiority of the agnihotra ritual; presumably because it has little relevance today (1984:74-6).

The question of going on pilgrimages is raised in two other sections of Tryambaka's treatise. In his rulings on things to be avoided, the practice of going on pilgrimages (tīrthayātra) is included among the six things that cause women and śūdras to fall (strīśūdrapatanāni ṣaṭ; see section IV, note 7). In the section on general behaviour (see p. 273-4), a lengthy passage attributed to Bṛhaspati's praise of Lopāmudrā in the Skandapurāna includes the following. '(The good wife) should stay well away from festivals and public gatherings. She should not go on pilgrimages and so on, or to such things as weddings or public shows.'38 'If a woman wants to bathe in a sacred place (tīrthasnānārthinī), then she should drink the water used to bathe her husband's feet (patipādodakam). For, in the case of a woman, her own husband is superior to even Śankara (Śiva) or Visnu.'39

^{37.} sarvāṇi tīrthāny api cāgnihotratulyāni naiveti vayam vadāmaḥ // yajñā-dhikāre 'py athavā nivṛtte vipras tu tīrthāni paribhramet tu // tīrthe phalam yajñaphalam hi yasmāt prokṭam munīndrair amalasvabhāvaiḥ // iti // Sdhp.9v. 1-3 (Trik.) < '? Not in the anonymous commentary in Calcutta edition of Trik.

^{38.} dūrato varjayed eṣā samājotsavadaršaṇam / na gacchet tīrthayātrādivivāhapreksanādisu // Sdhp.23v.2 (Skānda) < Sk.P.III.2.7.24b-25a.

^{39.} tīrthasnānarthinī nārī patipādodakam pibet / śankarād api viṣnor vā patir eko 'dhikaḥ striyāḥ // Sdhp.23v.10-24r.1 (Skānda) < Sk.P.III.2.7.36 /caiva for nārī; viṣnoh patir evādhikah for viṣnor vā patir eko 'dhikaḥ).

The latter ruling seems to presuppose a brahmin husband, for the water used to give a ritual (as opposed to a 'dirt-removing') bath to the feet of brahmins is traditionally considered purifying, on a par with the waters of the Ganges. Similarly, at a traditional initiation ceremony (when it genuinely indicates the beginning of Vedic education), men and (especially) women come to receive the tīrtha or purifying water used to bathe the initiate's feet. Water is ceremonially dropped onto the child's big toe, collected and given as angusthajala. Nowadays, since most brahmin boys go through the ritual before going to ordinary schools, the water has no such purifying properties. Even fifty years ago, however, orthodox women in Maharashtra still drank the angusthajala of their brahmin husbands (LSJ). According to Lynn Bennett, village women in Nepal still do this before every rice meal (1938:174-5; and a striking photograph of a wife washing her husband's feet before drinking the gora pani or 'foot water', p. 175 and cover; see also section IIC, pp. 221-7).

To return to the Strīdharmapaddhati, the parallel rulings for the husband (in this section) and for the wife (section IV, pp. 273-4), are startlingly different. Both are forbidden to go on pilgrimages but, while the man is directed to find the fruits of pilgrimage in the fire sacrifice, his wife should seek them in the water used to bathe her husband's feet. The difference in the religious spheres of husband and wife could not be more graphically stressed.

Regarding Tryambaka's assertion that a brahmin may indulge in pilgrimages only when he has relinquished his right to perform the sacrifice, this only occurs when he renounces the life of the householder to become a forest hermit or an ascetic. As long as he is a householder, therefore, he will gain greater merit by performing the sacrifice than by any other form of worship. This ruling - given in the masculine, and applied by Tryambaka to the patnī and thus, by extension, to all women - presupposes the aśrama system. According to the ideal classification presented by Manu (i.e. the later samuccaya version), a man should progress from childhood through four temporary stages: Vedic student, householder, forest hermit, and renouncer or ascetic. The artificiality of the system is clear, evidence of the orthodox delight in classification. In fact, as indicated above, early formulations of the theory give the four āśramas as alternatives (Gaut.I.3.1-3,35; Baudh.II.6.11.12-16,27). As the ascetic movement grew, however, it became important to

assimilate the new ideas into the orthodox system. The theory of the four successive stages emerged with renunciation as an integral part at the end of the line (Manu IV.1, VI.33; Olivelle 1974, 1978,1984; cf. section I, pp. 44–5.

But none of this applies to women (cf. Leslie 1980:46ff.; 1983(1): 99 ff.). In all dharmaśāstra texts, women are dealt with outside the framework of aśrama. We have already seen how they were gradually excluded from Vedic studentship (see section I). For men, the third āśrama soon became obsolete (cf. Olivelle 1978:32). For women, it had only ever been a continuation of married life. For, as Manu explains, a man embarking on this stage may either commit his wife to his sons' keeping (putresu . . . niksipya) or take her with him (VI.3). For her, it is simply another form of wifely obedience, not a voluntary renunciation on her own behalf. The fourth asrama was theoretically barred to women as it was to śūdras (cf. Olivelle 1984:113-15). For, according to the rules of dharmaśāstra, only those who had embarked on the first stage of Vedic education could graduate to the fourth. Women were excluded on social grounds too. For renunciation implies independence from family and social control whereas women were seen to be always dependent (Manu V.147-9; Vas. V.1-2; cf. section IV, p. 276, note 9). Apart from women's lack of freedom, the concept of 'female ascetic' is itself an anomaly. For women are so identified with both family life and sexual pleasure that the idea of a woman renouncing these things is (from the orthodox male point of view) a contradiction in terms. Nonetheless, the renunciation of women was a common enough occurrence for there to be frequent rulings against it (e.g. Manu VIII. 363; Yājñ.11.293; Vis.Sm.XXV.12). Tryambaka even includes the female ascetic (pravrajitā, śramanā) among the types of women the virtuous wife should strive to avoid (see pp. 170-2).

In the realm of *dharmaśāstra*, however, a woman may never renounce the household life of her own volition, either to go into the forest as a hermit or to pursue the ascetic life. From the man's point of view, she is the household. Separation from it comes only with death—her own or her husband's—or with disgrace. Only as a widow (cf. Vas.19.29,33-4) or an abandoned woman may she wander from place to place. As a respectable wife, certainly as the privileged *patnī*, she should remain with the sacred fires at home.

Tryambaka returns to the quotation already given above (see note 29) and attributed there to Kātyāyana. 'When both (husband

and wife) are absent, the offering is worthless.' According to Tryambaka, 'the ruling concerning the close connection between the patnī (and the sacred fires of the agnihotra) is equally applicable to the aupāsana ritual since Kātyāyana's statement given above is common (to both).'40

The question of Tryambaka's relative interest in and distinction between the śrauta and gṛhya rituals is discussed above (see pp. 103–5). More important, what is the special relationship between the patnī and the sacred fire or fires? According to Āpastamba, the wife who is present at the kindling of the fires (ādhāne hi satī) becomes linked with the sacrificial rituals performed with them (karmabhiḥ sambadhyate; Āp.II.5.11.14; cf. Sm.C.II.p.438). But what effect does this special link have?

The Smrticandrika discusses the issue at length. According to sruti, those who kindle the sacred fires are cremated with them (āhitāgnibhir dahanti; Sm.C.II.p.441). In theory, this applies to both sacrificer and wife. As Apastamba explains, whoever dies first is cremated with the three śrauta fires of the agnihotra; whoever dies second is cremated with the single aupäsana fire (Sm.C.II.p.443). In fact, however, if the patnī dies first, the sacrificer may either promote an existing second wife or remarry, rekindling the fires for his second patnī (punah parinīya tayā sahādhānam; Sm.C.II.p.441). According to Yājñ.I.89, he should do so without delay (avilamhayan; śīghram eva, Mit.). For a man should not remain for even a day without an āśrama (anāśramī . . . kṣaṇam ekam api, Dakṣa I.10; dinam ekam api, Mit. on Yājñ.I.89). A widower can, of course, become a renouncer (Baudh.II.10.17.4) but the householder's life is always preferred. In dharmasāstra, there is the constant suggestion that only those unable to be householders (such as the crippled or impotent) should 'renounce' the householder way (cf. Olivelle 1984:34). But before the widower may resume the householder's sacrificial duties, his patnī and the sacred fires associated with her must be burned up together, and replaced. It follows that a junior wife may never be cremated with the sacred fires while the patnī is still alive (Sm.C.II.p.440, Visnu; Mit. on Yājñ.I.89).

^{40.} ayam ca patnīsambandhaniyama aupāsane 'pi tulyaḥ // dvayor apy asamakṣam tu bhaved dhutam anarthakam iti pūrvoktakātyāyanavacanasya sādhāraṇatvāt // Sdhp.9v.3-5. Cf. note 29.

This link between the sacred fires and the patni is not indissoluble. Yājñ.1.89 specifies that the wife cremated in this way should be wellbehaved (vrttavatī; glossed by Dev. and Mit. as ācāravatī). Kātvāvana spells out the proviso. The patnī may only be cremated with the sacred fires if she has fulfilled her religious obligations and behaved virtuously (dharmacārinī sādhvī). If she has been difficult (viparītā), then she should not be cremated in this way; and the husband should remarry anyway (Sm.C.II.p.441, Kāty.). In fact, as the Trikandamandana demonstrates, there were several views on this issue of when to reset the fires. According to Trik.III. 92, for example, a junior wife may not be cremated with the śrauta fires. According to Trik.III.94, any wife 'without distinction' (strīmātram aviśesena) may be cremated with the śrauta fires. According to Trik.III.100-1, because of the primary importance (pradhānatvāt) of the husband and the obvious secondary importance (sākṣād angatvāt; comm.) of the wife, her death has no effect at all (cf. comm. on Trik.II.8).

According to the general consensus of opinion, however, if the patnī is virtuous, she becomes identified with the sacred fires for the rest of her married life. So great is the identification that her presence at the sacrifice is more important than her husband's. Moreover, the fires and the ritual die with her, albeit temporarily. The widower is faced with three options. He may renounce the householder life. He may (as discussed briefly above, see pp.114-15) rekindle the fires for himself alone (e.g. Trik.III.128), or with a 'substitute wife' made of kuśa grass. Or, as most writers on dharmasāstra prefer, he should rekindle the fires with a new patnī, thus symbolising the ritual beginning of a new life. The alternatives open to the widow on her husband's death are strikingly different. She may not rekindle the fires for herself alone, nor make a 'substitute husband' for ritual purposes; nor may she rekindle the fires with a new husband and embark upon a new ritual life. Instead, she should either die with her husband (sahagamana; see section IV, pp. 291--8), or live out her days in ascetic and celibate widowhood (vidhavādharma; see section IV, pp. 298-304). For only in her husband's lifetime is her ritual (and social) status assured.

Is the patnī the ritual agent of the sacrifice?

Given the identification of the patnī with the sacred fires, and the

importance of her presence at the sacrifice, should she be considered the performer of the sacrifice? May she officiate in her husband's absence? According to Tryambaka, she may not.

He discusses the śrauta ritual (agnihotrahome) first, beginning with two quotations attributed respectively to śruti and sūtra literature. They read as follows. First, 'therefore the sacrificial ritual of agnihotra involves one priest.' Secondly, 'he (the sacrificer) should perform the sacrifice himself on parvan days, and at other times one of the priests should do it.' As a result of these two rulings, as Tryambaka points out, 'in the case of the agnihotra oblation, there can be no assumption that the patnī is the agent (of the sacrifice) since the priest and the sacrificer are so defined.' 43

The parvan days are the 'junctures' of the month, the especially sacred times of the new and full moon (amāvāsyā and pūrnimā; cf. comm. on Āśv.śr.II.4.2). The phrase 'one of the priests' (rtvijām eka[h]) is a reference to the general rule that sacrificial rituals (yajñakratu) normally require four priests. Even soma sacrifices involving sixteen priests have four main ones with three assistants each (Āśv.śr.IV.1.6; Āp.śr.X.1.8-9). In the agnyādheya, darśa-pūrnamāsa and other iṣtis, only four are necessary: adhvaryu, āgnīdhra, hotr, and brahman; and all are given the general name of rtvij. Of these, only the adhvaryu is required for the agnihotra ritual.

The word yajamāna is assumed without comment to denote the male sacrificer alone. Both the early acceptance of a 'sacrificing married couple' (yajamānadampatyoh; Sāy. on R.V.VIII.31.5) and the much-debated question of the modification (ūha) of gender

(see section I, pp. 39-43) are long forgotten.

Tryambaka next considers the *aupāsana* ritual. His evidence is a quotation from Āpastamba, again accorded the plural of respect (see pp. 135-6, note 34). 'An offering is scorned (by the gods) if it is performed by a woman or an uninitiated person (*anupetena*), or if it is mixed with alkaline (*kṣāra*) or saline (*lavaṇa*) substances or with inferior food (*avarānna*).' Tryambaka concludes that, ac-

^{41.} agnihotrahome // Sdhp.9v.5. tasmād agnihotrasya yajñakrator eka rtvik // Sdhp.9v.5 (śruti) < ?

^{42.} svayam parvani juhuyāt / rtvijām eka itaram kālam // iti // Sdhp.9v. 5-6. (sūtra) < Āśv.śr.II.4.2-3 (yavāgvā payasā vā svayam . . . etc.; i.e. 'with rice-gruel or milk').

^{43. (}agnihotrahome . . . iti) śrutisütrābhyām rtvigyajamānayor eva nivamanāt patnyāh kartrtvaprasaktir eva nāsti // Sdhp.9v.5-7.

cording to this statement, 'in the aupāsana oblation too, the agency of the patnī is prohibited.'44

The term upeta means literally 'one who has entered into or approached'; as in (a)vyanjanopeta, 'a girl who has (or has not yet) reached puberty'. On its own, and in the context of dharmasāstra, it invariably means 'one who has approached a teacher for initiation'. Strictly speaking, the term denotes a boy who has begun his studies but not yet completed them. For example, the rulings on food in the Apastambadharmasūtra include the statement that an upeta should not eat the leftovers (ucchista; see section IIC, pp. 221-7) of women or an anupeta (Ap.II.4.9.7). The Ujivalā glosses the former term as 'one who has undergone the initiation ceremony but who has not yet (completed his studies and) returned home' (krtopanayano 'samāvrttah; Uij. on Ap.II.4.9.7); that is, the brahmacarin. Since this is so (evam sati), the commentary continues, then one who has completed his studies and returned home (the snātaka) incurs no such sin (samāvrttasyocchistam bhuñjānasya na dosah syāt; Ujj. on Āp.II. 4.9.7, Benares edn.). The distinction is an interesting one, as we shall see in Tryambaka's section on food (section IIC, pp. 210-33), and in particular, in the subsection concerning the wife's own meal (pp. 221-7). A similar distinction is implied in the Aśvalāyanagrhyasūtra. After a series of rulings relating to the Vedic student, Aśv. gr. I.23.21 explains that they apply to a boy who has not been initiated before (ity anupetapūrvasya). The subsequent rules apply to one who has been initiated before (athopetapūrvasya; Āśv.gr.I.23.22). Nārāyaņa does not comment on either term, but it is clear that a person who has completed his Vedic studentship would not return to the teacher a second time: the term must therefore denote a drop-out from traditional Vedic education; that is, one who has been initiated but has failed to complete his studies as required.

More frequently, however, the term is used as a synonym for upanīta ('an initiated person'; cf. upetaḥ, Yājñ.III.2, upanītaḥ, Mit.; Karkopādhyāya, Jayarāma, Harihara etc. on Pār.gr.III.10.10) or upavīta ('one invested with the sacred thread'); and the comple-

^{44.} aupāsanahome 'pi // Sdhp.9v.7. striyānupetena kṣāralavaṇāvarānna-saṃṣṣṭasya ca homaṃ paricakṣate (< Āp.gr.III.8.3; Baudh.gr.II.1.34 (tu for ca)) ity āpastambācāryaiḥ kartṛtvaṃ pratiṣiddham / Sdhp.9v.7-8 (Āp.). Cf. Āp.II.6.15.14-15, 17-18.

tion of Vedic studies is assumed. In its more common negative form (anupeta; glossed by Sudarśana on Ap.gr.111.8.3 as anupanīta. Benares edn.), it denotes either an adult male who is theoretically of the first three varnas but has never in fact been initiated; or a male child, born to parents of the first three varnas, who has not yet been initiated but will be. The first meaning is exemplified by Ap.I.1.1.32 which rules that if a man's father and grandfather were never initiated (vasya pitā pitāmaha itv anupetau), then both he and they are deemed to be 'brahmin-killers' (svātām te brahmahasamstutāh). Consequently, before such a person may be taught the Veda (Ap.I.1.2.4), he must recite certain mantras daily for a whole year for each uninitiated ancestor (pratipūrusam samkhyāya samvatsarān yāvanto 'nupetāh syuh; Āp.I.1.2.1). In its original context, Tryambaka's quotation (Ap.gr.III.8.10.3; cf. the parallel rulings in Ap.II.6.15.14-15, 17-18) may be interpreted in either way. The issue is what renders a sacrifice invalid and, in particular, whether a woman or an uninitiated man (or boy) may officiate. The answer, for Apastamba as for Tryambaka, is that they may not (striyanupetena . . . homam paricaksate, Ap.gr. III.8.10.3; na strī juhuyāt/ nānupetah, Ap.II.6.15.17-18; cf. Manu II.171). It is clear from the context of Tryambaka's treatise that the ruling is given to counteract the suggestion that, if a man is unable to perform the ritual, his wife or young son may do it for him (see below for a further discussion of temporary substitutes).

Dharmasāstra literature defines kṣāralavaṇa in a number of ways. The issue is usually raised either (as here) in relation to which foods may not be offered in a sacrifice (e.g. Āp.gr.III.8.3; Āp.II. 6.15.14); or in relation to which foods may not be eaten by individuals in special categories, such as the (celibate) Vedic student (e.g. Āśv.gr.I.22.17; Āp.I.1.2.23; Hir.gr.I.8.2, but cf. v.9), the newly married (and therefore celibate) couple (e.g. Āśv.gr.I.8.10), or those engaged in the ritual period of mourning (and celibacy; e.g. Manu V.73). Kṣāra means literally 'sharp' or 'pungent'. It is defined by Haradatta as that which makes one's saliva flow (lālotpadyate; Ujj. on Āp.II.6.15.14). According to Nārāyaṇa's commentary on Āśv.gr.I.8.10, however, the term denotes certain types of pulse. For Mātrdatta on Hir.gr.I.8.2 (p.108), it is molasses (gudādir ikṣuvikārah). For Sarvajñanārāyaṇa on Manu V.73, it is an alkaline substance (sarjikādi; carbonate of soda, Dutt 1922:

88). For Medhātithi on Manu V.73 and the Mitākṣarā on Yājñ. III.36, it is made from barley (yavakṣārādi; carbonate of potash, Dutt 1922:87). Kullūka on Manu V.73 takes kṣāralavana together as a karmadhāraya compound meaning 'manufactured (as opposed to natural) salt' (kṛtrimalavana). In the context of āyurveda, Suśruta distinguishes five categories of kṣāra including yavakṣāra and sarjikākṣāra mentioned above (Meulenbeld 1974:459; Dutt 1922: 21-2, 81-2, 87-8). Āyurveda also distinguishes several kinds of lavaṇa including rock salt (saindhava; Medh. on Manu V.73) and sun-dried sea salt (sāmudra; Meulenbeld 1974:495-6).

The term avarānna ('inferior food') denotes food made from pulses or split peas (kośīdhānyāni māṣādīni kṛṣṇadhānyāni . . . etc.; Har. on Ap.gṛ., Benares edn.). It may be contrasted with 'superior food' made from rice boiled in milk and sugar (paramānna; Meulenbeld 1974:471-2). For a discussion of the occurrence of the term avarānna in dharmaśāstra and āyurveda, see Gode 1956:153-60.

The same issue concerning the ritual agency of the patnī reaches a different conclusion in the Smrticandrikā. The ruling under discussion there is Manu's statement that only one who is skilled in vaitāna (śrauta) rites and who has mastered the Veda may offer oblation. Those who do not qualify include the uninitiated, the fool, the man of little learning, and women (Manu XI.36-7). Manu's reference to a girl or young woman (naiva kanyā na yuvatir) is taken by Devanṇabhaṭṭa to include the patnī (kanyāgrahaṇam patnyā api pradarśanārtham; Sm.C.II.p.424). More important, Devaṇṇabhaṭṭa insists that the word agnihotra indicates that only the śrauta ritual is meant (tac chrautāgniviṣayam agnihotragrahaṇāt). He concludes with Gobhila (see note 48 below) that the patnī may if she likes (kāmam) make the morning and evening offerings (sāyamprātarhomau) into the aupāsana fire (grhyāgnau; Sm.C.II. p.424).

In fact, Tryambaka too admits that 'the agency of the patnī is accepted by some.'45 He quotes from six different authorities.

According to Āśvalāyana, 'one should perform the household ritual (grhyam for grhyāgnim) oneself from the time of marriage onwards (pāṇigrahaṇādi; glossed by Nār. as pāṇigrahaṇaprabhṛti); or one's patnī, son, unmarried daughter (kumārī) or 'live-in pupil'

^{45.} anyais tu patnyāh kartrtvam angīkrtam // Sdhp.9v.8-9.

(antevāsī; glossed as śisyaḥ, Nār., Dev.) (should do it).'46

The reference to the son implies a temporary substitute, for the man who hands over his ritual responsibilities to his son on a permanent basis is held to have left the householder stage for the life of the hermit or renunciate. Kumārī denotes an unmarried daughter. In the context of the four ages of a woman, the term denotes a girl past puberty, who has left childhood (bālya) behind and is in the three-year (or three-month) period of adolescence during which a husband must be found (kaumāra, hence kaumārī). She has not yet reached the third stage (yauvana); for by then she should be married, and a married woman owes allegiance only to her husband and to the sacrifices pertaining to his household (see above, pp. 86-8).

Two points should be noted here. First, the general tone of Tryambaka's treatise, combined with his insistence that a girl's fertile periods (rtu) should not be neglected (see section IV, pp. 287-8) suggests that Tryambaka, like most later nibandhakāras, advocates prepubertal marriages for girls (cf. the discussion of nagnikā above, pp. 86-8). Such a view would not permit an adolescent girl to be still unmarried and in her father's house, and so able to take over his sacrificial duties. It is surprising that Tryambaka has not followed the example of the Smrtimuktāphala and changed kumāry to kuryād (Sm.M.II.p.355). As it stands, Āśvalāyana's ruling does not accord with the rest of Tryambaka's views.

Secondly, the reference to kumārī in this context carries with it the assumption that the man in question has no son to act as temporary substitute. This in turn recalls the concept of the putrikā. If a man has no sons then, for religious purposes, he may 'reclassify' his daughter as a son. Both she and later her son will then perform the necessary funeral rites for her father. She may also inherit her father's property in the place of a real son (Manu IX.130). In Vasistha's list of the twelve kinds of sons deemed acceptable by the ancient seers, the 'appointed daughter' or putrikā is listed third (Vas.XVII.15). A parallel list in the Visnusmṛṭi puts the son of such a daughter third (putrikāputra; Vis.Sm.XV.4). The rite of 'reclassification' takes place during the marriage ceremony when the bride's

^{46.} tathā cāśvalāyanaḥ // pāṇigrahaṇādi grhyam paricaret svayam patny api vā putraḥ kumāry antevāsī vā // iti // Sdhp.9v.9-10 (Āśv.) < Āśv.gr.I. 9.1; Sm.C.II.p.423 (pāṇigrahaṇād adhigrhyam for pāṇigrahaṇādi grhyam; final vā omitted; Śaunaka); Sm.M.II.p.355 (pāṇigrahaṇād adhi²; kuryād for kumāry; Śaunaka).

father lays formal claim to his daughter's son (Vis.Sm.XV.5). By extension, any girl who has no brother, and who thus might be called upon to perform this duty, is called a putrikā (Vis.Sm.XV.6). Hence Manu's warning that a wise man should not marry a girl who has no brother (Manu III.11; Yājñ.I.53), for then his own funeral rites and those of his ancestors will be neglected. While Bühler produces both historical and contemporary evidence for the practice (1965:85-6, note 15), according to Kane it has been out of vogue for centuries (PVK II.1.p.435). We may assume that it is very rarely, if ever, encountered nowadays. In Tryambaka's case, it is a further demonstration of the problem of quoting ancient texts to support an eighteenth-century point.

Tryambaka continues. According to Vyāsa, 'a priest, (the householder's) son, patnī, pupil or, if he first obtains special permission, his brother (sahodaraḥ) may offer sacrifice (in place of the householder) according to the usual rules.'47

Sahodara means literally 'co-uterine', thus a brother born of the same mother. In the polygamous household envisaged by Tryambaka, a man might have several half-brothers born of his father's different wives; these are excluded by Vyāsa's ruling. We may also note that, unlike Āśvalāyana, Vyāsa excludes the unmarried daughter too.

According to Gobhila, 'the patnī should offer the two oblations of morning and evening into the domestic fire.' ⁴⁸ The reference to a single fire indicates that the aupāsana ritual is under discussion here, not the śrauta. Alternatively, according to Bhāradvāja, 'the wife may offer sacrifice, but without reciting the mantras.' ⁴⁹

47. vyāso 'pi // rtvik putro 'tha vā patnī sisyo vāpi sahodaraḥ / prāpyānu-jñām visesena juhuyād vā yathāvidhi // iti // Sdhp.9v.10-10r.1 (Vyāsa; the scribe has changed putro yathā to putro tathā; I have preferred the reading putro 'tha vā) < Sm.M.II.p.355 (putro 'tha vā patnī; Vyāsa); Kūrm.P.II.18.49 (putro 'tha patnī vā); Sm.C.II.p.423 (as Kūrm.P.; attrib. to Vis.P., or, acc. to one MS, to Kūrm.P.); Par.M.I.i.p.311 (as Sm.M. except juhuyur for juhuyād; Kūrm.P.).

48. gobhilo 'pi // gṛhyāgnau juhuyāt patnī sāyam prātaś ca homayoḥ // iti // Sdhp.10r.1-2 (Gobh.) < Sm.M.II.p.355 (Gobh.); Sm.C.II.p.424 (kāmam gṛhyāgnau patnī juhuyāt sāyamprātarhomau, Gobh., preferred reading; Sdhp. reading given as variant).

49. bhāradvājo 'pi // api vā strī juhuyān mantravarjitam // iti // Sdhp.10r. 2-3 (Bhāradvāja) < Sm.M.II.p.355 (mantravat for mantravarjitam; presumably a misprint for amantravat; Bhāradvāja).

According to Gautama, 'some people (eke) maintain that the patnī

may offer sacrifice.'50

Tryambaka concludes his case for the agency of the patnī with two ślokas from the Smṛṭyarthasāra. 'With regard to oblations, the sacrificer is the most important (i.e. the first choice); (failing him) his patnī, son, unmarried daughter (kanyakā), priest (i.e. one employed by him), pupil, teacher, brother (bhrātṛ), sister's son or daughter's husband (may take his place). An oblation offered by any of these (people, i.e. on his behalf) is (held to have been) made by him alone. The patnī and the unmarried daughter should perform the sacrifice without the act of sprinkling (water round the hearth).'51

This is the most extensive of all the lists of substitute officiants. It includes the unmarried daughter, extends the notion of brother to include half-brother, and adds two more: sister's son and daughter's husband. We may assume that the wife and daughter are advised to omit the act of sprinkling water round the hearth on the grounds that it involves the recitation of Vedic mantras. In that case, however, it is not clear why the prohibition on reciting mantras is not made explicit and extended to cover the entire ritual (as in the Bhāradvāja ruling).

But perhaps the most important statement is that the sacrifice is always deemed to have been offered by the householder regardless of who actually officiates. The term yajamāna ('sacrificer') exclusively denotes the male head of the household, on whom all ritual responsibility rests whether he is physically present or not. Even when the wife is permitted to officiate, she never earns the title of 'sacrificer', not even temporarily. When her husband is present, she is his assistant; when he is absent, she may — according to some authorities — be his representative. But she may never perform a sacrifice herself.

50. gautamaḥ // patnī juhuyād ity eke // iti // Sdhp.10r.3 (Gaut.) < Sm.M. II.p.355 (Gaut.).

^{51.} smṛtyarthasāre tu viśeṣaḥ //Sdhp.10r.3. home mukhyo yajamānaḥ patnī(ca) putraś ca kanyakā/ṛtvik śiṣyo gurur bhrātā bhāgineyaḥ sutāpatiḥ//etair [e]wa hutaṃ yat tu tad dhutaṃ svayaṃ eva tu / paryukṣaṇaṃ vinā patnī juhuyāt kanyakāpi ca // iti // Sdhp.10r.3-6 (Sm.A.; the scribe omits patnī and inserts it in the next line with an additional unmetrical ca) < Sm.M.II. p.355 (kanyakāpi wā for kanyakāpi ca); Sm.A.p.34 (vastu for yat tu; paryukṣaṇawarjyaṃ for paryukṣaṇaṃ vinā; an unmetrical kumārī for kanyakāpi). Cf. Par.M.I.i.p.311 (Dakṣa).

Tryambaka's own views are clear. The male head of the household should always perform the śrauta sacrifice himself. If possible, he should perform the aupāsana ritual himself too; if not, there is scriptural justification for the practice of using permitted substitutes, including the patnī. Tryambaka's reluctance to allow this even in the case of the *smarta* ritual may be explained by the belief that a sacrifice performed by a substitute officiant produces a substandard result. According to Daksa, for example, the reward obtained by an oblation offered oneself (svayamhomaphalam) cannot be obtained by proxy (Sm.C.II.p.422). For when a ritual is performed by someone else, the 'unseen result' (phalam adrstam) is halved (phalam ardham, Sm.C.II.p.422-3; cf. Sm.M.II.p.354-5; Par.M.I.i.p.311). But if the absence of the true sacrificer is unavoidable, a substitute or representative may be assigned as detailed above. As Devannabhatta explains, these qualifications only apply when the sacrificer cannot perform the ritual himself (svayamhomālābhavisayam), because that alone is praised (tasyaiva praśastatvāt; Sm.C.II.p.423).

These rulings concerning substitute officiants must presumably be taken in conjunction with Tryambaka's earlier statement that a 'priest and so on' (rtvigādinā) should not perform the sacrifice in the absence of both husband and wife (see p. 132, note 29). Since only the husband may journey away from home, the implication is that, whoever is appointed to officiate in his absence, the patnī must still be there.

The offering of respect to the sun (arghyadanam)

The wife's final dawn duty, as described by Tryambaka, is that of offering worship to the rising sun. He explains. 'As soon as the oblation (homa) has been offered, the wife (striyā) should perform the (ritual of) presenting an offering of respect (arghyadānam) to the sun '52

The first point to note here is that, since Tryambaka seems to be concerned primarily with wives who assist at the śrauta ritual of agnihotra and only secondarily with those whose husbands perform the aupāsanahoma, the saṃdhyā ritual may be performed in the home rather than in a solitary or sacred place outside the village (see above pp. 105-6). It thus makes sense that the rulings on arghyadānam

are simply added on to those concerning the fire ritual, without any reference to the proper setting for their performance.

Secondly, why does Tryambaka fail to give any rulings concerning the other actions normally associated with the samdhyā ritual: that is, the recitation of mantras (japa), sipping (ācamana), ritual breathing (prāṇāyāma), sprinkling with water (mārjana), the ritual for driving out sin (aghamarsana), the worship of the appropriate deity (upasthāna) and so on (e.g. PVK.II.i.p.315-19; Vidyārnava 1979: 32ff.? Perhaps the answer is to be found in the earliest references to samdhyā. It seems that the oldest forms of the ritual involve only or principally two actions: offering water to the sun (arghya) and the recitation (japa) of the gāyatrī or sāvitrī mantra (PVK II.i.p.314). According to Tait. Ar. II.2, for example, brahmavadins face east and throw upwards water that has been consecrated by the gayatri (samdhyāyām gāyatriyābhimantritā apa ūrdhvam viksipanti; p.121). Both the Aśvalāyana- and the Śānkhāyanagrhyasūtra mention only the japa recitation (sāvitrīm japet, Āśv.gr.III.7.4; Śānkh.gr.II.9.2). Man.gr.I.2.2 mentions only the offering of water to the sun (añjalīm pūrayitvā) and the gāyatrī. Not until the Baudhāyanadharmasūtra do we find any reference to the other elements associated with the ritual: bathing, sipping, sprinkling water (mantravat proksanam), japa recitation (sāvitrīm āvartayet), ritual breathing with mantras, and devotion to Varuna or Mitra (Baudh.II.4.7.1-11). Tryambaka is thus an exponent both of the more complex srauta ritual of agnihotra and the more rudimentary form of samdhyā. There are two possible reasons for this. The more rudimentary ritual in accordance with earlier rather than later texts may be a mark of his extreme orthodoxy. Alternatively, and to my mind more probably, he gives us a truncated form of the ritual precisely because it is intended for women. As described, the ritual is in fact more like the various kinds of devotional worship performed by women all over India today.

Tryambaka's omission of the japa recitation is predictable. For only twice-born males may recite Vedic mantras. As Baudhāyana explains in relation to another aspect of the samdhyā ritual, bathing is open to all varnas but sprinkling water over oneself while reciting mantras (mantravat prokṣaṇam) is restricted to the twice-born (Baudh.II.4.7.3); that is, according to the later understanding of the term, to the initiated male. In fact, in section IV of Tryambaka's treatise, japa meditation is included among the six things that cause

a woman to 'fall' and which must therefore be avoided at all costs. (see pp. 274-6). Yet, according to Vidyārṇava, this is the 'absolutely necessary' part of Hindu prayer: 'everyone, who calls himself a Hindu' should recite it (1979:33). Unfortunately, Vidyārṇava gives little thought to the part played by women in his scheme of Hindu devotional prayer. As his detailed account demonstrates, each part of the saṃdhyā ritual must be accompanied by a number of mantras. If women are unable to pronounce these mantras, then as Tryambaka implies, much of the ritual is barred to them.

Tryambaka's first point is to stress the importance of the ritual in terms of the future fortunes of the wife. According to Vyāsa, 'the woman who presents an offering of respect to the sun in the early morning will not experience widowhood in her next seven lives.'53 The description of how she should perform the ritual (tat prakāram) is also attributed to Vyāsa. 'The gods are pleased with the woman who constantly makes a circle (manḍalakam; i.e. of powder) outside (the house) and offers silent worship with unbroken rice and so on.'54

The 'circle (of powder)' recalls the rangavalya patterns described in the section on threshold worship (pp. 63-4). 'Silent worship' ($t\bar{u}s$ - $n\bar{t}m$... $p\bar{u}jayet$) indicates that the wife should perform the ritual without the recitation of (Vedic) mantras. 'Unbroken rice and so on' implies an offering of such things as unbroken rice, sacred grass, flowers, sandalwood paste and, presumably, water.

There is an explicit if confusing analogy here between the ritual of showing respect to the sun and that of showing respect to an important human guest such as an officiating priest, a learned teacher, a bridegroom or a king (sadarghyārhā[h], Mān.gr.I.9.1; Āśv.gr.I.24. 1-4; Yājñ.I.111; cf. Gonda 1980:385-6). Indeed, as Kauś.Br.II.8.4 explains, he who offers sacrifice at sunrise is in fact offering hospitality (ātithyaṃ karoti) to a great god starting on a journey. The ritual of respectfully offering water (arghya) is one of the principal components of the proper welcome of the guest in the madhuparka

^{53.} tathā ca vyāsah // prātahkāle tu yā nārī dadyād arghyam vivasvate / saptajanmasu vaidhavyam sā nārī naiva paśyati // Sdhp.10r.6-7 (Vyāsa) < Sm.M.I.p.158 (saptajanmani for saptajanmasu; Vyāsa).

^{54.} tat prakāram āha sa eva // Sdhp.10r.7. kṛtvā maṇḍalakam bāhye tūṣṇīm evākṣatādibhiḥ / pūjayet satatam yā tu tasyās tuṣyanti devatāḥ // Sdhp.10r.7-9 (I have followed the PT reading of yā tu for yāvas(?); Vyāsa) < Sm.M.I.p.158 (yāvat for yā tu; Vyāsa).

ceremony described at some length in the grhyasūtras. The term madhuparka denotes an offering of honey or clarified butter and curds (Āśv.gr.I.24.5-6; Āp.gr.V.13.10; Hir.gr.I.12.11-12; PVK II.i.p.542ff.). The other items offered to the special guest include a seat of grass, a cow, and water intended for three distinct purposes: for washing the feet, as an offering of respect, and for sipping (pādyārtham arghyārtham ācamanārtham codakam; Nār. on Āśv. gr.I.24.7). When the guest has washed his feet, he receives the arghya water in cupped hands (arghyam añjalinā pratigrhya; Āśv.gr.I.24.11). Nārāyaṇa's comment provides the traditional definition of the term: water mixed with such things as perfume (e.g. sandalwood paste) and flowers (gandhamālyādisamyuktamudakam).

If we turn to arghyadāna as a subsidiary component of the saṃdhyā ritual, we find that the offering of respect to the sun also consists of water. Par.M.I.i.p.295, for example, explains that after the ritual of sprinkling (mārjana) one should offer arghya to the sun. According to Vyāsa, this consists of taking in one's two hands (karābhyām) water that has been consecrated by mantras (toyam...gāyatryā cābhimantritam) and throwing it up three times in the direction of the sun (Par.M.I.i.p.296; Sm.C.II.p.362). The discussion continues with a number of similar quotations also enjoining an offering to the sun consecrated by mantras (e.g. sāvitryābhimantritam udakam, Hārīta; Par.M.I.i.p.296; Sm.C.II. p.362). In view of the references to the gāyatrī mantra, it is hardly surprising that Tryambaka does not produce any of these quotations to describe the arghyadāna ritual as performed by women.

What is surprising, however, is that the offering of water has been replaced by a powder design and an offering of 'unbroken rice and so on'. In fact, the ritual hinted at by Tryambaka seems closer to the contemporary worship of images (devapūjā) than to the traditional ritual of saṃdhyā. The offering of arghya water is certainly mentioned in one of the earliest descriptions of the devapūjā (Viṣ.Sm.65.3). In later accounts, however, arghyadāna consists of offering water mixed with all kinds of things such as rice, curds, kuśa grass, milk, dūrvā grass, honey, grains of barley and so on (e.g. Matsy. P.267.2) The saṃdhyā ritual described in the Agnipurāna differentiates between the arghya offering made to the sun and that made to Śiva: the former consists of water accompanied by mantras (Ag.P.73.15); the latter is mixed with kuśa grass, flowers and un-

broken rice (kuśapuspākṣatānvitam) accompanied by the gāyatrī (Ag.P.72.38). Since the Agnipurāṇa also stipulates that women may not recite Vedic mantras (153.12), the latter ritual, if not both, would seem to be barred to women. In the 'special arghya' ritual described by Vidyārṇava in his section on pūjā, the water is mixed with unbroken rice, sandalwood paste and flowers (1979:149-50).

Tryambaka's next quotation, attributed to Mādhava's commentary on the Parāśarasmrti, is predictably not taken from the latter's section on arghyadana (Par.M.I.i.p.295-6). For, as noted above, arghya is there defined as water consecrated with Vedic mantras. The quotation comes instead from the end of Madhava's section on tarpana (the ritual of offering water to gods, sages and ancestors; Par.M.I.i.p.364). As Mādhava explains, after performing the various kinds of tarpana, one should sip water and then make an offering of water in cupped hands to the sun (dadyāt sūryāya salilānjalim, Par.M.I.i.p.364; Vis.P.III.11.39a). Then follows the invocation to the sun selected by Tryambaka for the wife to declaim as she makes her arghya offering. It is taken from Aurva's discourse to Sagara on the 'fixed observances' (sadācāra) of the householder in the Visnupurana and reads as follows. 'Hail to the sun god, Brahman, radiant one, who has the fiery energy of Visnu, purifier of the world, the pure, the enlivener, who prods (us) to ritual action.'55 Śrīdharasvāmin glosses jagatsavitre as 'generating all' (viśvajanakāya), karmadāyine as 'precipitating ritual action' (karmapravarttakāya). Unlike Tryambaka, neither Mādhava nor Śrīdharasvāmin (nor indeed Aurva) links this invocation with women. In fact, there are only two references to the special obligations of women in Aurva's entire discourse: according to the first, the wife should perform the vaiśvadeva ritual; according to the second, the householder should approach his wife for sexual intercourse in the evening as long as she is not sick, pregnant or menstruating.

The invocation to the sun evidently constitutes an exception to or modification of the rule already given that women should perform the arghya ritual without reciting mantras (tūṣnīm eva; see note 54).

^{55.} tatra mantro mādhavīye // Sdhp.10r.9. namo vivasvate brahman bhāsvate viṣnutejase / jagatpavitre śucaye savitre karmadāyine // iti // Sdhp.10r.9-10 (Mādhavīya) < Par.M.I.i.p.364 (jagatsavitre for jagatpavitre); Viṣ.P.III.11. 39b-c (as Par.M.); Vidyārṇava 1979:66,89 (as Par.M.).

Presumably, this is because the strict prohibition applies only to Vedic mantras, whereas this one comes from a purana. It is certainly not to be found in Bloomfield's concordance of Vedic mantras (1964(2)). Yet this mantra is included by Vidyarnava in the samdhvā rituals of orthodox males of two of the main Vedic schools (śākhā). Of the eighteen subdivisions of the Vedic samdhyā ritual outlined by Vidyāmava, six are devoted to the sun: an offering of water to greet the sun (sūryārgha); the worship of the sun (sūryopasthāna); a farewell offering of water (sūryārghya); obeisance to the sun (sūryanamaskāra); a third offering of water (sūryārghya); and a final salutation (sūryapranāma). Each of these, accompanied by mantras, is repeated three times a day. According to Vidyārnava, the mantra specified by Tryambaka for women is recited by brahmins of the Revedic school during the third offering of water to the sun (1979:66). In the slightly different order of the Samavedic school, the same mantra is recited during the arghya offering to the sun at the end of the worship of Rudra (1979:89). It is curious that Vidyārnava makes so much of the difficulties of pronouncing the Vedic language and thus of the need to bar the uneducated masses from performing these rituals (e.g. 1979:113) if some of the mantras cited are in fact puranic. Yet this particular mantra figures neither in the tantric version of the ritual developed precisely for the exexcluded majority nor in the 'universal' ritual intended for 'all mankind, irrespective of colour, caste, creed, race, sex, or nationality' (Vidyārnava 1979:113-19, 119-28).

Tryambaka's final quotation in this section is attributed to the Agnipurāṇa. 'The chaste wife (satī) pays homage to the radiant one to ensure the long life and good health of her husband; she who desires the bliss of married life (saumangalyam) should bow down before brahmins.'56 Thus, while a man might be encouraged to worship the sun in order to ensure the dawning of a new day, or to gain 'unseen' merit, his wife's reward is seen in terms of the survival and vigour of her husband. While he might be more impressed by talk of heaven or the rewards of the next life, she is coaxed into correct behaviour by the promise of saumangalya, the 'bliss of married life'. This contrast in the parallel rulings for husband and wife is typical.

^{56.} agneyapurāņe 'pi// praṇamed bhāskaram patyur āyurarogyasiddhaye/ saumangalyam prārthayantī namaskuryā[d] dvijān satī// iti// Sdhp.10r.10-10v.1 (Ag.P.) <?

This quotation brings to a close Tryambaka's comments on the dawn duties of the wife. I have dealt with this section in some detail for two reasons. First, it presents the wife's religious role in the narrower sense of her ritual obligations. Secondly, it demonstrates most clearly the odd mixture so typical of medieval texts: the significance of the wife in symbolic terms coupled with her unimportance in ritual actions.

IIC Day (Sdhp. 10v.1–19v.4)

Saluting one's elders (gurūņām abhivādanam; Sdhp.10v.1-11r. 10).

The wife's first duty after she has made her dawn offering to the sun (tadanantaram) is 'to salute those to whom she owes respect (gurūnām), using her ordinary name (abhivādanam).' Three points may be noted here. First, the formal salutation described is always made by an inferior to his or her superior. In the case of the wife, then, the action reinforces the family hierarchy each day. Secondly, the recipient's equally formal response is to bestow a blessing. This constitutes a validation in religious terms of the wife's homage. Thirdly, this is another case of a ruling usually made for men being applied to women (cf. Yājñ.1.26).

The word guru in such contexts is usually a general term denoting anyone to whom an individual should show respect. For a man, the most important (atiguru) are father, mother and religious teacher (ācārya). These three are said to be equal to the three Vedas, the three great gods, the three worlds, and the three śrauta fires (Vis. Sm.31.1-2,7; cf. Āp.I.4.14.6; Mbh.III.204.17-26). After these, respect is accorded to a man's senior relatives (e.g. uncles, grandfathers, fathers-in-law, eldest brother, and their wives, Vis.Sm.32.1-2; and older female relatives, Sm.C.I.89-90); to those of his teacher (Vis.Sm.32.5,14-15; Manu II.207); and to his 'elders' in general (vrddha, Manu II.120) and presumably their wives too.

Thus men are treated with the respect due to their own age and status; women according to that due to their husbands (pativayasah striyah, Āp.I.4.14.21 and Har.; Vas.XIII.42). Although Vis.Sm.32.2 specifies here the wife of the same varna (see above; cf. Manu II.210), for most authorities the identification of wife with husband supersedes any theoretical difference of varna. For, as Manu explains, even a woman of low birth merges with the man she marries as a river merges with the ocean (samudrenaiva nimnagā), thus developing the same qualities and becoming worthy of the same

^{1.} tadanantaram vyavahāropayuktanāmnā gurūņām abhivādanam kartavyam // Sdhp.10v.1-2.

Day 157

honour (jagāmābhyarhaṇīyatām; Manu IX.22-4; cf. sections I, pp.34-9, and IIC, pp.221-7).

Although the point is never stressed in *dharmaśāstra*, the word *guru* denotes a completely different set of relationships for women. 'Father' is replaced by 'husband's father', 'mother' by 'husband's mother', and 'teacher' by 'husband'. The difference demonstrates both the complete identification of the wife with her husband and her spiritual tutelage by him on her ordained religious path. The subsidiary groups of people to whom respect should be shown are correspondingly different: the husband's senior relatives rather than her own, and those of her husband's teacher. In this section, however, Tryambaka is concerned primarily with the first triad, consisting of parents-in-law and husband.

The term abhivādana must be distinguished from several other kinds of greetings and salutations: namaskāra, pratyutthāna, upasam-

grahana and pratyabhivāda.

Namaskāra denotes the action of bowing with one's hands together in a gesture of respect (añjali). According to the Smṛtyartha-sāra, this is normally done towards images of deities (devatāpratimā), or illustrious individuals such as ascetics (yati) or renouncers (e.g. tridaṇḍin; Sm.A.p.8). Namaskāra may also be 'five-' or 'eight-limbed' (pañcānga or aṣṭānga) depending on the degree of prostration (Vīr.P.p.88; Sm.M.II.p.389; cf. also sūryanamaskāra, prostration to the sun). According to the Smṛticandrikā, one should only perform namaskāra in public assemblies, in sacrifices, or in palaces and royal courts (Sm.C.I.p.102; Viṣṇu). Tryambaka, however, uses the term to describe the proper mode of respect owed by the wife to her husband in the home (see below, pp.162-3).

Pratyutthāna denotes the action of rising respectfully from one's seat in order to receive someone. Certain individuals who do not merit the degree of respect implied by abhivādana or upasamgrahana may be accorded this simpler gesture. For example, Baudhāyana rules that if an officiating priest (rtvik), father-in-law or uncle is younger than oneself, then one need only rise from one's seat and address him (pratyutthāyābhāṣanam, Baudh.I.2.3.45; pratyutthānamātrena pūjā, Har. on Gaut.VI.9). Gautama includes any aged person in this category, even a śūdra (Gaut.VI.10). Pratyutthāna also precedes both upasamgrahana and abhivādana.

Upasamgrahana is the salutation implying the greatest respect.

For example, it is the appropriate greeting for one's own teacher when one goes to him for instruction (Āp.I.2.5.18) and, according to some authorities, for one's parents and senior relatives (e.g. Gaut.I.6.1-3). The Smṛtyarthasāra (p. 7) defines upasaṃgrahaṇa as announcing one's gotra and name (amukagotro devadattaśarmā) and making a formal salutation (ahaṃ bho abhivādaye) while touching one's ears (karṇau spṛṣṭvā), bending one's head (śirovanamanam) and clasping the person's feet, the right hand holding the right foot, the left hand the left foot (cf. Vis.Sm.28.15-16).

Abhivādana consists of the same formal salutation and bending the head in respect, but omits the clasping of the person's feet with one's hands (abhivādane pādasamgrahanam nāsti; Sm.A.p.7). But it may include touching the person's feet (pādasparśanam kāryam na $v\bar{a}$; Sm.A.p.7). In this way, for example, the student should greet his teacher early each morning (Ap.I.2.5.12). Abhivādana is also the usual form of salutation offered by an inferior to his superior. To ensure the correct degree of inclination, Ap.I.2.5.16 rules that the brahmin should make his salute while holding his right arm level with his ear (śrotrasamam); the ksatriya with his chest (urahsamam); the vaisya with his waist (madhyasamam; glossed by Har. as udarasamam or alternatively ūrusamam, that is, level with his stomach or thighs); and the śūdra by holding his arm out low (nīcaih; glossed by Har. as pādasamam, level with his feet; cf. Sm.C.I.p.96). There is no ruling for women but perhaps we may assume that they would again be grouped with the śūdra. Manu II.120 explains the need to perform this ritual greeting. When an elder (sthavira) approaches a younger person (yūna), the latter's vital breaths (prānā[h]) rise upwards (utkrāmanti), desiring to leave the body (dehād bahir nirgantum icchanti; Medh.); but by rising from one's seat and making a formal salutation (pratyutthānābhivādābhyām) one can reclaim them once more. If we relate the ruling to women, however, we should substitute 'inferior' for 'younger' and 'superior' for 'older' for, as noted above, the age of the woman herself is immaterial.

This formal greeting may be performed as a daily (nitya) ritual (e.g. Ap.I.2.5.12-13), or as an occasional (naimittika) ritual (e.g. when returning from a journey, Ap.I.2.5.14), or in order to attain certain results (kāmya) such as heaven and long life (Ap.I.2.5.15; Manu II.121). Tryambaka's primary concern here is with the obligatory daily ritual to be performed by the wife after the dawn

Day 159

observances and before the practical tasks of the morning.

When a brahmin greets his elder or superior, the traditional salutation is in three parts: the formal 'I salute' (abhivādaye); the declaration of one's name; and the respectful vocative bhoh (Manu II. 122-4; Vis.Sm.28.17; Gaut.I.6.5). However, if the recipient is an ignorant man, that is, one who does not understand the salutation (Manu II.123), then it is abbreviated. In that case, the speaker should omit both the respectful bhoh and his name, saying only 'It is I' (aham iti brūyāt; Manu II.123). We have already noted that women are to be accorded the status and respect due to their husbands. In this context, however, Manu groups all women together with ignorant men (Manu II.123). Apastamba even rules that a brahmin greeting either a ksatriya, vaiśya or a woman should use the pronoun instead of his own name (sarvanāmnā . . . na nāmnā; Āp. I.4.14.23). The Smrticandrikā lists the purificatory rituals appropriate for a brahmin who gives a ritual greeting to a ksatriya, vaiśya or śūdra (Sm.C.I.p.101-2); a woman is presumably an unworthy recipient too.

A similar distinction occurs in the rulings concerning the equally formal reply to such a salutation (pratyabhivāda). The rules governing this reply may be found in Pāṇini's section on vowels lengthened to three moras (pluta). When the salutation made by a non-śūdra is returned, the final vowel in the name given at the end of that reply is pluta (pratyabhivāde 'śūdre, Pāṇ.VIII.2.83; cf. Manu II.125-6; Har. on Gaut.I.6.5). It follows by Pāṇinian convention that if a śūdra makes the salutation, the name given in the formal reply is not lengthened in this way. Patañjali interprets the reference to the śūdra to include women and those who behave in a disrespectful way (aśūdrastryasūyakeṣv iti vaktavyam) and applies it optionally to kṣatriyas and vaiśyas (Pat. on Pāṇ.VIII.2.83, p.416). Thus the reply to a formal salutation from Gārgī is: āyuṣmatī bhava gārgī (without the pluta lengthening).

Patañjali provides an interesting footnote. One of his arguments for the importance of the study of vyākaraṇa includes a śloka to the following effect: if one does not know the proper response to a salutation (the rules of pluta), then one is in danger of being saluted with the form used for women (cf.Manu II.123 above); to avoid this, one should learn one's grammar (abhivāde strīvan mā bhūmety adhyeyam vyākaraṇam; Pat. on Pāṇ.I.1.1., p. 3). The same śloka is quoted by, among others, Medhātithi (on Manu II.123) and

Haradatta (on Gaut.I.6.5), thus demonstrating that this point was taken seriously in *dharmaśāstra* too. Manu II.126 adds that a brahmin who does not know the rules of *pratyabhivāda* is to be treated as a *śūdra* and not saluted at all.

From the earliest times, an individual was given three or even four names. Sāyaṇa's classification (on R.V.VIII.80.9), for example, consists of a name derived from the nakṣatra on which one was born (nakṣatranāma), a secret name (guhyaṃ nāma), a name known and used publicly (prakāśaṃ nāma), and a fourth name derived from the performance of a sacrifice (turīyaṃ nāma yajñiyam, R.V.VIII.80. 9: somayājīti, Sāy.). The appellation yajvan of 'Tryambakayajvan' belongs to this fourth category.

The two names that concern us here are the ordinary name, usually termed vyāvahārika (or vyavahāropayuktanāma, as here), and the secret name (guhyam; e.g. Gobh.gr.II.7.15-16; Hir.gr.II.4.13), termed abhivādanīya (e.g. Āśv.gr.I.15.10). The former is self-explanatory: it is the name by which a person is generally known. According to the elaborate rules set out in Aśv.gr.I.15.4-9, the ordinary name for a boy should have two or four syllables, and should begin with a sonant and end with a visarga; while that for a girl should have an uneven number of syllables (three according to Man.gr.I.18.1; see Manu II.33 for further rules regarding girls' names). This is the name bestowed on a child in the naming ceremony (nāmakarana) that takes place on the tenth or twelfth day after birth (Ap.gr.VI.15.8-11; Baudh.gr.II.1.23ff.; Manu II.30). The issue is seriously confused, however, by the fact that similar elaborate rules set out in Sankh.gr.I.24.4-5 apply to the (secret) name given at birth. Verse 6 explains that the ordinary name is given later, on the tenth day.

But both texts agree that the secret name (abhivādanīya; Āśv.gr. I.15.10) is known only to the child's parents until the initiation ceremony. It is the name with which the initiated child or person makes his formal salutations (yena nāmnopanīto 'bhivādayate; Nār.on Āśv.gr.I.15.10). But even this is disputed by some authorities. The Gobhilagrhyasūtra, for example, distinguishes between the secret name given at birth (Gobh.gr.II.7.15-16); the ordinary name, derived according to elaborate directions and given at the name-giving ceremony (Gobh.gr.II.8.8,14-16); and the abhivādanīya name received at the initiation ceremony (Gobh.gr.II.10.21-5).

Day 161

There is even the suggestion that the last of these is received from the teacher himself.

For our purposes, however, we need only distinguish between the ordinary name used every day (vyāvahārikanāma) and the one used by the initiated person for formal salutations to this teacher and more learned elders (abhivādanīyanāma). Haradatta's comment on Gaut.I.6.5 explains when each should be used. The sūtra itself rules that 'on meeting those who know' (jñasamavāye), the salutation should be made 'using one's own name' (svanāma procya). Haradatta's comment falls into two parts. When meeting someone who knows how to make the proper response (yaḥ pratyabhivādanābhijñas tena saṃgame), one should use one's ordinary public name (vyāvahārikam prasiddham nāma). But with regard to those who actually understand the meaning of the salutation (arthajñānām), when meeting such excellent acquaintances (jñātavarasamavāye), one should use one's secret name (svanāma guhyam).

The implication of Tryambaka's ruling is now clear. For one of the major assumptions on which Tryambaka's treatise is based is that women are not entitled to initiation (see section I, pp.34-9). If this is so, then there can be no secret or abhivādanīya name for women. Thus any formal salutation made by a woman necessarily entails her ordinary or vyavahāropayukta name. Tryambaka returns to this topic in his comments on offering obeisance to one's husband

(see below, pp. 162-3).

In the context of names, we may also note that a number of individuals are traditionally not to be addressed by name, as a mark of respect. These include one's husband and one's wife as well as one's father, mother, uncle, father-in-law and mother's sister, one's teacher (ācārya), his wife and son, one's guru or benefactor (hitaiṣin), an initiated person (dīkṣita) and a learned one (vidvāṃs; Har. on Gaut.I.2.29). In his section on general behaviour, Tryambaka stresses the point that the good wife never utters her husband's name (Sdhp.23r.3-4; section IV, pp.273-4). Even today in Maharashtra, the traditional wife will say 'My husband is out', without mentioning his name. A generation ago, that too would have been contrary to strict tradition: she would have said, 'The coat is not here' or 'I see no turban', thereby implying her husband's absence (LSJ).

Tryambaka begins with the homage (pādavandanam) a woman owes her parents-in-law. According to a half-śloka from Yājñavalkya

(attributed by Tryambaka to Vijñānesvara), 'the woman who is devoted to her husband (bhartrtatparā) should pay homage to the feet of her parents-in-law.'2 It is not clear (either from Tryambaka or from Yājñavalkya) whether this involves clasping both feet as in upasamgrahana or merely touching the feet (pādaspassana; see above, pp. 157-60). According to Gautama, upasamgrahana is appropriate (Gaut.I.6.1-3). In traditional areas of India today, however, when the gesture is performed by a man, the joined hands touch the recipient's feet or the ground once. But when performed by a woman, they touch the ground alone and then are shaken briefly up and down. Judging by the customs still in force today, therefore, upasamgrahana is not appropriate for women. Either way, the ruling presupposes the custom of living in a joint family.

Vijñāneśvara glosses bhartṛtatparā as 'a virtuous wife, obedient to the will of her husband' (bhartṛvaśavartinī satī). 'Parents-in-law' (śvaśurayoḥ) is extended to include other people worthy of this honour (mānyāntaropalakṣaṇārtham; cf. Pān.1.2.71). For example, when Rāma determines to go into exile without Sītā, he reminds her of the proper way to start her day: rise at dawn, worship the gods, pay homage to his father (vanditavyo daśarathaḥ pitā mama), his mother Kausalyā, and all his step-mothers, offering her services to each in turn (Rām.II.26.30-2).

For the obeisance of the wife to her husband, Tryambaka uses the term namaskāra. As noted above, this term—usually reserved for the worship of images or for paying homage to august individuals—covers respectful gestures ranging from the bowing of the head with hands together to the full prostration of the body. It is clear that Tryambaka considers full obeisance appropriate here. In his section on women's property, for example, Kausalyā is described paying homage to her husband, saying 'I bow my head to you (prasādaye tvām śirasā); I am prostrate on the ground before you (bhūmau nipatitāsmi te).' For Tryambaka, this is the mark of the true pativratā (kausalyāyāh pativratādharmānusthānāvagamāt; Sdhp.26[2]v.2-4, from the section on strīdhanam, pp.277-80).

In this section, however, 'further details regarding the obeisance due to the husband (bhartrnamaskāre) are provided by Gautama.'

^{2.} tathā ca vijnāneśvaraḥ // kuryāc chvaśurayoḥ pādavandanam bhartṛtatparā // iti // Sdhp.10v. 2-3 (Vijnāneśvara) < Yājn.I.83b.

The quotation concerns the name the wife should use in the salutation, and reads as follows. 'Some authorities maintain that there is no rule regarding salutations between a man and a woman (strīpumyoge; glossed by Haradatta as jāyāpatisamavāye, "when wife and husband meet"). '3 Since a superior never salutes an inferior, what is at issue here is how a wife should salute her husband and not vice versa (jāyayā bhartur abhivādane; Mask. on Gaut. VI.6). According to Tryambaka's explanation, 'this means that there is no rule to the effect that when such a salutation is being made (by the wife to the husband), an abhivādanīya name must be used; she should use instead whatever ordinary name (vyavahāropayukta) is current at that time.'4 The implications of this statement are discussed above. Haradatta and Maskarin say much the same thing, adding only one proviso. If the husband knows the rules of formal responses (yady api bhartā pratyabhivādanajñah; Har., Mask.) then there is no need for any modifying rule (aham ayam ity evamādi niyamo nāsti; Mask.); she may use any form of address (yena kenacit prakāreņa kartavvam; Mask.).

As noted briefly above, the morning salutation is closely associated with, and usually followed by, a variety of personal services. According to Tryambaka, 'the wife should perform such services ($\dot{susrusanam}$) herself, whether for parents-in-law or husband, even if other attendants (servants) are available.' In support of this statement, Tryambaka quotes from several different episodes in the $Mah\bar{a}bh\bar{a}rata$. To avoid repetition, I have taken these quotations out of sequence: the first group applies to the parents-in-law, the second to the husband (see notes 6-12).

The behaviour appropriate to one's in-laws is described in a sloka taken from Draupadī's advice to Satyabhāmā on the proper conduct of the wife as given in the Vanaparvan (draupadīsatyabhāmāsamvādaparvan, Mbh.III.222-4; cf. section IV, pp. 280-1).

^{3.} bhartrnamaskāre višesa ukto gautamena // strīpumyoge 'bhivādato'niyamam eke // Sdhp.10v.3 (Gaut.) < Gaut.1.6.6 (abhivādane, Mysore edn.).

^{4.} asyārthaḥ // abhivādane kriyamāne abhivādanīyanāmnā abhivādanam kartavyam iti niyamo nāsti kimtu tatkālopasthitavyavahāropayukta[m] yat kim cin [nāma tena] nāmnā abhivādanam kartavyam // iti // Sdhp.10v.3-6.

^{5.} satsv api paricārakāntaresu švāšrūšva šurayor bhantūš ca šušrūsaņam svayam eva kuryāt// Sdhp.10v.6.

She describes her own behaviour towards her senior mother-in-law. 'With regard to liquid refreshment, clothes and food, I always attend upon the noble Kuntī, mother of heroes, speaker of truth, myself.'6

Another śloka to the same effect is taken from Draupadī's long complaint to Bhīma in the Virāṭaparvan concerning the miseries of her life disguised as a maid-servant at the court of Virāṭa (Mbh.IV. 16.5–IV.20.35). Showing Bhīma her calloused hands, Draupadī exclaims: 'I who have never ground sandalwood paste myself even to apply it to my own body—only to Kuntī's—see, if you please, how I am grinding it today!'7 The implication is clear: sandalwood for her own use would be ground by a servant; that for Kuntī she would, as a mark of special respect, always grind herself.

A third quotation on this subject is taken from the last part of Umā's discourse to Maheśvara on the duties of women in the Anuśānaparvan (umāmaheśvarasamvādah; Mbh.XIII.126-134; cf. pp. 161-2). 'That which is to be done for one's parents-in-law (should be performed) with the same respect as is due to one's husband. That woman, endowed with virtues, who pays homage to (toṣayantī; lit. 'gratifying' or 'appeasing') the feet of her parents-in-law and is always devoted to her mother and father, is rich in religious austerity.'8

The behaviour appropriate to one's husband is described in a second śloka from Draupadī's advice to Satyabhāmā in the Vanaparvan (cf. note 6). 'And when the maid-servant has been sent away, rise up (yourself): one should do everything oneself. Let Kṛṣṇa know your feelings (bhāva), Satyā, let him think "She (loves and)

6. tathā ca vanaparvani satyabhāmām prati draupadīvacanam // nityam āryām aham kuntīm vīrasīm satyavādinīm / svayam paricarāmy enām pānāc-chādanabhojanaiḥ // Sdhp.10v.7-8 (Mbh.) < Mbh.III.222.38 (ekā snānāc for enām pānā[c]). See also Sdhp.29v.8-9, section IV.4.b.

7. virātaparvani bhīmasenam prati draupadīvacanam // yā na jātu svayam pimsye gātrodvartanam ātmanah / anyatra kuntyā bhadram te sā pinasmy adya candanam // iti // Sdhp.10v.10-11r.1 (Mbh.) < Mbh.IV.19.22ab (sādya

pimṣāmi for sā pinaṣmy adya; latter given as variant).

8. sthalāntare// śvaśrūśvaśurayoś caitat kāryam bhartrvadādarāt// Sdhp. 11r.8-9 < ? (Not in Mbh. crit. edn. index). śvaśrūśvaśurayoh pādau toṣayantī guṇānvitā/ mātāpitrparā nityam yā nārī sā tapodhanā// iti // Sdhp.11r.9-10 < Mbh.XIII.134.47; Subh.p.366, satīvarṇanam 13 (pativratā for guṇānvitā and tapodhanā). See also Sdhp.32v.4-5, section IV.4.d.

165

serves (bhajat[i]) me with all her being." For the range of meanings associated with the verb bhaj, see Tryambaka's introductory verses (pp. 29-30).

Further evidence to the same effect comes from Bhīsma's discourse to Yudhisthira on the division of inheritance in the Anuśā-sanaparvan (rikthavibhāga; Mbh.XIII.47). 'If the wife is there, no one else should ever attend to (make the preparations for) her husband's bath, toilette, teeth-cleaning, collyrium, oblations to the gods, offerings to the ancestors, or anything else relating to his religious duty (dharmayuktam) in the home.'10 In the context of Tryambaka's treatise, the phrase 'no one else' excludes servants and the 'other attendants' (paricāraka) referred to earlier. In the context of the Mahābhārata, it is intended to exclude all junior wives. Tryambaka takes this point next.

Like Bhīṣma in his discourse to Yudhiṣthira (and with similar incongruence), Tryambaka takes the brahmin and not the kṣatriya as his case in point. 'Although—in all ages except the kali age—marrying (women of) other varnas is (permitted) for a brahmin man, (those tasks listed above) should be performed only by his brahmin wife.'11 Continuing to quote from Bhīṣma's lecture to Yudhiṣthira, but out of sequence, Tryambaka explains. '(Even if) he marries a brahmin woman after he has (already) taken three wives (of other varnas), she should be his senior wife (jyeṣthā), the one worthy of honour, the superior one. This brahmin wife alone should perform (those services) for that brahmin man, O Yudhiṣṭhira. Food, liquid refreshment, garlands, clothes and ornaments should be given to the husband by his brahmin wife, for she is the superior one. And if he does otherwise due to infatuation (kāmāt, i.e. for another wife; mohāt, Manu IX.87), O Yudhisthira, then, as

^{9.} sampresitāyām atha caiva dāsyām utthāya sarvam svayam eva kāryam / jānātu kṛṣṇas tava bhāvam etam sarvātmanā mām bhajatīti satye // Sdhp.10v. 8-10 (Mbh.) < Mbh.III.223.7 (kuryāḥ for kāryam). See also Sdhp.31r. 9-10, from section IV, pp.280-1.

^{10.} ānusāsanike 'pi // snānam prasādhanam bhartur dantadhāvanam añjanam/ havyam kavyam ca yac cānyad dharmayuktam grhe bhavet // na tasyām jātu tisthantyām anyā tat kartum arhati // iti // Sdhp.11r.1-3 (Mbh.) < Mbh. XIII.47.32-33a (bhaved grhe for grhe bhavet).

^{11.} kalivyatiriktayugādau varņāntāravivāhe saty api brahmaņasya brahmaņyaiva kartavyam // Sdhp. 11r.3-4.

was foreseen by the ancients, he will become a candāla among brahmins.'12

Several points may be made here. First, the classification of daily duties such as bathing, teeth-cleaning and so on as 'relating to religious duty' (dharmayuktam) means that the wife's services in these matters are classed as services in the religious sphere. A similar verse in Manu (IX.86) groups the wife's personal services to her husband (bhartuḥ śarīraśuśrūṣām) and her religious obligations towards him (dharmakāryam) together as complementary parts of her religious path. The rules in operation here are thus much the same as those described earlier for selecting a dharmapatnī for religious rituals proper (section IIB, pp. 121-8).

Secondly, it is curious that Tryambaka quotes in full a *śloka* that in fact prohibits the marrying of women from other *varnas* in the *kali* age. For there is no doubt, either historically or within the context of this treatise, that polygamy of this kind figured prominently in Tryambaka's world. Perhaps we should assume that the general rule concerning the pre-eminence of the senior wife of the same caste applies to all three *varnas* (cf. Manu IX.86), whereas the sub-rule prohibiting marriages with wives of other *varnas* applies only to the more elevated brahmin (such as Tryambaka himself). Certainly, polygamy is the mark of the prosperous and military *kṣatriya* class (cf. section IIB, pp. 121-8).

Finally, the epithet brāhmanacāndāla in a similar verse in Manu is defined by Rāghavānanda as 'one who is regarded as a candāla because of his despicable behaviour' (kutsitācāratvāc candālavad upekṣyaḥ; Rāgh. on Manu IX.87). The different spellings of candāla (cāndāla) are correct.

These rulings regarding the proper behaviour of the wife (and in particular, the senior wife or jyesthā) towards her husband are

^{12.} tad api tatraiva // tisrah kṛtvā puro bhāryāh paścād vindeta brāhmaṇ̄m/sā jyeṣṭhā sā ca pūjyā syāt sā ca bhāryā garīyasī // Sdhp.11r.4-6 (Mbh.) < XIII.47.31 (tābhyo for bhāryā). brāhmaṇī tv eva kuryād vai brāhmaṇasya yudhiṣṭhira // annaṃ pānaṃ ca mālyaṃ ca vastrāṇy ābharaṇāni ca / brāhmaṇyaitāni deyāni bhartuḥ sā hi garīyasī // Sdhp.11r.6-7 (Mbh.) < Mbh.XIII. 47.33b-34 (tat kuryād for kuryād vai; vāsāṃsy for vastrāṇy). atha ced anyathā kuryād yadi kāmād yudhiṣṭhira / yathā brāhmaṇacaṇḍālaḥ pūrvadṛṣṭas tathaiva saḥ // Sdhp.11r.7-8 (Mbh.) < Mbh.XIII.47.36. Cf. Manu IX.87.

strongly reminiscent of those describing the proper behaviour of the student towards his teacher. According to Baudhayana, for example, the duties of the student include attending to his teacher's morning toilet (prasādhana), rubbing his body with oil (ucchādana; alternatively utsādana, 'shampooing'), helping him bath (snāpanam), eating the remains of his meal (ucchista; cf. pp. 221-7), and so on (Baudh. I.2.3.35). By the process of identification mentioned above, he should perform the same services for his teacher's wife (Baudh. I.2.3.37), although Manu's condemnation of this practice (II.211) seems more in keeping with orthodox views on the natural promiscuity of women (see section III). In his eagerness to be of service, the student should run after his teacher if he runs (dhāvantam anudhāvet), walk with him when he walks (gacchantam anugacchet), stand beside him when he stands (tisthantam anutisthet; Baudh.I.2.3.38; Ap.I.2.6.7-9; Vas.VII.12; Manu II.196). Manu II.202 adds that the student should not employ anyone else to honour his teacher while he himself stands apart (dūrasth[ah]; parahastapresitapranāma, Sarv.; anyam niyujya mālyavastrādinā gurum nārcayet, Kull.). In the same way, while she may delegate her more mundane household tasks (see section IIA, pp. 64-5), the ideal wife should not delegate any service to her husband to another, whether servant or co-wife.

Perhaps the supreme reinforcement of this parallel, combined with the adulation of in-laws, is to be found in the story of the mongoose (nakulopākhyāna; Mbh.XIV.91-6, esp.93.50-1), surprisingly not cited by Tryambaka. The story relates how a poor brahmin lived with his wife, son and daughter-in-law in abject poverty during a famine. When the god Dharma appears in the guise of a guest, the brahmin gives him his last measure of ground barley. Begging to be allowed to follow his example, the daughter-in-law delivers an impassioned speech on the homage due to the father-in-law. 'You are the guru of my guru (guror mama gurus tvam) since you are the god of my god (yato daivatadaivatam). Thus you are the supreme god of gods (devātidevaḥ). Everything — my body, my life (prāṇāḥ), my religious duty (dharma) is intended solely to serve my guru (śuśrūṣārtham idam guroh). Through your grace (tava prasādena), I shall attain the desired heavenly worlds.'

The three atigurus of a woman's religious life are her husband and her parents-in-law. By serving them devotedly all her life, as a

perpetual student serves his teacher (cf. Manu II.243-4, 249), she will achieve the highest reward.

Household tasks (2) (grhakrtyam; Sdhp.11r.10-12v.5)

According to the traditional eightfold division of the day, a man should devote the second part to Vedic study, and the third to the maintenance of his family (Dakṣa II.33-5; Yājñ.I.99-100; Vidyārṇava 1979:I; see pp.45-9). According to Tryambaka, however, women are excluded from Vedic study; and any work they do should be within the home. The good wife should therefore devote the equivalent period of the day (i.e. from dawn to shortly before midday) to household tasks. As Tryambaka explains, 'after that (i.e. after making the appropriate salutations to husband and in-laws), she should attend to (lit. "consider") her household duties.'13

Tryambaka opens this section with a śloka (attributed to Vyāsa) describing the general qualities appropriate to the ideal wife. 'She should be one who brings good luck, one for whom it is natural to perform auspicious acts, one who loves making (the home) beautiful and contributing (in other ways) to the household.'14 The first of these is a practical requirement. For a woman's power to bring good luck may be manifested in two ways: she is the mother of healthy sons, and her husband is alive and prosperous.

Tryambaka proceeds to describe in more detail one very important contribution (upakāra) the wife may be required to make. 'When commissioned to do so by her husband, she should perform such tasks as managing the (household) income.' Tryambaka's evidence is drawn from Manu. 'He (the husband) should put her in charge of saving and spending money, keeping things (clean and) pure (śauce), religious matters (dharme), the preparation of food, and looking after the household utensils.' 16

- 13. tato grhakrtyam vicārayet // Sdhp.11r.10.
- 14. tathā ca vyāsaḥ // bhāvyam mangalakārinyā krtamangalaśīlayā/grhopakārasamskāraratayā prativāsaram // iti // Sdhp.11r.10-11v.1 (Vyāsa) < ? (I have followed PT in correcting °paskara° to °pakāra°.)
 - 15. bhartrniyuktayārthasamgrahanādikam kartavyam // Sdhp.11v.2.
- 16. tathā ca manuh // arthasya samgrahe cainām vyaye cainām niyojayet / sauce dharme 'nnapaktyām ca pārināhyasya ceksane // Sdhp.11v.2-3 (Manu) < Manu IX.11 (caiva for cainām; N.S., veksane for ceksane).

The comment that follows is Tryambaka's. "Saving money" means "keeping it safe". "Spending" means "in ways not prohibited by the rulings of dharmaśāstra". "Keeping things pure" covers "objects, the body and so forth". "Religious matters" means "such things as offering hospitality to guests". "The preparation of food" means "cooking it". "(Looking after) the household utensils" means "seeing to such household paraphernalia as beds, seats, water-pots and frying-pans". (This is how) he should employ his wife."

Several points may be noted here. First, the reference to 'religious matters' (*dharma*) is predictably interpreted to emphasize the more obviously domestic aspects of the wife's religious role: feeding her husband's guests rather than participating in the fire sacrifice or paying homage to the gods.

Secondly, while Tryambaka quotes Manu's ruling merely to support his statement that the wife should be called upon to act as household treasurer, the original context of that ruling is far less complimentary. For Manu IX.9 cautions men that if they wish to keep their offspring pure (prajāviśuddhyartham), they should guard their wives closely. Verse 10 adds that while no one can guard women by force (prasahya), they may be guarded by the following means (etair upāyayogais tu). These 'means' are spelled out in the verse Tryambaka has quoted: that is, women should be kept busy with household responsibilities. Verse 12 concludes that women confined under guard are not in fact guarded at all (arakṣitā[h]); those who in this way keep guard over themselves (ātmānam ātmanā yās tu rakseyuh) are (suraksitāh). For a woman who is not kept busy might hang around the doorway looking out into the street, something Tryambaka expressly forbids (Sdhp.23r.6-7, from section IV, pp. 273-4), probably because that is believed to be one of the marks of a woman who is easily seduced (dvāradeśāvasthāyinī; Kām. V.1.52).

After a digression on whether or not the wife may speak to other men (pp. 170-6), Tryambaka returns to the subject of managing money. To avoid repetition, I include the relevant comment and quotation here.

17. asyārthaḥ // arthasya samgrahaṇe rakṣaṇe vyaye śāstrāviruddhe śauce dravyaśrīrādeḥ / dharme ātithyādike 'nnapaktyām tatpāke pāriṇāhyasya grhopakaraṇasya śayyāsan kuṇḍakaṭāhāder īkṣaṇe tām striyam niyojayed iti // Sdhp.llv.3-6. (I have followed PT in correcting 'paskaraṇasya to 'pakaraṇasya.)

Tryambaka explains. 'With the money given (to her by her husband) to cover her household tasks, the chief wife (patnī) should carry out those tasks in whatever way she can and (still) keep something back. But she should not keep anything back out of greed from the money given (to her) for religious purposes (dharmārtham).'18 As evidence for this, Tryambaka quotes one and a half ślokas attributed to Manu that say much the same thing. 'The husband should place in his wife's charge (lit. "hand") the money which is to be spent on the home. She should carry out her household tasks and (yet in doing so) deliberately keep something back. But if she is given money for the purpose of religious donation (dānārtham), she should not keep any of that back out of greed.'19

Two points should be made here. First, both Tryambaka's statement and the quotation that follows use the word patnī, indicating that the role of household treasurer is to be taken by the senior wife of the same caste as her husband. Presumably the same rules of selection discussed above (see pp. 121-8) would operate in this sphere too.

Secondly, Tryambaka's phrase 'for religious purposes' (dharmārtham) is replaced in the quotation by 'for religious donation' (dānārtham). The latter more specific term excludes such possibilities as the wife buying the items required for a sacrifice or paying the priests. It also raises the much-debated question of whether or not the wife owns any money or property herself, and thus whether she may give or withhold religious donations in her own right. Tryambaka returns to this question in his section IV on women's property (see pp. 277–80).

The rest of this section on household tasks is taken up with a lengthy discussion of whether or not the ideal wife may talk to other men (a topic also raised in Sdhp.24r.1-24v.7, see section IV, pp. 273-4); cf. Dharmāk.III.p.175ff.). Strictly speaking, the term parapuruṣa denotes any man other than her husband; by extension, as Tryam-

^{18.} grhakṛtyārtham dattena dravyena patnī yathā katham cid grhakṛtyam nirvartya kim cid avaśeṣayet[/] dharmārtham dattam tu dravyam lobhena nāvaśeṣayet // Sdhp.12v.2-3.

^{19.} tathā ca manuḥ // gṛhavyayāya ya[d] dravyam diset patnyāḥ kare patiḥ/ nirva[r]tya gṛhakāryam sā kim cid buddhyāvaseṣayet / dānārtham arpite dravye lobhāt kim cin na dhārayet // Sdhp.12v.3-5 (Manu) < ? Not in available edns. of Manu.

baka eventually explains, it denotes any man who is not related to her.

Tryambaka presents the problem. 'The objection may be made (nanu) that a woman cannot attend to her household tasks without speaking to other men and yet, because of the prohibition "she should not speak to any other man", this is not allowed. But this objection is not valid (iti cen na).'20 For that same prohibition (attributed here to Śańkha), when given in full, in fact runs as follows. 'She should not talk to any other man apart from traders, renouncers ("pravrajita"), doctors and old men.' It thus allows women to 'converse with those men who are instrumental in her affairs'.21

We may note here that while a woman may converse with a male renouncer she may have nothing to do with his female counterpart. For in section IV, there is an even fuller version of this quotation. It culminates in a list of women with whom the good wife should not associate: courtesans (ganikā), women who gamble (dhūrtā), women who meet lovers in secret (abhisārinī), female renouncers (pravrajitā), and so on (Sdhp.22v.1-3, see pp.273-4). The term pravrajitā includes both traditional female ascetics and the heretical orders of nuns. A similar passage attributed to Markandeya rules that the good wife should never be friendly with a female sceptic (haitukī) or a female religious mendicant (śramanā, Sdhp.23v.5-6; see also section IV, note 26). The former term condemns women who question the traditional values preached by Hindu orthodoxy; the latter condemns those who have already rejected them. The orthodox viewpoint is clear. Men may choose to renounce family life and devote themselves to their religion; women may not. For a woman's religion is her family life. Hence the ruling in Tryambaka's section on things to be avoided: renunciation (pravrajyā) is one of the six things that cause women and śūdras to fall (see section IV, note 7). We should add here that female mendicants are also under suspicion

^{20.} nanu striyā < ḥ > gṛhakṛṭyavicāraṇaṃ parapuruṣabhāṣaṇena vinā na saṃbhavati / tac ca nu yuktam // na parapuruṣam abhibhāṣeta (see note 21) iti niṣiddhatvād iti cen na // Sdhp.11v.6-7.

^{21.} na parapuruṣam abhibhāṣetānyatra vaḥikpravrajitavaidyavṛddhebhyaḥ // Sdhp.11v.7-8 < Mit. on Yājñ.I.87 (Śaṅkh.); Apar. on Yājñ.I.83 (Śaṅkh.); not in SS edn. of Śaṅkhasmṛti; see also Sdhp.22r.9-10, section IV (Śaṅkh.); Dharmāk.III.p.175 (Śaṅkh.). iti śaṅkhasmṛtau vyavahāropayuktai[ḥ] puruṣaih saṃbhāṣaṇasyānumatatvāt // Sdhp.11v.8-9.

for another reason altogether: they (together with widows) are included in the list of 'go-betweens' $(d\bar{u}t\bar{t})$ considered suitable for conducting illicit affairs $(bhiksuk\bar{t}; K\bar{a}m.V.4.62)$.

But what should the good wife do if neither husband nor male relative is there to speak on her behalf? Tryambaka tackles this question next. 'In times of difficulty—that is, when there is no other speaker except a man unrelated to her (i.e. no one else who might speak for her)—then she will not be at fault if she speaks to him either after placing a blade of grass between the two of them (trnam antaratah krtvā) or directly (sākṣād).'22 For each of these possibilities, Tryambaka produces an epic example.

First, the custom of placing a blade of grass between the chaste wife and an unrelated man as a symbolic barrier is traced to an incident described in the Rāmāyana (Rām.V.21). Sītā has been carried off to Lankā by the demon Rāvana who proceeds to declare his love. Tryambaka's quotation— in fact taken from the version of the Rāmāyana embedded in his Dharmākūta— details Sītā's response. 'Addressed in this way (by Rāvana), Sītā, tormented by grief, was without fear. Placing a blade of grass between them (trnam antaratah krtvā), she answered Rāvana.'23

The crucial phrase, trnam antaratah krtvā, appears both in the Rāmāyana episode (Rām.V.21.1-3) and in the Mahābhārata's version of the story (rāmopākhyānam, Mbh.III.265.17; see note 23). Van Buitenen (1978:III, p.741) translates the latter as 'counting him no more than a straw in her heart'. However, there is a confusion here between the literal meaning of the phrase and the metaphorical meaning expressed by the cvi formation trnīkr (cf.Pān.V.4.50ff.). It seems evident, both from the Sanskrit itself and from Tryambaka's interpretation of it, that the literal meaning is intended here: Sītā actually places the grass between them, thereby establishing a

^{22.} āpadi parapuruseņānyah ko 'pi vaktā na cet tena saha bhāṣaṇam tṛṇam antaratah kṛṭvā sākṣād vā na doṣāya // Sdhp.11v.9-10.

^{23.} tathā ca rāmāyane // sā tathoktā tu vaidehī nirbhayā šokakaršitā / tṛṇam antarataḥ kṛtvā rāvaṇam pratyabhāṣata // iti // Sdhp.11v.10-11 (Rām.) < Dharmāk.III.p.175. Cf. Rām. V.21.1-3 (tasya tadvacanam śrutvā sītā . . . tṛṇam antarataḥ kṛtvā pratyuvāca śucismitā; tṛṇavac ca tataḥ kṛtvā, N.E. variant, Baroda edn.); Mbh.III.265.17 (ity uktvā tena vaidehī parivṛtya śubhāṇanā / tṛṇam antarataḥ kṛtvā tam uvāca niśācaram //).

symbolic 'barrier' between herself and the parapuruṣa with whom she should not converse. It is quite likely, of course, that the phrase is also a kind of pun, evoking the contempt of the cvi formation. Certainly, in the Madras edition I have used, the chapter describing the incident is entitled rāvaṇatrṇīkaraṇam (Rām.V.21, subheading). But a translation that completely omits the literal meaning misses the point.²⁴

Tryambaka's example of a good woman speaking directly to an unrelated man (without a symbolic grass 'barrier') is taken from the 'abduction of Draupadī' episode in the Vanaparvan of the Mahābhārata (draupadīpramāthe, Sdhp.11v.11; draupadīharaṇaparvan, Mbh.III.248-53). The five Pāṇḍavas have gone hunting, leaving Draupadī alone in the forest. King Jayadratha, who is looking for a wife (vivāhakāmaḥ; Mbh.III.248.6), sees Draupadī and sends his friend, King Koṭikāśya, to find out who she is. Mbh. III.250 presents Draupadī's response to Koṭikāśya's questions; Tryambaka quotes most of it.

'Questioned in this way by the chief of the Sibis, Princess Draupadī looked at him slowly (mandam). (Van Buitenen's "with a languid glance" does not, I think, convey the implied reluctance of a high-born woman confronted with someone to whom she should not normally speak.) Letting go the branch (she had been holding), she gathered together her silken upper garment (samgrhnatī kausikam uttarīyam; that is, she drew the garment demurely across her face and upper body; cf. van Buitenen's "kuśa grass skirt") and spoke.25 "O son of Narendra, I know in my heart (buddhyā) that a woman like me is not permitted to converse with you. But you have spoken and there is no one else here to answer you, neither man nor woman; for I am on my own at present. I shall answer you for this reason (i.e. and this reason alone) - be sure, sir, that you understand this. (Van Buitenen's 'listen well' conveys neither her anxiety nor her reasoning.) For I am alone in the forest, ruled by my own religious law (niyatā svadharme; i.e. as an orthodox wife), so how may I con-

^{24.} For a detailed discussion of this phrase and interesting parallels in both Sanskrit literature and European mythology, see Brockington 1987.

^{25.} vanaparvani draupadīpramāthe // athābravīd draupadī rājaputrī pṛṣṭā śibīnām pravarena tena / avekṣya mandam pravimucya śākhām samgṛḥṇatī kauśikam uttarīyam // Sdhp.11v.11-12r.2 < Mbh.III.250.1.

verse with you when you are also here alone?26 I (already) know that vou are Suratha's son, whom men call Kotikāśya. I shall therefore do the same for you, O Saibya, and tell you about my relations and my celebrated family.27 (Tryambaka in fact omits verse 5 which explains that she is Drupada's daughter and the wife of the five Pāndavas.) The sons of Prthā (Kuntī as chief wife) — Yudhisthira. Bhīmasena and Arjuna, and the two most heroic sons of Mādrī have left me here and gone out hunting in each of the four directions.28 (Tryambaka omits the half-verse that describes which husband went where.) But I think it is almost time for these supreme charioteers to return here. When you have received (due) honour from them, you may go as you wish; (until then) unharness your horses and dismount. (Yudhisthira,) the great-souled son of Dharma loves to receive guests and so he will be pleased to see you.29 Saying so much (i.e. and no more) to the son of the Saibya king, Drupada's moon-faced daughter departed. Thinking (only) of her duty to offer hospitality to them (as her husbands' guests), she entered that excellent hut made of leaves,'30

Tryambaka concludes that 'this is how women should talk to

- 26. buddhyābhijānāmi narendraputra na mādṛśī tvām abhibhāṣṭum arhā/
 na tveva vaktāsti taveha vākyam anyo naro vāpy athavāpi nārī// ekā hy aham
 samprati tena vācam dadāni vai bhadra nibodha cedam/ aham hy aranye katham
 ekam ekā tvā[mā]lapeyam niyatā svadharme// Sdhp. 12r.2-4 < Mbh.III.
 250.2-3 (tveha for tveva; niratā for niyatā); Dharmāk.III.p.175 (niratā for
 niyatā).
- 27. jānāmi ca tvām surathasya putram yam kotikāsyeti vidur manusyāh/ tasmād aham saibya tathaiva tubhyam ākhyāmi bandhūn prathitam kulam ca// Sdhp.12r.4-6 (Mbh.III.250.4 (prati tan nibodha for prathitam kulam ca).
- 28. yudhişthiro bhīmasenārjunau ca mādryās ca putrau puruṣapravīrau / te mām nivesyeha disas catasro vibhajya pārthā mrgayām prayāt[ā]h // Sdhp. 12r.6-7 < Mbh.III.250.6.
- 29. manye tu teşām rathasattamānām kālo 'bhitaḥ prāptum ihopayātum // sammān[i]tā yāsy atha tair yatheṣṭam vimucya vāhān avarohayadhvam / priyātithir dharmasuto mahātmā prīto bhaviṣyaty abhivīkṣya yuṣmān // Sdhp.12r.7-9 < Mbh.III.250.7b-8 (prāpta for prāptum; avagāhayadhvam).
- 30. etävad uktvä drupadātmajā sā śaibyātmajam candramukhī pratītā / viveša tām parņašālām prašastām samcintya teṣām atithitvadharmam // Sdhp.12r.9-12v.1 < Mbh.III.250.9 (parņakutīm for parņašālām; atithisvadharmam for atithitvadharmam).

men to whom they are not related'. He adds that 'there is no blame attached to conversing with those to whom they are related (svīyaiḥ saha).'31 We need only note here that Tryambaka's extremely orthodox advice is of no practical value to either Sītā or Draupadī. Each in turn follows the rules of strīdharma to the letter; both are abducted anyway. Tryambaka's satisfaction with their behaviour stems not from the success of either strategem but from the fact that, in orthodox eyes, neither Sītā nor Draupadī is to blame. For a woman that is small consolation.

This topic is evidently dear to Tryambaka's heart for it reappears at some length in his section on general behaviour (section IV, pp.273-4). The picture he paints there of the perfect wife still holds good for traditional India today. Even if another man entices her with good things (lobhitāpi parenārthaih), begs her humbly (dainyena prārthitā vāpi), seizes her by force (balena vidhrtāpi vā), or clothes her in fine garments (vastrādyair vāsitā vāpi), the good wife never loves another man (the term bhajate implying here love, homage, domestic service and sexual favours; cf. section I, introductory verse 1). If another man looks at her, she does not meet his eyes (vīksitā vīksate nānyam); if he smiles at her, she does not smile back (hasitā na hasaty api); if he speaks to her, she does not answer (bhāsitā bhāsate nānyam). By implication (according to the pramāna of arthāpatti accepted by mīmāmsā), touching another man is also prohibited (sparso 'pi arthat pratisidhyate; Sdhp.24r.1-24v.7). This is still the description of the virtuous Hindu wife today, especially in the north, even in the comparatively modern middle class.32 In the south, however, the women seem noticeably more relaxed. If this was also the case in Tryambaka's time, it would

^{31.} strīnām parapuruṣabhāṣaṇe [']yam prakāraḥ // svīyaiḥ saha saṃbhāṣaṇe tu na dosa iti // Sdhp.12v.1-2.

^{32.} While men may be open in their dealings with others, their wives (whether accompanied by their husbands or not) will not talk to or smile at other men. As a result, brahmin men usually do not bother to address the wives of their friends or colleagues because they are almost certain to meet with no response (LSJ). The custom persists even among the new generation of college girls: a male medical student complained to me that his female colleagues would not talk to or look at him even when they were engaged in dissecting a corpse together.

explain why he felt it so necessary to stress the point for the Maratha women at the court of Thanjavur.

Tryambaka pursues the question of physical contact further in section IV. When Ravana carries Sītā off by force, and therefore touches her, being unprotected (anīśā) she is not to blame. But when Hanuman offers to carry her to safety, she cannot bring herself to touch the body (gatram) of a man who is not her husband (Sdhp. 24r.5-7). Tryambaka then argues that when a priest at a srauta ritual binds the sacrificer's wife with a girdle of kuśa grass, his touch is that of a father (duhitrvat gurutvāt) and so does not pollute (Sdhp.24r.8-10). Similarly, although Sītā rejects the touch of Hanuman as that of another man, she assents to that of Agni (when she enters the fire to prove her innocence to Rāma) because he is her father (the husband of Prthivī, the earth from which Sītā emerged; Sdhp.24r.10-24v.6). However, since Ghatotkaca (Bhīma's son by the rākṣasī, Hidimbā) carried Draupadī (Ghatotkaca's stepmother), a woman may touch her (step-)son (Sdhp.24v.6-7). This concern to avoid physical contact with those outside one's immediate family is still in evidence today.33

Midday rituals (Sdhp. 12v. 5-16v. 7)

In the fourth division of the traditional eightfold day, a man should take his midday bath; make a tarpaṇa offering of water to gods, sages and ancestors; perform the midday saṃdhyā ritual; and worship the gods (Dakṣa II.43; Yājñ.I.100; Vidyārṇava 1979:1; PVK II.i.p.689; see above, pp. 44-9). With reference to women, Tryambaka mentions only the last of these (devapūjā; see below, pp. 178-80) and states that it is to be performed by the husband (bhartrā kriyamāṇadevapūjāyām; Sdhp.12v.5-6) not the wife.

In the fifth division of an eightfold day, before his midday meal, a man should perform the 'five great sacrifices' (pañcamahāyajñāh)

33. In the exceptional cases where a man can talk freely with the wife of a colleague or neighbour, she will take care never to touch him even by mistake. If she offers him tea, she will put the cup down for him to pick up; for if she passed it to him directly, their hands might touch. In the less inhibited south, far more women travel about, going to work and so on. But this very freedom requires the special arrangement of segregated buses so that as far as possible women may avoid touching men.

comprising offerings to Brahman (brahmayajña; the study and teaching of the Veda; cf. Manu III. 70 ff.; japa, Kull.), the gods (devayajña; homa, Kull.), the ancestors (pitryajña; tarpana, Kull.), men (manusyayajña; atithipūjā, Kull.) and all beings (bhūtayajña; bali, Kull.). With reference to women, Tryambaka mentions only four rituals; and these do not correspond exactly with the previously mentioned five. The vaiśvadeva ritual (see pp. 180-3) comprises offerings of cooked food to all gods and is said by some authorities to correspond to the devayajña, pitryajña and bhūtayajña (Sm.A.p.47; Par.M.I.i.p.389; Daksa II.56; cf. Gonda 1980:414-15). According to others, the requirements of these three are met by the vaiśvadeva and baliharana rituals together (e.g. Gov. on Baudh. II.6.11.4). Hospitality to guests (atithipūjā, see pp. 183-210), corresponds to manusyavajña. Balidana, an offering to the goddess Jyesthā (see pp. 277-9), seems to be the wife's version of baliharana (bhūtayajña; cf. Gonda 1980:417ff.). Brahmayajña (consisting of Vedic study) is predictably not mentioned.

Before describing the wife's role in these midday rituals, something must be said about the obvious parallels and duplications evident in the various forms of worship. For, as Vedic sacrifice became rarer, alternative rituals developed alongside it, each carrying with it confusing echoes of the fire ritual. I have already discussed in some detail the *śrauta* fire sacrifice (agnihotra), its grhya counterpart (aupāsanahoma), and the twice- or thrice-daily samdhyā ritual (see pp. 102-7). The parallels and overlaps there are obvious. The substitution of the breaths for the sacred fires in prānāgnihotra is yet another echo of Vedic sacrifice, as is the further develop-

ment into the ritual offering of food (bhojanavidhi).

Several of the rituals are performed twice a day: the homa offerings and twilight worship take place at sunrise and sunset; the 'five great sacrifices', the vaiśvadeva ritual and bali offerings shortly before the midday and evening meals. If all or even some of these are observed, then there are inevitable duplications. To avoid this, Manu, for example, identifies homa with devayajña (Manu III.70, and Kull., Sarv.; Mit. on Yājñ.I.102). While admitting that others disagree, Haradatta identifies the vaiśvadeva ritual with both devayajña and the domestic homa ritual (Har. on Āp.I.4.13.1; cf. Bodewitz 1976:191). Vidyārṇava, in his modern account of the midday duties required of the orthodox male, writes of the 'Deva-

yajña or the offering to fire, called also Homa, or Viśva offering' (1979:154).

Image worship (devapūjā) seems at first to be subsumed in devayajña. For, although the term itself is of long standing (see Pān.I.3.25), the earlier dharmaśāstra texts do not list it separately among the daily duties of the orthodox. Gaut. I.2.12.17, for example, mentions only the homa offering and samdhyā (cf. Ap.I.1.4.16-17; Baudh.I.2.3.19). Later smrtis, however, distinguish clearly between the two. Manu, for example, advocates image worship (devatābhyarcanam; hariharādidevapūjanam, Kull.) alongside offerings to gods, sages and ancestors (devarsipitrtarpanam) and the fire ritual (samidādhānam; samiddhomam, Kull.). According to some authorities, it should be performed after the morning homa (Sm.M.II. p.383, Marīci) or after the midday observation of brahmayajna and tarpana (Sm.M.II.p.383, Hārīta). According to Daksa II.30-1, all rituals for the gods (devakārya) should be performed in the first half of the day. By late medieval and modern times, however, devapūjā had almost totally replaced the earlier rituals from which it had evolved (cf. PVK II.ii.p. 705ff.).

Image worship (devapūjā; Sdhp.12v.5-8)

Despite the vast medieval literature on the subject, Tryambaka tells us very little about the procedure of worship. Of the long list of actions advocated (upacāra; cf. Sm.C.II.p.532ff.; PVK II.ii. pp. 729ff.), he names only naivedya, and that in his section on the preparation of food for the vaiśvadeva ritual (pp. 180-3). For Tryambaka is concerned solely with the wife's role and it is a subsidiary one.

'When the devapūjā is being performed by the husband, she (presumably the patnī), without being told (to do so), should herself make ready all the items necessary for it.'34 Tryambaka's evidence for this statement is drawn from two ślokas attributed here to Vyāsa. The first of these (with the lines reversed and attributed to 'Skānda') has already been mentioned in section IIA (Sdhp. 4r.3-4; p.65). Both ślokas reappear as part of a longer quotation (also attributed to 'Skānda') in the section on general behaviour (Sdhp.23r.7-9; p.273). They read as follows. 'She herself, with-

^{34.} bhartrā kriyamāṇadevapūjāyām tadupayuktam upakaraṇādikam anuktayā svayam eva sarvam sādhanīyam // Sdhp.12v.5-6.



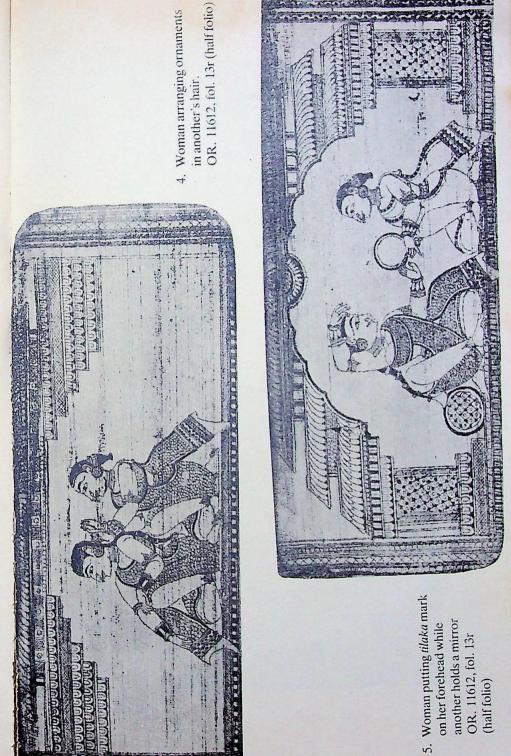
 Woman milking white cow with calf watching OR. 11689, fol. Iv (detail)



2. Woman anointing herself with sandalwood paste or perfume from a pot OR. 11689, fol. 3r (detail)



3. Woman holding mirror and applying collyrium to her eyes OR. 11689, fol. 3r (detail)





6. Woman squatting to cook, and fanning herself with her left hand OR. 11689, fol. 1v (detail)



7. Woman standing to serve her husband while he sits and eats

OR. 11689, fol. 2r (detail)



8. Woman massaging her husband's feet as he relaxes on a bed after his meal OR. 11689, fol. 3v (detail)



9. Woman dining alone, eating what is left of her husband's meal, after tending to his needs OR. 11689, fol. 3v (detail)



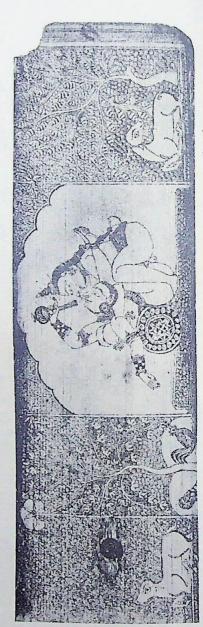
 Woman sitting on the ground, playing with male child OR. 11689, fol. 2v (detail)



11. Woman sitting with child on her lap, suckling him OR. 11689, fol. 2v (detail)



12. Couple making love on a low bed, naked except for their ornaments, the woman on top OR. 11612, fol. 19r (half folio)



13. Couple making love on a low bed, both wearing ornaments, woman drinking from a bottle OR. 11612, fol. 19r (half folio)

out being told (to do so), should make ready all the items for worship such as the water for the observances and the sacred grass, together with leaves, flowers, unbroken rice and so on. Without anxiety and with great joy, anticipating (each) moment, she should place everything near (her husband), (each item) at the appropriate time.'35

The items specified may be related to the various stages of worship (upacāra). For example, fresh water (cf. Vis.Sm.66.1) is required for several procedures: for washing the feet of the image (pādya), for bathing it (snāna), for sipping (ācamana), and for the arghya offering. The sacred grass (barhis) forms a seat for the worshipper (see Vīr.P.p.95 on āsanam). Various kinds of leaves are recommended for the worship of Siva, including those of the woodapple (bilva), apāmārga and acacia (śamī) trees, and the blue lotus (Vīr.P.p.210). Basil (tulasī) leaves are offered to Visnu, either separately or when flowers are unavailable. They may also be mixed in the water used for bathing the images (Vīr.P.p.42-9). Flowers of various kinds are offered in a separate upacāra (puspa). The Visnusmrti prohibits the use of flowers that smell unpleasant or have no smell at all; white ones are allowed, if they smell nice; red ones, especially those that grow in water (jalajam; raktotpalam, Nand.) are best (Vis.Sm.66.5-9). For the worship of Siva, arka, oleander (karavīra), drona, kuśa, datura (dhattūra) and acacia (śamī) flowers are recommended, but the blue lotus is best (Vīr.P. p. 210). Different flowers are listed for the worship of Visnu: various kinds of jasmine (vanamallikā, vāsantī, mālatī, kunda), magnolia (campaka) and asoka flowers, and best of all the jātī jasmine (Vīr. P.p.51). If the worshipper cannot afford the more expensive items required for certain upacāras (clothes, ornaments, unguents, etc.), he may use flowers instead. Flowers and unbroken rice are also added to the arghya offering of water, along with other items such as particular grasses, milk, curd, honey and so on (section IIB, p.151).

^{35.} tathā ca vyāsah // pūjopakaraṇam sarvam anuktam sādhayet svayam / niyamodakabarhiṣī (Sdhp.4r.3; barhīmṣi, Sdhp.23r.8; Sdhp.12v.7 unclear) patrapuṣpākṣatādikam // pratīkṣamāṇāvasaram yathākālocitam hi yat / tad upastāpayet sarvam anudvignātihrṣṭavat // iti // Sdhp.12v.6-8 (Vyāsa) < Sk.P.III.2.7.22-3 (anuktā for anuktam; barhīmṣi; yatra for patra; ca varaṃ for vasaraṃ). See also Sdhp.4r.3-4, p.65 (skāndavacanat; first śloka only, lines reversed); Sdhp.23r.7-9, p.273 (Skānda).

As described by Tryambaka, this is a classic example of the wife's role of assistant to her husband in religious rituals (dharmapatnī). Strictly speaking, this is the case even in domestic image worship today. For while the wife or mother of an orthodox household may spend a large amount of time in the pūjā room perhaps offering various upacāras without mantras, or following the śūdra example of using purānic mantras instead—in orthodox terms, her worship is strictly devotional. For unless a woman has been initiated, has undergone the required Vedic education, has been taught the mantras and precisely what to say and do, she may not offer the full devapūjā with Vedic mantras herself. Her husband or a priest must do it for her. In fact, in today's pūjā, the woman usually does everything except the crucial part of the ritual reserved for her husband; he does that, and then goes to the office. She may also touch her husband's arm during the ceremony in order to earn her share of his merit. For in effect, now as in Tryambaka's day, she can only assist.

(The worship of) all gods (vaisvadeva; Sdhp.12v.8-13r.6).

As explained briefly above (pp. 177-8), this offering of cooked food to all the gods before a meal is one of several modern rituals that contain echoes of early Vedic sacrifice. According to Sm.C.II.p.570, for example, it may be offered into either the ordinary or the *śrauta* fire (laukike vaidike vā, although vaidike is immediately glossed as vaivāhike; cf. also Medh. on Manu V.7). Several authors maintain that the vaiśvadeva ritual is identical with devayajña; others that it corresponds to pitryajña and bhūtayajña as well. In the Dharmākūta, Tryambaka agrees with this last view, quoting Vyāsa and the Smṛtyarthasāra (Dharmāk.III.p.78). In the Strīdharmapaddhati, however, he does not add to this discussion. Once again, he is concerned only with the part the wife must play: she should prepare the food to be offered; she should be present at the ritual; and she should decorate the place of worship.

'After that (i.e. after the worship of the household images), she should do the cooking for the (offerings of food to) guests, all the gods, and so on.'36 The first quotation produced deals with the preparation of food for guests; I shall return to it in the section concerning the role of the wife in the atithipūjā (p, 198, note 64). The

second quotation, attributed to Vyäsa, applies to the vaiśvadeva ritual. 'After taking her (ritual) bath, the senior wife (patnī) should cook (food) in the home: (that) for the naivedya ritual (should be prepared) in a separate pot, and the delicacies (vyanjanāni) for the vaiśvadeva ritual separately in another.'37

The distinction here is between one of the upacāras of devapūjā (see pp. 178-80), and the independent vaiśvadeva ritual. Various rulings are given about naivedya offerings. According to Vis. Sm.66.12-14, one may not offer any food that is normally forbidden, nor the milk of goats or buffaloes, nor the meat of five-toed animals, fish or wild boar. In general, however, the rule is the same for naivedya as it is for the vaiśvadeva ritual: one should offer to one's gods whatever food one eats oneself (Rām.II.102.30; 103.15; Medh. on Manu V.7). The Smṛtyarthasāra specifies that kṣāra, lavana and certain kinds of pulse should not be offered in the vaiśvadeva ritual (cf. Sm.C.II.p.574), thus recalling similar rulings relating to the fire ritual (see pp. 142-5). Tryambaka, however, tells us only that different pots should be used to cook the food intended for each ritual.

The term *vyanjanāni*, used in the narrow sense, denotes any form of spice or seasoning. In its wider sense, as used here, it covers any good food cooked with appetising seasoning and condiments. This presumably indicates that food for the gods should be prepared with as much care as that for the family.

Two more points should be made here. First, if naivedya is part of image worship (devapūjā), then Tryambaka's sequence of events is wrong. The wife would have to prepare the naivedya offering

before the ritual, not after it.

Secondly, unlike the sweeping and cleaning of the home, the cooking of food is not an independent household task for which the wife is solely responsible. It is a subsidiary part of the midday rituals performed by her husband. The offering of food to the gods is the principal part (pradhāna); both the preparation beforehand and the eating afterwards are subsidiary (anga) to it. Thus, even in the realm of food, the wife may be seen to be acting as her husband's assistant in religion and not independently.

^{37.} vyāso pi // naivedyārtham prthagbhānde patnī snātvā paced grhe vaišvadevārtham anyasmin vyañjanāni prthak prthak // iti // Sdhp.13r.2-3 (Vyāsa) <?

Continuing this theme of the wife as religious assistant, Tryamba-ka explains that 'the patnī too should be present at the time of the vaiśvadeva ritual.'38 He quotes Nārāyaṇa. 'Bathed, ritually pure, accompanied by his wife, and without speaking, (a man) should sip (water) according to the injunction, sit down and, when the fire is lit, he should perform the vaiśvadeva ritual.'39 The quotation demonstrates that the male householder performs the ritual; all that is required of the wife at this stage is her presence. The question of the patnī's presence at rituals is discussed in more detail with regard to the homa offerings (see above, pp.132-41). The overlap between homa, devayajña and vaiśvadeva suggests that the implications here are the same.

Tryambaka's final point in this subsection concerns the wife's role in decorating the place of worship. 'At the time of the vaiśvadeva ritual, the patnī should decorate with sandalwood paste and so on the places where food offerings (bali) are made.'40 He quotes Baudhāyana. 'Silently (tūṣṇīm; i.e. without the recitation of mantras), the patnī decorates all the places of worship (āyatanāni) with sandalwood paste, flowers, incense and lights.'41

Several points may be noted here. The term tūṣnīm recalls Baudhā-yana's orthodox views on women. For example, he admits that some people make funeral offerings when their married daughters die but argues that this is only done to placate the world (loka-samgrahanārtham), for women are held to be (without Vedic education and therefore) without mantras (tad amantrāḥ striyo matāḥ, Baudh.I.5.11.7; Manu IX.18).

Secondly, both the term āyatanāni (cf. agnyāyatanam) and the wife's task of decorating the hearth recall the very similar rulings described in the section on agnisusrūṣā (pp. 107-15). According to Tryambaka, decorating the hearth is the wife's sole responsi-

- 38. vai<va>śvadevasamaye patnyāpi sannihitayā bhavitavyam // Sdhp.13r.3.
- 39. tathā cu nārāyaṇaḥ // sabhāryas tu śuci[ḥ] snāto vidhinācamya vāgyataḥ / upavišya samiddhe 'gnau vaišvadevam samācaret // iti // Sdhp.13r.3-5 (Nārāyaṇa) < Sm.C.II.p.570 (pravišya susamiddhe for upavišya samiddhe; Nārāyaṇa).
- 40. vaišvadevasamaye patnī balyāyatanāni gandhādibhir alankuryāt // Sdhp. 13r.5.
- 41. tathā ca bodhāyanaḥ //tūṣnīm sarvāny āyatanāni gandhapuspadhūpadīpaiḥ patny alankaroti // iti // Sdhp.13r.5-6 (Baudh.) < ?

bility in the fire sacrifice; in the vaiśvadeva ritual, she does the cooking too.

Finally, the references to sandalwood paste, flowers, incense and lights recall both the procedures of image worship ($devap\bar{u}j\bar{a}$), and the fact that it is the wife's job to gather together all the items required for religious worship (see above, pp.178–80).

Paying homage to guests (atithipūjā; Sdhp. 13r.6-16v.7)

As mentioned above (pp.176-8), paying homage to guests by offering hospitality corresponds to manusyayajña, one of the 'five great sacrificés' of the householder's day. Since the wife is instrumental in the observation of this ritual—both preparing the food and serving it on her husband's behalf—this section is a lengthy one. Tryambaka begins with some general rules concerning the timing of the ritual and the form it should take.

'At the end of the vaisvadeva ritual, if a guest has come, homage should be paid to him.'42 Tryambaka quotes Āpastamba. 'The two owners (of the house, $sv\bar{a}min[au]$; i.e. pati and patnī) should not refuse anyone who asks for food at the (appropriate) time ($k\bar{a}le$). If there is no (food), then (one should offer him) a place to sit ($bh\bar{u}mi[h]$; lit. 'ground'), water, grass (or straw, $trn\bar{a}ni$; i.e. to sit on) and a kind word ($kaly\bar{a}n\bar{i}.v\bar{a}g$); these things never disappear in the house of a good man. Those two (i.e. the husband and wife) who behave in this way go to the eternal world.'43

Kāle is glossed by Haradatta as 'after the vaiśvadeva ritual' (Ujj.; cf. Mit. on Yājñ.I.107). In a similar śloka from Manu, bhūmi means 'a pleasant place to sit or sleep' (āsanaśayanavihārasthānam; Medh. on Manu III.101); 'grass' means a couch or bed (śrastara, Medh.; śayanīya, Kull.). According to Nandana, grass should be offered if no (proper, i.e. wooden) seat is available (āsanābhāve); an area of ground if there is no bed (bhūmiḥ śayanābhāve). The

42. vaiśvadevānte samāgato 'tithih // Sdhp.13r.6-7.

^{43.} tathā cāpastambah; kāle svāmināv annārthinam na pratyācakṣīyātām // abhāve bhūmir udakam trṇāni kalyāṇī vāg iti etāni vai sato 'gāre na kṣī[y]-ante kadā caneti // evamvrttāv anantalok[au] bhavataḥ // iti // Sdhp.13r.7-9 (Āp.)<Āp.II.2.4.13-15; Sm.C.II.p.591-2 (kāle . . . caneti); (kāle . . . pratyācakṣīyātām). Cf. Manu III.101; Yājñ.I.107; Baudh.gr.II.9.22-3; Sm.M.1. p.425; Subh.p.169, v. 444. See also note 76.

water is for such things as washing the guest's feet (pādaprakṣā-lanādyarthajala°; Kull.); according to Nandana, if there are no unguents with which to massage them (pādābhyañjanābhāve). Manu's 'friendly speech' (sūnṛtā) is explained by Medhātithi as that which is both pleasant and salutary (priyahitavacanam). Nandana's gloss quotes Āpastamba (kalyānī vāg) and adds that this is appropriate if there is no food (annābhāve).

To avoid repetition, I include at this point a similar general statement regarding timing and format, taken from Manu, but given by Tryambaka somewhat later in this section. 'After performing the bali offering in this way, one should first (pūrvam) feed the guest. According to the injunction (vidhipūrvakam), one should offer any guest who has come (to one's house) a seat (āsano°) and water, and food too, according to one's resources, and making it as wholesome (satkṛtya) as one can.'44

'First' here means before one takes one's own meal (pūrvam ātmanah, Sarv. on Manu III.94; pūrvam svabhojanāt, Rāgh.). 'According to the injunction' is glossed by Sarvajñanārāyana as 'according to the religious law pertaining to guests declared by Āpastamba' (Sarv. on Manu III.99). 'Seat' (āsana) means not just any place to sit but the low wooden seat, a few inches off the ground (so that one may comfortably sit cross-legged), that is traditionally offered to important people or guests (cf. pūha, Sdhp.40v.10; pīthanam āsanam, Amar.II.6.3.40). Satkrtya may be taken in two ways. In Manu III.96, for example, Medhātithi and Govindarāja take it to mean 'paying homage' (pūjayitvā, Medh.; phalapuspādinā, Gov.). However, Kullūka and Rāghavānanda on Manu III.99 take it with annam to indicate the appropriate attention given to preparing the guest's food (vyañjanādibhih satkṛtam cānnam, Kull.; vyañjanaih samskrtya, Rāgh.; cf. Kull. on Manu III.96). Because of the associations with the food offered in the vaiśvadeva ritual (cf. vyañjanāni, note 37). I have preferred the latter interpretation.

On these general points of timing and importance, a few observations may be made. For example, Tryambaka makes no mention of the bali offering (balikarman) that according to Manu should precede the ritual of feeding the guest. I shall return to this point

^{44.} manur api // kṛṭvaitad balikarmaivam aithim pūrvam āśayet // samprāptāya tv atithaye pradadyād āsanodake // annam cawa yathāśakti satkṛṭya vidhipūrvakam // Sdhp.14v.1-3 (Manu) < Manu III.94a,99; Sm.C.II.p.590.

when I deal with the wife's bali offering to the goddess Jyesthā (balidānam; see below, pp. 227-9).

The role of the wife is not at this point spelled out. Apastamba uses the dual form 'the two owners' (svāminau), indicating that the responsibility for the ritual is shared jointly by husband and wife. This is a faint echo of the 'two sacrificers' of Vedic times, the ideal of the married couple participating jointly in their religious obligations. If they behave as they should, both are rewarded in heaven. In contrast, Manu's rulings are couched in the masculine, without reference to the wife even in the dual form. Although it is clearly assumed that the wife must take care of the practical aspects of feeding the guest (see Manu III.103, and below, pp. 198-9), the responsibility for the ritual rests on the husband. The good wife who plays her part is thus participating in her husband's religious duty (prativratabhāginī) rather than her own.

Tryambaka's second point is to stress 'the necessity (āvasyakatvam) of offering homage to the guest'. The same point is made, in other contexts, elsewhere in the treatise. In Tryambaka's conclusion, for example, offering hospitality to the guest is the underlying theme in several of the lengthy stories told: in the story of the pigeons and the bird-catcher, the male pigeon offers his own body as food (section V, pp. 306-7; in the story of Kausika, the ascetic's anger is caused by the lack of hospitality shown to him (section V, pp.308-9): in the story of Sudarsana - according to whom, offering hospitality to the guest is the householder's supreme religious duty - his wife, Oghavatī, is required to offer her body to the brahmin guest, and Death is conquered thereby (section V, pp. 310-12). In this section, however, Tryambaka draws upon the story of Naciketas in the Kathopanisad. 45 This Upanisad is generally assigned to the Kāthaka school of the Black Yajurveda. The same story appears in Tait.Br.III.11.8.1ff. and, in a variety of forms, in both epic and purāna literature (e.g. Mbh.XIII.70; Var.P.p.194ff., 1103 ff.).

Tryambaka begins with a prose recapitulation of the story to provide the framework for the important quotations from the Kathopanisad. This prose version, together with the three verses and the final prose comment enclosing them, reads as if it has all been taken from

some work such as Tryambaka's own *Dharmākūta*. Alternatively, the prose passages may be original to this treatise. The recapitulation runs as follows.

'(Naciketas' father gave) as the fee (to the priests) for a sacrifice he had begun, cows that had (already) drunk their (share of) water, eaten their (share of) grass and given their (share of) milk, and which no longer had any strength (i.e. to reproduce; aprajananasamarthāh, Śańkara, Dh.kośa II.iii.p.1389). Because of this fault in the sacrificial fee, i.e. in his (father's) gift of cows, Naciketas believed that his father would go to a world without joy (when he died). So, in order to remove that (fault), he asked his father again and again: "To which particular priest will you give me?" In anger, his father replied: "I shall give you to Death!" Because of the authority of his (father's) words, and because he believed that obeying the command of one's father is the most important religious law, he (Naciketas) went to the house of Yama. Since Yama was away, he stayed there for three days (lit. "nights") without receiving the honour (due to a guest). Then, when Yama had completed his journey and returned, his ministers said to him '46

Tryambaka then quotes the first of the three verses from the Kathopaniṣad. '(Like) fire (vaiśvānarah), the brahmin guest enters homes; they (i.e. good householders) pacify him (śāntim kurvanti) with this (hospitality): "Fetch water, O Vaivasvata (Yama)!" '47 Śankara glosses vaiśvānarah as 'like a burning fire' (agnir eva ... dahann iva; Dh.kośa II.iii.p.1390; cf. Āp.II.3.6.3). The idea of 'pacifying' him (śāntim kurvanti) relates both to the proper treatment of the guest and to the image of fire. Just as one needs to

^{46.} naciketāḥ svapit{ara}m ārabdhayajħadaksinātvena pītodakajagdhatṛna dugdhadohananirindriyagopradāne krator dakṣiṇādānavaiguṇyāt pitur anandalokagamanam bhaviṣyatīti vicintya tatparihārāya kasmairtvigviṣeṣāya māṃ dāsyasīti punaḥ punaḥ prapaccha / taṃ pitā krodhena tvā mṛtyave dāsyāmīty uvāca / sa ca pitṛvacanaparipālanam eva garīyān dharma iti tadvacanagauravena yamabhavanam gatvā proṣite yame tisro rātrīr apūjita eva uvāsa / tataḥ proṣyāgataṃ yamam amātyā ūcuḥ // Sdhp.13r.9-13v.4 (Kaṭhāvalī, PT: anantalokagamanam na bhaviṣyati for anandalokagamanam bhaviṣyati, mṛtyave for tvā mṛtyave, °pālanam for °paripālanam).

^{47.} vaiśvānarah pravišaty atithi[r] brāhmano grhān // tasyaitām šāntim kurvanti hara vaivasvatodakam // Sdhp.13v.5 < Kath.Up.I.7; Vas XI.13 (grham for grhān; first half only).

'quench' a fire (dāham śamayanta iva; Śankara), so one must 'appease' the guest by offering water to wash his feet, a seat and so on (etām pādyāsanādidānalakṣaṇām... santo 'tithir; Śankara, Dh.kośa II.iii.p.1390). Hence the summons to bring water to wash Naciketas' feet. The implication is clear: a guest not honoured in this way will destroy that household like a raging fire.

The second verse quoted continues this theme. 'If a brahmin (guest) stays without eating in the house of (such) a foolish man, then hope and expectation, friendship and good fellowship, sacrifice and charitable works, sons and cattle—all these he snatches

away (from the negligent host).'48

Although some dharmaśāstra texts enjoin that anyone who asks for food at the right time should be treated with the honour due to the guest (including kṣatriyas, vaiśyas and śūdras, according to Baudh.II.3.5.11), it is often assumed — as it is here — that the proper recipient of such homage is the brahmin. According to Manu III. 110, for example, neither a kṣatriya, a vaiśya nor a śūdra should be welcomed in this way in a brahmin house. Gautama is equally specific: only a brahmin may be a 'guest' to a brahmin (brāhmanasyānathithir abrāhmanah; Gaut.I.5.39). Visitors of lower varna should be given food (Baudh.II.3.5.14 suggests that the sūdra should work for his) and treated kindly, but they do not merit the homage due to the brahmin guest (e.g. Manu III.111-12). It is thus because Naciketas is a brahmin that Yama is so anxious to make amends. Equally, it is because Rāvana is disguised as a brahmin that Sītā is right to do him honour. The story of Draupadī and King Jayadratha, on the other hand, demonstrates that ksatriyas are entitled to such homage when they come to a ksatriya household (see above, pp.170-6, and below, pp.199-203).

The third verse presents Yama's reply. He begins by admitting that Naciketas is indeed the kind of visitor who is entitled to be called a 'guest', and honoured accordingly. 'O brahmin, since you—a guest worthy of honour (namasyah; namaskārārhah, Śańkara, Dh.kośa II.iii.p.1391)—have stayed in my house for three days (lit. "nights") without eating, choose in return therefore three wishes.

^{48.} āśāpratīkṣe saṃgataṃ sūnṛtāṃ ceṣṭāpūrte putrapaśūṃś ca sarvān/ etad vṛn[k]te puruṣasyālpamedhaso yasyānaśnan vasati brāhmaṇo gṛhe // Sdhp.13v.6-7 < Kaṭh.Up.I.8.

I bow to you, O brahmin. May all go well with me!'49 Śańkara explains that each (day and) night that Naciketas has been neglected merits a wish in return (rātrim prati trīn varān; Śańkara, Dh.kośa II.iii.p.1391). Tryambaka's closing comment agrees. 'Appeasing (Naciketas) in this way, he (Yama) presented him with three wishes to remove the sin of having had him stay in his house without eating for three days:'50

This leads Tryambaka to his third point: the severe punishment in store for those who neglect the laws of hospitality. He begins with a quotation attributed to the Vedic school of Pārakṣudra (pāra-kṣudraṣākhāyām). The text of this name, cited in the Āpastamba-śrautasūtra (MW:620), seems to be no longer extant. It was probably part of the tradition of the Āpastamba school of the Black Yajurveda, to which Tryambaka himself almost certainly belonged (see p.25). The sūtras themselves, however, are found elsewhere: in the Taittirīyabrāhmaṇa and the Taittirīyopaniṣad. The quotation runs as follows. 'He who gives me, that man surely encloses (āvāḥ) me. I, who am food, eat the eater of food. Even before the fire, food burns.'51

In the context of the *Upaniṣad*, this is the ecstatic chant of the enlightened man for whom the dualities of the phenomenal world are all at once transcended (cf. Śaṅkara on Tait.Up.III.10; Dh. kośa II.ii.pp.740-2). In the context of the *Brāhmaṇa* (according to Sāyaṇa), and very probably in that of the *Pārakṣudra* too, the lord of food (annasvāmin; Sāy.) himself is talking, the god of the eternal law, that is, of sacrifice (rtasya yajñasya; Sāy.), According to Sāyaṇa's interpretation, if a man who has faith (yaḥ śraddhāluḥ pumān) gives away to brahmins and so on (brāhmaṇādibhyaḥ prayacchati) me in the form of food (mām annarūpam), then he (sa dātā) encloses (āvāḥ āvrnoti) me the god of food (mām annar

- 49. tato mṛtyuḥ/ tisro rātrīr yad avātsīr gṛhe me 'nasnan brahmann atithir namasyaḥ/ namaste 'stu brahman svasti me 'stu tasmāt prati trīn varān vṛṇī-śva // Sdhp.13v.7-8 < Kaṭh.Up.1.9.
- 50. evam prasādya dinatrayam anasanena svagrhanivāsadosaparihārāya varatrayam prādād iti // Sdhp.13v.9.
- 51. pārakṣudraśākhāyām api // yo mā dadāti sa id eva māvāh / aham annam annam adantam admi / pūrvam agner api dahaty annam // iti // Sdhp.13v.9-14r. 1 (pārakṣudrasākhā) < Tait.Br.II.8.8.1; Dh.kośa II.i.p.477-8; Tait.Up. III.10 (first two lines only); Dh.kośa II.ii.p.470.

devam), thus making me his own (svīkaroti). But if a man, without giving me away (mām adattvā), himself eats (svayam eva atti)then I, the god of food, eat him (tam ... annadevo 'ham admi); that is, I cause him to be utterly destroyed (tam vināśayāmi; Sāy. on Tait.Br., Dh.kośa II.i.p.477-8). Śańkara, commenting on the Upanișad, glosses āvāh as 'he protects' (avati). According to Sāyaṇa, the fire of the stomach (udarāgnih) 'burns' or digests (dahati pācayati) the food that is eaten for only a day. But the man who eats without giving (adātā tu bhoktā) burns then and there (tadānīm eva dahyate) from the food he is eating (bhujyamānenānnena). 'Before the fire' means 'before the cremation fire', that is, in this world. For the sin of not feeding others, which is enough to send a man to hell, arises at that very moment (narakahetoh pratyavāyasya tadaivotpannatvāt). The image of the cremation fire serves both as an analogy for the sinner's internal burning in this life and as a reminder of the hellfires to come.

This theme of the punishment threatened by the god of food is continued in Tryambaka's next quotation, taken this time from dharmaśāstra. Baudh.II.3.5.17 rules that one should never eat without first giving away some food. Verse 18 quotes two ślokas voiced by the god of food (annagītau ślokau). These two ślokas, attributed to Baudhāyana, are now presented by Tryambaka.

'Whoever eats me—that is, food that has been prepared—without giving any to his ancestors, gods, servants, guests and friends, out of delusion, he eats poison: I shall eat him; and I shall be his death. But whoever (first) offers the agnihotra sacrifice, performs the vaiśvadeva ritual, pays homage to his guests, and (only) then—contented, pure and having faith—eats me, i.e. what is left after feeding the servants, then for him I become nectar and he enjoys me.⁵²

The earlier threat of internal fires has been replaced by that of death by poison. Both reinforce the rules of hospitality to the guest with powerful magical implications. If the householder behaves as

52. bodhāyano pi j yo mām adatvā pitrdevatābhyo bhrtyātithīnām ca suhrjjanasya / sampannam aśnan viṣam atti mohāt tam admy aham tasya ca mrtyur asmi // hutāgnihotrah krtavaišvadevah pūjyātithīn bhrtyajanāvaśiṣtam // tuṣṭaḥ śuciḥ śraddadhad atti yo mām tasyāmṛtam syām sa ca mām bhunakti ji tii // Sdhp.14r.1-4 (atīthin amended to atithīn; vasiṣtam to vaśiṣṭam; Baudh.) < Baudh.II.3.5.18; Sm.C.II.p.409 (bhrtyatithibhyaś for bhrtyātithīnām; suhrjjanāya for suhrjjanasya; api for admy).

he ought, the food is transformed into nectar and digests easily. If he does not, it changes within his body and—as either fire or poison—destroys him. For, as Baudhāyana quotes elsewhere, food is life (annam prāṇam iti; cf. Tait.Br.II.8.8.3) and therefore must be given; it is the highest offering (paramam havih) one can make (Baudh.II.3.6.41).

Before considering the next quotation given by Tryambaka (Sdhp.14r.4-14v.1; see below, note 63), I shall take out of sequence a number of quotations relating to the threats of punishment in store for those who neglect the laws of hospitality. The first two ślokas belong to the same passage attributed to Manu (Sdhp. 14v.1-6) from which an earlier out-of-sequence quotation was taken (Sdhp.14v.1-3; note 44). The remaining quotations on this topic are drawn from a passage attributed to the Aśvamedhikaparvan of the Mahābhārata (Sdhp. 14v.6-15r.1).

According to the Manu quotations, the danger stems not from the magical properties of food, nor from the vengeful nature of the god of food, but from the supernatural powers of the guest himself. Thus, 'if a guest leaves one's house with his hopes (for food) dashed, he bequeathes his sins (to his host) and takes away his (host's) merit.'53 Or again, 'if a brahmin stays without being (duly) honoured, he deprives (his host) of all his good deeds, even if he (i.e. his host, is the kind of brahmin who) gathers (food) by gleaning and who always offers oblations in five fires.'54

The assumption here, as earlier, is that the guest in question is a brahmin. Although 'guests' or visitors of other varnas may be given

^{53. (}manur api // Sdhp.14v.1.) atithir yasya bhagnāso gṛhāt pratinivartate / sa datvā duṣkṛtam tasya punyam ādāya gacchati // Sdhp.14v.4-5 (Manu) < Sm.C.II.p.593 (Mārk.P.); Sm.M.II.p.416 (Vyāsa); Par.M.I.i.p.215 (sa tasya duṣkṛtam datvā; Mārk.P.); Mārk.P.29.31 (tasmai for tasya); Mbh.XII.184.12 (as. Mārk.P.); Mbh.XIV appendix I, no.4, line 966 (first line only); Viṣ.P. III.9.15 (sa tasmai duṣkṛtam datvā for sa datvā duṣkṛtam tasya). Cf. Par.M.I. i.p.403; Par.S.I.45a; Viṣ.Sm.67.33a.

^{54.} śilenāpy ucchato nityam pañcāgnīn apy juhvatah / sarvam sukrtam ādatte brāhmano 'narcito vasan // iti // Sdhp.14v.5-6 (silenāpy amended to śilenapy; Manu) < Manu III.100 (śilān apy for śilenāpy); Par.M.I.i.p.402 (śilato 'py for śilenāpy); Sānkh.gr.II.17.1 (trnāny apy ucchatato for śilenāpy ucchato; agnihotram ca for pañcāgnīn apy).

food and so on, it seems that the curse of the brahmin guest is what is really feared. It is this fear that constrains Sītā when she is confronted by Rāvaṇa disguised as a brahmin renouncer. Since he is a guest and a brahmin (brāhmaṇaś cātithiś cāyam), Sītā reasons, he has the power to curse her if ignored (anukto hi śapeta mām; Rām. III.47.2). So she offers him homage and hospitality as she ought. Tryambaka returns to this episode below (pp.200-1).

But the power of the guest is not merely that of the brahmin. For even the most superior brahmin will lose all his accumulated merit to a slighted guest. Manu IV.4-5 defines the five means of subsistence open to brahmins in an ideal world. The highest, termed 'truth' (rtam), is gleaning corn (unchasilam); the next, termed 'nectar' (amrtam), is receiving what is given unasked (ayācitam); the third, termed 'death' (mrtam), is obtaining food by begging (vācitam); the fourth, termed 'death-causing' (pramrtam; cf. Manu X.83), is agriculture (karsanam); and the fifth and lowest, termed 'truth mixed with untruth' (satyānrtam), is trade (vānijyam). In Manu's utopian world, even the first three methods of subsistence may be pursued by brahmins in the householder stage, men who have spent a quarter of their lives at the feet of a teacher (cf. Manu IV.1) and who have then deliberately sought out a way of life that will cause as little pain as possible to other beings (adrohenaiva bhūtānām alpadrohena vā; Manu IV.2). At the top of the hierarchy is the man who stores no food at all but gathers each day what he needs from 'permitted places' (avāritasthānesu; Baudh.III.2.14).

But the householder brahmin described here (by both Manu and Tryambaka) is not only one of these. He also offers his morning oblations in five fires: that is, in the aupāsana or gṛhya fire used for domestic rituals; in the three śrauta fires; and in the sabhya fire kept for general warmth (Mit. on Yājñ.I.221; Har. on Gaut.II. 6.29; Medh. on Manu III.185). Such exemplary brahmins are included among those whose presence at a meal is held to bless the household (paṅktipāvana; cf. Gaut.II.6.29; Āp.II.7.17.22; Manu III.185; Yājñ.I.221). Manu's point (and Tryambaka's) is that even so austere a brahmin householder, who has accumulated vast reserves of merit and ascetic power, loses all that merit if he fails to welcome a brahmin guest as he should.

Tryambaka pursues this theme still further in several ślokas attributed to the Aśvamedhikaparvan. They describe two kinds of

eminent householders who, by virtue of their highly meritorious practices, might be considered immune to the dangers of not welcoming a guest. In each case, neglect of the guest renders all their previous activities useless.

'If a twice-born recites the vedas, the vedāngas and the upāngas each day, but does not pay homage to the guest, he recites in vain. Those who perform the (domestic) sacrifices with cooked food offerings (pākayajña), the (five) great sacrifices, and the (seven) basic forms (saṃstha) of the soma sacrifice, and (yet) do not honour the guest who has come to their home, then, though they desire fame and wealth, all that they have given away or offered in the sacrifice is rendered vain, killed by (their guest's) killed hope.'55 For 'he who does not pay homage at the end of the vaiśvadeva ritual to any guest who has come, at once becomes an outcaste (caṇḍāla); there is no doubt about that.'56

Pākayajña is defined in the gṛḥyasūtras as a domestic sacrifice with cooked offerings (gṛḥyasthālīpāka°; Pār.gṛ.I.1.1.). The term is used to distinguish domestic rituals from both śrauta and soma sacrifices (e.g. Śāṅkh.gṛ.I.1.15; Manu II.143; Gaut.I.8.19-21). According to some authorities, they are of three kinds (e.g. Nār. on Āśv.gṛ.I.1.2); according to others, four (e.g. Śāṅkh.gṛ.I.5.1; Pār.gṛ.I.4.1; Manu II.8.6; Vas.26.10; cf. Gonda 1980:186); according to others again, in line with śrauta and soma rituals, seven (e.g. Gaut.I.8.19-21). The term used for these seven 'basic forms' of the pākayajña, haviryajña and soma rituals is saṃsthaḥ (see above).

55. āśvamedhiko 'pi // sāngopāngāms tathā vedān paṭhatīha dine dine /na cātithim pūjayati vṛthā sa paṭhati dvijaḥ // pākayajñair mahāyajñaih somasamsthābhir eva ca / ye yajanti na cārcanti gṛheṣv atithim āgatam // teṣām yaśorthakāmānām dattam iṣṭam ca yad bhavet / vṛthā bhavati tat sarvam āśayā hatayā hatam // Sdhp.14v.6-15r.1 (paṭhaṃtīha amended to paṭhatīha; cārcābhiḥ to cārcanti; Mbh.)<Par.M.I.i.p.402 ('bhikāmānām for 'rthakāmānām; Mbh., aśvamedhika); Mbh.XIV appendix I, no.4, lines 986-91 (tu yo for tathā; bhavati sa for sa paṭhati; pākayajña' for pākayajñair; 'bhikāmānām for 'rthakāmānām; hi tayā for hatayā).

56. vaiśvadevāntike prāptam atithim yo na pūjayet / sa cāṇḍālatvam āpnoti sadya eva na saṃṣʿayaḥ// Sdhp.14v.9 < Par.M.I.i.p.403 (Mbh., aśvamedhika); Sm.M.II.p.416 (Viṣṇu); Mbh.XIV appendix I, no.4, lines 971-2 (caṇḍālatvam for cānḍālatvam).

The threat in the last śloka that the householder neglectful of his guest will 'at once' (sadya eva) become a candāla refers to a 'visible' (dṛṣṭa) not an otherwordly (adṛṣṭa) result (see p.58). That man need not wait to be reborn as a candāla in his next life; he will at once be judged by others to be one. This recalls the point made by Sāyaṇa in his comment on the Taittirīyabrāhmaṇa quotation above (note 51). The 'visible' result of the man who eats without feeding others is that the food burns him then and there (tadānīm eva); he need not wait for the burning of the cremation fire or the flames of hell (Sāy. on Tait.Br., Dh.kośa II.1.p.477-8).

A final observation should be made concerning these punishments. Every ruling given by Tryambaka so far has been couched in the masculine, many of them involving terms that cannot be applied (by the modification of gender) to women. I have already discussed the implications of the term dvija (initiation, Vedic education, etc.): by the definition of Tryambaka's day, these cannot apply to women (see pp.34-9). The same can be said of all the other specific terms describing the householder host: 'the performer of the agnihotra ritual' (hutagnihotrah); 'the performer of the vaiśvadeva ritual' (krtavaiśvadevah); 'the man who offers oblations in five fires' (pañcāgnīn ... juhvatah); the reciter of the vedas, angas and upāngas; the performer of domestic rituals, the five 'great sacrifices' and soma rituals; and so on. Judging from these rulings, we may conclude that the responsibility for the honouring of guests remains that of the male householder, and that the punishments described will be inflicted on him. We may also assume, however, that the householder's wife, being his assistant in ritual matters, would be considered an accessory to her husband's crime, and punished accordingly.

The last śloka in the group attributed to the Aśvamedhikaparvan turns from the penalties incurred by inhospitality to the rewards in store for the householder who duly honours his guests. In this section, therefore, I have gathered together the quotations relating to this topic. Apart from the śloka attributed to Manu—which belongs to the same passage referred to earlier (Sdhp.14v.1-6; note 44)—all the quotations are taken in sequence, beginning with the final śloka in the Aśvamedhaparvan group.

'Whatever one does not offer (lit. "feed") to the guest, one should

not eat oneself: paying homage to the guest (in this way) brings one wealth, fame, long life and heaven.'57 This ruling recalls Kullūka's interpretation of satkṛṭya in Manu III.99: one should take the same care with seasoning, sauces, condiments and so on in relation to the guest's food as one does to one's own (vyanjanādibhiḥ satkṛṭaṃ cānnam, Kull.; see pp. 183-4). Since the wife is responsible for the cooking, this is in effect a ruling for her.

According to a śloka attributed to Śātātapa, the highest heaven is reserved for the householder who honours guests. 'For the householder cannot by means of either (Vedic) study, (performing) the agnihotra oblation, (offering) sacrifice, or (performing) austerities attain those (heavenly) worlds that are (his simply) as a result of honouring the guest.'58 A similar comparison is made in the sloka attributed earlier to Manu. 'That meritorious reward which one obtains by offering oblations in the fire according to the injunction - just like that, or even better, is the reward (obtained) when the brahmin (guest) is given satisfaction.'59 A śloka taken from Bhīsma's eulogy of guest-worship in the Anuśasanaparvan of the Mahabharata agrees. 'When a guest is honoured, whatever good he conceives in his mind (concerning his host) cannot be equalled by a hundred sacrifices, so men say.'60 We may again note that the references to Vedic study, sacrifices and so on indicate that the recipient of the reward is assumed to be the male householder. Presumably the devoted wife would be allowed to join her husband in the highest heaven. For she is said to be 'half her husband's body' (śarīrārdham smrta) and thus participates equally in both his merit and his

^{57.} naiva svayam tad aśnīyād atithim yan na bhojayet / dhanyam yaśasyam āyuṣyam svargyam cātithipūjanam // iti // Sdhp.14v.10-15r.1 < Sm.M.I. p.424; Par.M.I.i.p.403 (Mbh., aśvamedhika); Manu III.106 (vātithi for cātithi). Not in Mbh. crit. edn. index.

^{58.} śātātapo 'pi // svādhyāyenāgnihotreņa yajñena tapasā tathā / nāvāpnoti gṛhī lokān yathā tv atithipūjanāt // iti // Sdhp.15r.1-2 (Sāt.) < Sm.M.II.p.425 (Sāt.); Par.M.I.i.p.216 (Viṣṇu); Par.M.I.i.p.404 (Sāt.); Sm.C.II.p.593 (Viṣṇu); Viṣ.Sm.67.44 (na cāpnoti for nāvāpnoti).

^{59. (}manur api // Sdhp.14v.1) agnau hutvā vidhānena yat puņyaphalam ašnute / tena tulyam višiṣṭam vā brāhmane tarpite phalam // Sdhp.14v.3-4 (Manu) < ? Not in N.S. edn. of Manu.

^{60.} ānušāsanike 'pi // atithiḥ pūjito yad dhi dhyāyate manasā šubham / na tat kratu šatenāpi tulyam āhur manīṣiṇaḥ // iti // Sdhp.15r.2-4 (Mbh.) < Mbh.XIII.2.91 (yasya for yad dhi). See also Sdhp.66r.6-7, section V.3.c.ii.

sin (punyāpunyaphale samā; Apar.p.111, Brhaspati).

There follows a series of ślokas on the same subject, all attributed to the conversation between Tarksya and Sarasvatī in the Aranyakaparvan of the Mahābhārata (Mbh.III.184.1-25). In the critical edition of the Māhābhārata, however, all the ślokas are in fact to be found in the appendix to Mbh.III. 'The superior brahmin (lit. "best of twice-born") gives (food) to guests, beings and ancestors and (then) eats the dishes that remain (sistany annani) - what could be better than that? O Indra, there is nothing in the world more wholesome than this: that a man always gives food to guests and then eats of that (which is left). However many morsels of food a twice-born (guest) eats each day, the giver (host) receives the reward of (giving) that many thousands of cows (as sacrificial fee to the priests).'61 'O excellent Bharata, the reward (obtained) by washing the feet of a learned brahmin (guest) is (equal to) that obtained by giving a reddish-brown cow (cf. Yājñ.I.205) at Jyesthā lake (a sacred tīrtha; cf. PVK IV.p.759). As long as the ground remains wet from the water (used) for (washing) the feet of the twice-born, the ancestors will drink water from a lotus petal (cup). Welcoming (a guest) pleases the (three śrauta) fires; (offering) a seat (pleases) Indra; washing the feet (pleases) the ancestors; (offering) food (pleases) Prajāpati.'62

The emphasis on the idea that one should offer food to the guest and then eat what he leaves is a deliberate analogy with the sacrifice. As Tryambaka explains earlier, with regard to his quotation from the *Kathopanisad* (Sdhp.13v.5 < Kath.Up.I.7; see above, pp.185-8),

^{61.} āranyake parvani tārkṣyasarasvatīsamvāde // yo datvātithibhūtebhyaḥ pitrbhyaś ca dvijottamaḥ / śiṣṭāny annāni yo bhunkte kim vai sukhataram tataḥ // ato mṛṣṭataram nānya[l] loke kim cic chatakrato / datvā yas tv atithibhyo 'nnam bhunkte tenaiva nityaśaḥ // yāvato hy andhasaḥ piṇḍān aśnāti satatam dvijaḥ / tāvatām gosahasrānām phalam āpnoti dāyakaḥ // Sdhp.15r. 4-7 (Mbh.; PT, °ātithipūjyebhyaḥ for °ātithibhūtebhyaḥ) < Mbh.III.appendix I, no.21, ślokas 32-4 (nānyat pūrtaṃ for nānya[l] loke; vai for 'nnam; prāpnoti for āpnoti).

^{62.} kapilāyām tu dattāyām yat phalam jyeşthapuşkare/ tat phalam bharata śreṣṭha viprānām pādadhāvane//dvijapādodakaklinnā yāvat tiṣṭhati medinī/tāvat puṣkaraparṇena pibanti pitaro jalam//svāgatenāgnayas tṛpta< h>āsanena śatakratuh/ pitarah pādaśaucena // annādhyena prajāpatih// iti// Sdhp. 15r.7-10 (Mbh.)<Mbh.III appendix I, no.21A, lines 137-42; cf. Mbh.XIV appendix I, no.4, lines 944-7.

the guest is like fire. Like the sacrificial fire, he consumes the offering. What is left, like prasāda, is blessed. According to Manu III.285, one should eat both the residue of the offering to guests (vighasobhuktaśeṣam) and that of the sacrifice (yajñaśeṣam . . . amṛtam) every day. For in both 'sacrifices', food is magically transformed into nectar. A similar idea is to be found in the ruling that a pupil should first offer his alms-food to his teacher and then eat what is left: in this case, the teacher is the deity, the alms-food the sacrificial offering (bhaikṣaṃ haviṣā) and the teacher's stomach the āhavanīya fire (Āp.I.1.3.43-I.1.4.2). Similarly, at meal-times, the wife should offer cooked food to her husband and then eat what he leaves. I shall return to this point below (see ucchiṣṭa, pp.221-7).

Tryambaka himself develops this parallel between the fire sacrifice and the homage one should pay to guests. I return here to the original sequence of the treatise followed until half-way through section IIC (see p. 190). Tryambaka quotes at length from 'the *Brāhmaṇa* quoted by Āpastamba' (āpastambodāhṛtabrāhmaṇam api; that is, Āp.II.3.7.1-11).

Apastamba frequently cites the Brahmanas; more often than not with the phrase iti hi brāhmanam (e.g. Ap.I.1.1.10,11; I.1.3.9; I.1.3.26, see below; I.2.7.7,11; athāpi brāhmanam, I.3.10.8). In this particular case, the phrase is given in a separate sūtra and interpreted by Haradatta as referring to each of the preceding sūtras 1-10 (iti brāhmanam ity asya sarvena sambandhah; Uji. on Ap. II.3.7.11). Since sūtra 5 is also a quotation (... iti vijnāyate), Haradatta may have thought it necessary to stipulate that the Brāhmana quotation includes sūtras 1 to 5 as well as 6 to 10. Unfortunately, Bühler has been seriously misled by the comment. In his translation of sūtra 11, he takes brāhmanam to mean 'brahmin' (masc. acc.) instead of 'Brāhmana text' (neut. nom.). He notes that nine of the thirteen manuscripts used for his edition read iti brāhmanam instead of iti hi brāhmanam (Āp., Bühler edn., p.64, footnote); and that Haradatta has also dropped the hi. (In the Benares edition, the hi is dropped from both the sūtra and the commentary.) The resulting loss of the usual formula for citing the Brāhmana seems to have encouraged Bühler to interpret the phrase otherwise. He translates. 'Thus (a Brāhmana shall treat) a Brāhmana (and a Kshatriya and a Vaisya their caste-fellows).' He has evidently taken Haradatta's sarvena

saṃbandhaḥ to mean 'referring to each person' instead of 'referring to each sūtra'. To make sense of this translation, we must assume the verb and general construction of sūtras 12 (rājānaṃ ced atithir abhyāgacchet . . .) and 13 (āhitāgniṃ ced atithir abhyāgacchet . . .). According to Bühler's interpretation, therefore, we have a threefold distinction: the behaviour of a brahmin (sūtras 1-11); that of a king (sūtra 12); and that of an agnihotrin (sūtra 13).

But this is both unnecessary and wrong. For one thing, the agnihotrin is a brahmin. For another, unlike sūtras 12 and 13, the preceding group does not in fact describe the behaviour of the host at all. As Tryambaka's extract demonstrates, sūtras 1-11 spell out the symbolic correspondences in operation during the ritual of atithipūjā, whoever is acting as host. Sūtras 12 and 13 distinguish between the two most likely categories of host: the kṣatriya, exemplified here by the king (rājābhiṣiktaḥ kṣatriyo 'sāv . . .; Ujj.); and the brahmin, exemplified here by the agnihotrin. A further problem with Bühler's interpretation is his translation of brāhmaṇam to include not only the brahmin guest but the kṣatriya and vaiśya as well. For while the term dvija ('twice-born') often denotes the brahmin alone (e.g. Rām.III.46.32b-35 < Sdhp.15v.3-8; see note 69 below), the term brāhmaṇa never denotes all the twice-born varnas.

The passage reads as follows. 'That same (homage to guests; or "sacrifice to men", manusyayajñah, Ujj.) is a (śrauta) sacrifice eternally performed by the householder to Prajapati. The fire of the guest (his digestive fire; jātharo 'gnih, Ujj.) is the āhavanīya fire. The fire in the household (the domestic fire; grhe 'gnir aupāsanah, Ujj.) is the garhapatya fire. The fire in which the cooking is done (the ordinary fire; laukikāgnih, Ujj.) is the fire for cooking the sacrificial offering (the daksinagni, Ujj.). If a man eats before his guest (has eaten), then he devours (destroys) the nourishment, prosperity, offspring, cattle, sacrifices and good works of the household. Food that is mixed with milk (paya upasecanam yasya tad annam; Ujj.) (and offered to the guest) corresponds to the agnistoma sacrifice; that mixed with ghee to the ukthya sacrifice; that mixed with honey to the atiratra sacrifice; that mixed with meat to the dvadasa sacrifice; that mixed with water brings fame and an increase in progeny. It is recognized (by the authorities) that both the guests one likes and those one dislikes enable one to go to the heavenly world. When one gives (food to guests) in the morning, at midday,

and in the evening, these (three rituals) become the (three) pressings of soma. When one rises after (the guest himself has risen to go; yad gantum uttistham anutisthati, Ujj.), that is the ritual of leaving the place of sacrifice. When one addresses (the guest) kindly, (i.e. when one performs the ritual of) praise, that is the sacrificial fee. When one takes one's leave (of a guest; i.e. follows him out as a mark of respect; anuvrajanam, Ujj.), his steps are the visnukramāḥ (the steps taken by the sacrificer between the altar and the āhavanīya fire). When one comes back (into the house afterwards), that is the purificatory bath (marking the end of the sacrifice). Thus declares the Brāhmana text.'63

All the rituals named are types of *soma* sacrifice. I have discussed above how frequently echoes of Vedic sacrifice reappear in later rituals (see pp.102-7, pp.176-8). In this example, as in that of the internalization of the sacrifice (*prānāgnihotra*), those echoes are deliberately sought and stressed. The purpose, and the result, is to bestow on the ritual homage to the guest the grandeur, sanctity and authority of Vedic sacrifice. By extension, therefore, the role of the wife in this apparently domestic ritual is raised to the level of the *dharmapatnī* in the *śrauta* sacrifice. As we have seen, no higher religious office is open to her.

This brings us to the central issue under discussion: the role of the wife in the ritual homage to the guest.

I shall begin with a point raised by Tryambaka considerably earlier, in the context of the *vaiśvadeva* ritual (see pp.180-3). For it is the wife's duty 'to prepare the food for the *vaiśvadeva* ritual, for the homage to guests and so on.'64 Tryambaka's evidence

63. āpastambodāhṛtabrāhmaṇam api // sa eṣa prājāpatyaḥ kuṭumbino yajño nityapratataḥ // yo 'tithīnām agniḥ sa āhavanīyo yaḥ kuṭumbe sa gārhapatyo yasmin pacyate so 'nvādhāryapacanaḥ // ūrjam puṣṭim prajām paśūn iṣṭāpūrtam iti gṛhāṇām aśnāti / yaḥ pūrvo 'tither aśnāti // paya upasecanam annam agniṣṭomasaṃmitam sarpiṣokthyasaṃmitam madhunātirātrasaṃmitam māṃsena dvādaśāhasaṃmitam udakena prajāvṛddhir āyusaś ca // priyā apriyāś cātithayaḥ svargaṃ lokaṃ gamayantīti vijñāyate// sa yat prātar madhyandine sāyam iti dadāti savanāny eva tāni bhavanti // yad anutiṣṭhaty udavasyaty eva tat // yat sāntvayati sā dakṣiṇā praśaṃsā // yat saṃsādhayati te viṣṇu-kramāḥ // yad upāvartate so 'vabhṛthaḥ // iti hi brāhmaṇam // iti // Sdhp.14r.4–14v.1 (Āp.) < Āp.II.3.7.1–11. Cf. Sm.C.II.p.591 (sū.4 only).

64. See note 36.

for this ruling—given in his section on the vaiśvadeva ritual but, for reasons of consistency, dealt with here—is taken from the chapter in the Viṣṇupurāṇa describing the conversation between the seer, Rbhu, and his pupil, Nidāgha (rbhunidāghasaṃvāda). When Rbhu comes to Nidāgha's house as a guest, Nidāgha instructs his wife, Śālinī, as follows. "O Śālinī, using all the most exquisite delicacies to be found in my house, prepare food for him." Instructed in this way by him (Nidāgha), his wife prepared that food which is (considered) wholesome (i.e. acceptable) for a brahmin (lit. "twiceborn"); (and she did this) because of the authority of a husband's command."

Several points already raised may be reaffirmed here. The term patnī reinforces the parallel with the Vedic sacrifice and the importance of the wife's role as sacrificer's assistant (section IIB, pp. 107–15). The instruction detailing the culinary preparations recalls Kullūka's ruling concerning the care that should be taken with the guest's food (see pp.183–5), and the fact that one should not eat oneself what one does not offer the guest (see pp.193–6). Finally, although the wife is responsible for the actual preparation of the food, the reference to her husband's 'command' indicates under whose authority she functions. This in turn recalls earlier pronouncements concerning punishments and rewards consequent upon this ritual: the ultimate responsibility rests with him (see pp.185–8, 193–6).

Returning to Tryambaka's section on atithipūjā, and back in sequence once more, the next point concerns the presence of the wife. When the husband is present, it is his responsibility; when he is absent, his wife should act on his behalf. As Tryambaka explains, 'if the husband has gone away, any guest who comes (to the house) should be honoured by his wife (patnī) instead.'66 '(This is so) because it has been established that the presence of a wife in the house is necessary for the (offering of) food to a guest, as is indicated in Manu's statement that "one should recognize (as a guest) one

^{65.} tathā ca viṣṇupurāṇe ṛbhunidāghasaṃvāde nidāghaḥ // he he śālini madgehe yat kimcid atiśobhanam/bhaksyopasādhanam sarvaṃ tenāsyānnaṃ prasādhaya // ity uktā tena sā patnī mṛṣṭam annaṃ dvijasya yat / prasādhitavatī tad vai bhartur vacanagauravāt // iti // Sdhp.12v.9-13r.1 (Viṣ.P.) < Viṣ. P.II. 15.14-15 (mrstam for sarvaṃ; miṣṭam for mrstam).

^{66.} patyur vipravāse patnyāpi samāgato 'tithiḥ pūjanīyaḥ // Sdhp.15r.

who has come to a house where there is both a wife and the (three) fires." 67

In fact, the half-śloka quoted here by Tryambaka (Manu III.103b) must be taken together with Manu III.102 and 103a to make complete sense. Verse 102 defines the term 'guest' (atithi): a brahmin who stays for one night (ekarātram tu nivasan . . . brāhmanah). Verse 103 expands upon this. One should not recognize (na, III.103a; vidyāt, III.103b) the following people as guests: a brahmin who lives in the same village, or one who is making a social or business call (naikagrāmīṇam atithim vipram sāmgatikam tathā; III. 103a), even if he has come to a house where there is a wife and the sacred fires (III.103b). The implication of the half-śloka is now clear: the house in which the guest may be properly honoured is that of the agnihotrin in which the three śrauta fires are worshipped; and in which the (chief) wife is present. This recalls the very similar rulings concerning the importance of the patnī at the fire ritual. There as here, the husband may be absent but not the wife (see section IIB, pp.132-41).

Tryambaka draws his evidence for this ruling from the two episodes cited earlier in relation to whether or not the good wife should talk to a man who is not related to her (see pp.170-6): Sītā's meeting with Rāvaṇa, and Draupadī's with Jayadratha. He begins with the first incident. As he explains, 'it is because of this (ruling; ata eva) that it is said in the Rāmāyaṇa that Sītā paid homage to Rāvaṇa when he came to her in the guise of a brahmin, even though Rāma was away (at the time).'68 The quotation reads as

follows.

'Now when she saw Rāvaṇa, who had come in the guise of a brahmin, Maithilī (Sītā) honoured him with all the attentions (traditionally enjoined) for a guest. First, she brought him a seat (āsana; usually a low wooden seat, see pp.183-4; but see also bṛṣṣ̄ below) and invited him (to sit) with (the offer of) water to wash his feet. Then she said to that seemingly gentle man, "It is ready." Seeing that he had come in the guise of a twice-born, that he

67. upasthitam grhe vidyād bhāryā yatrāgnayo 'pi vā (Sdhp.15v.1, Manu < Manu III.103b) iti manuvacanenātithibhojanasya grhe bhāryāsatve niyatatva-pratipādanāditi // Sdhp.15v.1-2.

68. ata eva rāmāyaņe sītayā dvijātiveseņa samāgatasya rāvaņasya rāmā-sannidhāne 'pi kṛtety uktam// Sdhp. 15v.2-3 (rāmāsannidhāne 'pi is inserted in the upper margin of the MS).

was carrying an alms-bowl and water-pot, and that it was impossible to find a way of avoiding him, the woman Maithili invited him as (one usually invites) a brahmin. "Here is a cushion (bṛṣī), O brahmin: sit if you will. And here is water for washing your feet: please accept it. And here, prepared (especially) for you, is the best forest produce: may you eat here undisturbed." '67

Two things persuade Sītā to treat Rāvana as she would an honoured guest. First, he looks like a brahmin. The term 'twiceborn' (dvija, dvijāti) is repeatedly assumed here to be synonymous with 'brahmin' (brāhmanavat, brāhmana). Secondly, he looks like an ascetic (parivrājakarūpena, Rām.III.46.4; parivrājakalingena, Rām.III.47.1); that is, he carries the alms-bowl and the water-pot that are the outward signs of the ascetic (cf. Manu VI.52; Baudh.II. 10.17.11; Yājñ.III.58,60). The 'attentions' (satkāraih; cf. satkrtya, p.184), that Sītā offers him are thus appropriate both to her own forest existence and to the apparent asceticism of the recipient. Manu, for example, rules that forest hermits should live off the produce of the forest (vanyam; Manu VI.12), vegetables, flowers, roots and fruits (śākāni puspamūlaphalāni ca; Manu VI.13). Indeed, a brahmin ascetic should ideally receive alms from twiceborn householders who also live in the forest (grhamedhisu cānyesu dvijesu vanavāsisu; Manu VI.27). Moreover, the 'cushion' (brsī) that Sītā offers Rāvana is the special bundle of cloth or grass considered appropriate to the ascetic ('Wulst, Bausch von gewundenem Gras u.s.w.', Böhtlingk and Roth).

The earlier lengthy quotation concerning Draupadī and Jayadratha's messenger, Kotikāśya, was taken from Mbh.III.250 (see pp.173-5). In this section, the extract is from the following chapter.

69. dvijātiveṣeṇa hi tam dṛṣṭvā rāvaṇam āgatam // sarvair atithisatkāraih pūjayāmāsa maithilī / upānīyāsanam pūrvam pādyenābhinimantrya ca // abravīt siddham ity eva tadā tam saumyadarśanam / dvijātiveṣeṇa samīkṣya maithilī samāgatam pātrakusumbhadhāriṇam / aśakyam uddveṣtum upāyadarśanam nyamantrayad brāhmaṇavat tadāṅganā // iyam bṛṣī brāhmaṇa kāma(ka)m āṣyatām idaṃ ca pādyam pratigrhyatām(iti/(idam ca siddham vanajātam uttamam tvadartham avyagram ihopabhujyatām//iti//Sdhp.15v.3-8 (cātrakusumbhadhāriṇam amended to pātra°; idaṃ ca siddhaṃ ... ihopabhujyatām given as marginal insert; Rām.) < Rām.III.46.32b-35 (upanīyāsanam for upānīyāsanam; upāyadarśanān for upāyadarśanam); Dharmāk.III.p.174 (Rām.III.46.32b-33a, given as one śloka). PT prefers the variant reading saumyadarśana for °darśanam.

After receiving Koţikāśya's report, Jayadratha decides to pay Draupadī a visit. Draupadī's response is to show him the respect due to the guest. Her formal invitation forms Tryambaka's next quotation.

'O son of a king, accept this water for washing your feet and this (wooden) seat. Let me give you your morning meal—fifty deer (if you like)! Kuntī's son, Yudhiṣthira, will himself (i.e on his return) present you with black antelopes, spotted deer, nyanku deer, tawny deer, śarabha deer, śaśa deer, nilgai, ruru deer, śambara deer, gayal, and many (other) kinds of deer (mrga), (as well as) wild boar, wild buffalo and whatever other wild animals (mrgajātī) there are.'70

I have taken the term mrga on its own to denote the various species of deer - at least fifty, according to Draupadi - and mrgajātī (fem. pl.) to indicate the other kinds of wild animals. For this reason, although śaśa can mean either a rabbit or a species of deer (and although van Buitenen prefers the former), I have assumed the latter. For the same reason, and also because bears are not normally considered appropriate food, I have amended the reading in T, (rksān) to that in the critical edition of the Mahābhārata (rśyān). The latter term denotes the painted or white-footed antelope, commonly called 'nilgai'. The term gavayān denotes the species of wild cattle called 'gayal' which is traditionally classed as a kind of deer. It is also often confused with the 'cow-deer' (gomrga; translated as 'gayal' by Keith 1914:144; see also Colebrooke 1805), which is included among the sacrificial victims of the asvamedha (Sat.Br.XIII.2.2.2) and equated elsewhere with cattle (Sat.Br.XIII. 3.4.3). According to Sāyana, the gomrga is a cross between a deer and a bull (Say. on Tait.Sam.II.1.10.2). There seems to be good reason, however, to suggest that the nilgai, gayal and gomrga are in fact three quite different animals (see Colebrooke 1805; Eggeling 1978:V,338-9, note 1).

^{70.} vanaparvani jayadratham prati draupady api // pādyam pratigṛhānedam āsanam ca nṛpātmaja // mṛgān pañcāśatam caiva prātar āśam dadāni te // eneyān pṛṣatān [n]yaṅkūn hariṇān śarabhān śaśān / ṛśyān rurūn śambarāmś ca gavayāmś ca mṛgān bahūn // varāhān mahiṣāmś caiva yāś cānyā mṛgajātayah / pradāsyati svayam tubhyam kuntīputro yudhiṣṭhiraḥ // iti // Sdhp.15v.8-16r.2 (ṛkṣān amended to ṛśyān; PT reads raṅkūn for [n]yaṅkūn; Mbh.) < Mbh.1II.251. 11-13 (variant readings include śakān and śalān for śaśān; ṛkṣān for ṛśyān).

While Sītā's offering of fruit and vegetables is appropriate for the brahmin ascetic, Draupadi's offering of a splendid selection of meat dishes is equally appropriate for a ksatriya king. (Before their exile, Draupadī supervised the daily feeding of eight thousand brahmins off golden plates; see Sdhp.29v.10-30r.3<Mbh.III.222. 40-3; from section IV, pp.280-1). The other formalities are the same, as is the requirement that the ideal wife obeys the rules of hospitality even when she suspects that her 'guest' is a rogue. In both cases, obedience far outweighs commonsense.

Tryambaka's final point regarding the role of the wife in offering hospitality concerns her treatment of the Vedic student. 'Because of the smrti statement that it is a sin not to give, women must give alms to Vedic students (brahmacāribhyoh) who come (to the house to beg) for alms.'71 Tryambaka's evidence for this is taken from Āpastamba's section on Vedic studentship. The concluding phrase iti hi brāhmanam, not given here by Tryambaka, again indicates a quotation from a Brāhmana text (cf. above, pp. 196-7).

According to Apastamba, 'if women refuse to give alms to a Vedic student whose mind is concentrated (samāhit[ah]), then he will snatch away the (religious merit they have obtained by) śrauta sacrifice (yāgair arjitam dharmam; Ujj.), religious donation (dānenārjitam; Ujj.), oblation (into the domestic fire; darvihomair gārhyair arjitam, Ujj.), (as well as their) offspring, cattle, the glory of sacred learning (brahmavarcasam), and food. That is why the wandering order of Vedic students should never be refused (alms).'72 The last clause, omitted here by Tryambaka, explains that, amongst those students who come to beg at the house, there may well be one who would put that threat into practice (evamvidhi evamvratah).

Two points may be made here. First, this is the only occasion in Tryambaka's treatment of atithipūjā - apart from the ruling that the wife should act on her husband's behalf when he is away (see notes 66 and 67) - when the injunction is applied specifically to women (strīnām). Usually, the ruling is either given in the masculine

71. strībhir bhikṣārtham āgatebhyo brahmacāribhyoh bhikṣā deyā / adāne dosaśravanāt // Sdhp.16t.2.

^{72.} tathā cāpastambhah // strīnām pratyācaksānānām samāhito brahmacārīstam / dattam hutam prajām pašūn brahmavarcasam annādyam vrnkte / tasmād u ha vai brahmacārisangham carantam na pratyācaksitā // iti // Sdhp. 16r.3-5 (Ap.; hutam omitted by PT) < Ap.I.1.3.26.

(e.g. yo mā dadāti; yo datvā; etc.) or applied directly to the male householder (e.g. dvijaḥ, gṛhī, etc.). Despite the fact that the wife's presence is more important than that of her husband, and that she will actually prepare and serve the food, the ruling is invariably aimed at the husband. Moreover, the reward for obedience and the punishment for disobedience are, as we have seen, both explained in terms of the husband's gain or loss (see pp.188-93, 193-6). The wife's part in all this must be read between the lines. In dharma-sāstra literature in general, however, the rulings relating to giving alms to the Vedic student are consistently couched in the feminine.

For example, when the student goes on his begging round in the village, he is almost always advised to apply first to one or more women (those who will not refuse, Par.gr.II.5.5-6, Sankh.gr.II. 6.6; to his mother, Par.gr.II.5.6, Sankh.gr.II.6.5; or to any female relative who will not refuse, Manu II.50; cf. Aśv.gr.1.22.7). The formula he should use when he begs almost always assumes that he is talking to a woman, the position of the honorific vocative bhavati depending on the varna of the woman addressed (Pār.gr.II.5.2-4; Āp.I.1.3.28-30; Manu II.49; see also Wujastyk 1981:34; but ci. Aśv.gr.I.22.8). The distinction between the man's responsibility for the ritual homage of the guest and the woman's responsibility to give alms to the student demonstrates that while the former is a 'great sacrifice' (mahāyajña; see pp.176-8), the latter is not. It seems fitting too that the real Vedic student should beg from the householder's wife, who is traditionally described as a quasistudent in her husband-guru's home (Manu II.67<Sdhp.2r.8-9; see section I, p.35, note 16).

The second point concerns the things that the student may 'snatch away' from the ungenerous wife. This is not the usual formula of 'reputation, prosperity and long life' but a specific list of religious practices or goals. What is interesting is that Tryambaka himself takes the orthodox line that a woman cannot offer either *śrauta* or *grhya* sacrifices (section IIB, pp.107-15) or make religious donations in her own right (see section IV, pp.277-80). He does not discuss the question of children, but the orthodox view is that they belong to the husband for he owns both 'seed' and 'field' (e.g. Manu IX.32-3, 35-7; cf. section IV, pp. 300-2). The threat to cattle is to property that Tryambaka maintains is owned by the wife jointly with the rest of the household, although she has no

right to dispose of it (see section IV, pp.277-80).

The threat to the wife's 'sacred learning' is the most curious of all. For while the wife may be said to act 'jointly' with her husband in matters relating to religious rituals, donations, property and children - and thus that the rewards accrue to both of themthis cannot be said of Vedic learning. In the Taittirīyopanisad, 'the glory of sacred learning' (brahmavarcasam) - together with offspring, cattle and fame - is the goal and reward of the enlightened man (Tait.Up.III.6,7,8,9,10). In dharmaśāstra, the same phrase is used specifically in contexts relating to Vedic studentship. Manu II.37, for example, rules that if a brahmin boy desires this goal (brahmavarcasakāmasya), he should be initiated in his fifth year. Kullūka glosses the term as 'the ascetic power made brilliant by such things as knowing how to recite the Veda and knowing what it means' (vedādhyayanatadarthajñānādiprakarsakrtam tejas). According to the orthodox view, this may apply to a woman's husband or to her son, but never to herself. We seem to have three options here. We could assume that the ruling dates from an earlier age when women did have access to Vedic study. Or we could reinterpret the phrase in terms of 'domestic glory' (cf. Sankara's gloss on panditā, discussed in section I, p. 38). Or we could take more literally the maxim that 'husband and wife are one' (yo bhartā sa smrtānganā; Manu IX.45), assume their complete identification in matters of religious achievement and merit (yataś ca dampatyor aikyamatah; Kull.), and interpret all the threats accordingly.

Tryambaka concludes his treatment of atithipūjā by distinguishing between the 'guest' (atithi) proper and other casual visitors. For, as he explains, 'after the vaiśvadeva ritual, homage should be paid by offering such things as food, as one would to a guest, to other visitors and so on.'73 Any visitor to an Indian home today will find that this is still the case.

Tryambaka quotes Vyāsa. 'At the appropriate time, the wife—that is, the female head of the household (gṛhamukhī)—should always be attentive in (offering) seats, food and gifts, in paying

^{73.} vaiśvadevānantaram atithivad abhyāgatādīnām annadānādinā pūjā kartavyā // Sdhp.16r.5-6 (pūjyā amended to pūjā).

respect and speaking pleasantly, as is fitting and in accordance with their merits, to (each of the following people): one's elders (or those who are worthy of respect; cf. pp.156-7), the friends of one's son(s), one's relations, the labourers one supports, those one has invited, any male or female slaves (dāsīdāsajanasya), both guests (proper) and (ordinary) visitors, and those religious mendicants who wear a sectarian mark (bhikṣukānām ca linginām).'74

We may note several things here. First, the ruling is aimed at the 'female head of the household' (grhamukhī), that is, to the senior wife of the male head of the household (whether or not the customs of polygamy and the joint family are in operation). Secondly, the wife's responsibility covers not only the offering of food and so on but also the observation of the correct order of rank or merit (cf. Vas.XI.6). The distinction between ordinary dependent labourers and slaves (or perhaps śūdra servants) is interesting. The reference to religious mendicants as a separate category from 'guests' reinforces my remarks above concerning the Vedic student who comes to beg for alms (pp.203-5). Manu III.94 also distinguishes between the 'guest' (atithi) on the one hand and the ascetic (bhikṣave; parivrāje, Kuil.) and the student (brahmacārine; prathamāśramine, Kull.) on the other. Both the ascetic and the student are entitled to receive food and so on, but neither should be termed 'guests'.

This is not for lack of respect. The renouncer in particular is accorded enormous respect by householders. For example, Haradatta on Āp.II.2.4.10, indicates that some food should be set aside as alms before one even attends to one's guests. According to Par. Sm.I.51, one must perform the cāndrāyaṇa penance if one fails to give alms to the student and the ascetic before one eats oneself. Even in the twentieth century, a pious woman on a student's regular begging round will not eat until the student has come for his share (Wujastyk 1981:34). But it is customary for a genuine religious mendicant to disturb a household as little as possible; to come when the cooking is done, when the meal is finished, and even the remains have been cleared away (Manu VI.56; Vas.X.8); certainly never to

74. tathā ca vyāsah// gurūnām putramitrānām bandhūnām karmakārinām/
āhūtānām ca bhṛtyānām dāsīdāsajanasya ca// atithyabhyāgatānām ca bhikṣukānām ca linginām/āsane bhojane dāne sa[m]māne priyabhāṣane// tat tad
gunānusārena prāpte kāle yathocitam / dakṣayā sarvadā bhāvyam bhāryayā
grhamukhyayā // iti // Sdhp.16r.6-9 (Vyāsa) < ?

sit down to a formal meal (cf. Olivelle 1977:47-8). Food is no longer of great importance to him. Nonetheless, as Tryambaka explains in his section on general behaviour, the ideal wife never eats before she has distributed food to gods, ancestors, guests, servants, cows and the company of religious mendicants (bhikṣukuleṣu, Sdhp. 23r.10-23v.1; from section IV, pp.273-4). The reference to a sectarian mark (cf. section IIA, pp.99-100), deliberately excludes mendicants belonging to non-Hindu sects. Buddhist and Jain monks, for example, and others like them, should not be fed at all by the orthodox Hindu.

Surprisingly, Tryambaka does not in fact define the term 'guest' (atithi). The definitions in other texts are various. According to the Aitareyāranyaka, for example, if one 'attains excellence' (śrestatām aśnute) one is a guest; if not, then one is not worthy of hospitality (Ait. Ar.I.1.1). The Rāmāyana episode regarding Sītā and Ravana assumes a definition that does not exclude the religious mendicant. In the Kathopanisad, the term seems to cover any brahmin who has arrived unexpectedly. Later authorities rule that a brahmin should not treat a man of lower caste as a 'guest' (Gaut.I. 1.39; Manu III.110-12; Āp.II.2.4.18-20). According to Parāśara, the term denotes someone, not from one's own village, who does not stay long (anityam āgatah, Par.Sm.I.42; cf. Gaut.I.5.36). Mādhava comments that all those who move on before the day is over (tithipūrvotsavāh sarve) may be called 'guests'; the rest are merely 'visitors' (sesān abhyāgatān; Par.M.I.i.p.p.398, Yama). As noted above, Manu excludes anyone who is from the same village or on a social or business call (Manu III.103; Par.M.I.i.p.398-9). The previous verse defines the guest as a brahmin who stays for only one night, and derives the term accordingly (anityam hi sthito yasmāt tasmād atithir ucyate; Manu III.102). In the Visnupurāna, the term denotes one whose family is not known (ajñātakulanāmānam), who is destitute (akiñcanam), unrelated to oneself (asambandham), or from another country (anyadeśāt samāgatam; Vis.P.III.11. 59-60; cf. Par.M.I.p.398). The Markandeyapurana excludes friends (mitram; cf. Manu III.110,113), defining the guest as a brahmin who arrives hungry (bubhuksum), tired (śrāntam) or begging (yācamānam; Mārk.P.29.26-8; Par.M.I.i.p.399). The last of these conflicts with the rulings given earlier classing mendicants and Vedic students as 'non-guests', but agrees with the Rāmāyana episode.

Tryambaka next considers the order in which 'guests' and 'visitors' should be made welcome. According to Āpastamba, 'the feeding of guests comes first.' The quotation runs as follows. 'One should feed guests first of all; then children, the old, the sick and any pregnant woman ([a]ntarvatnīḥ; but see Ujj. below). The two owners (of the house) should not refuse anyone who asks for food at the (appropriate) time.' The last sūtra is also quoted at the beginning of this section on atithipūjā (see above, note 43).

To explain these rulings further, Tryambaka quotes at length from the *Ujjvalā*, Haradatta's commentary on the *Āpastambadharmasūtra*. 'The term "guests" he (Āpastamba) will explain (later). One should feed them first of all. One should not eat either with them or before them. And those children who are living in one's house one should also feed first (i.e. before oneself). Since the term *antarvatnī* ("pregnant woman") is complete in itself (*siddha*), the word *strī* ("woman") is meant to indicate sisters and so on as well. The use of the term *antarvatnī* means that she (the pregnant woman) should always be honoured (in this way). "At the (appropriate) time" means at the time of the *vaiśvadeva* ritual; that is, at the end of it. The two owners (*svāminau*), that is, the master and mistress of the house (*gṛhapatī*), should not refuse anyone who has come there hoping for food. Something should definitely be given to him.'77

Tryambaka concludes the commentary himself. '(This is so) because it says in the *Mahābhārata*, "she who gives food at the (appropriate) time". "Children, the old and the sick" means

^{75.} atithīnām agre bhojanam āhāpastambaḥ // Sdhp.16r.9-10.

^{76.} atithīn evāgre bhojayet // bālān vrddhān rogasambandhān strīś cāntarvatnīh // kāle svāmināv annārthinam na pratyācakṣīyātām // Sdhp.16r.10-16v.1 (Āp.) < Āp.II.2.4.11-13. Cf. note 43.

^{77.} atrof[j]valā // atithīn vakṣyati / tān evāgre bhojayen na (svayam saha bhuñjīta pūrvam vā // ye ca gṛhe vartamānā bālādayas tān apy agre bhojayet / antarvatnīr ity eva siddhe strīgrahaṇam svasrādīnām api gṛahaṇārtham / antarvatnīgrahaṇam sarvatra pūjārtham // kāle vaiśvadevakāle tadante[/] annārthinam upasthitam svāminau gṛhapatī na pṛatyācakṣīyātām / avaśyam tasmai kimci[d] deyam // iti // Sdhp.16v.1-5 (Ujj.; PT reads sarvapūrvārtham for sarvatra pūjārtham) < Ujj. on Āp.II.2.4.11-13, Benares edn., p.192 (comment on verse 11 incomplete; gṛhavartino for gṛhe vartamānā; agra eva for agre; vaiśvadevānte for vaišvadevakāle tadante; annārtham for annārthinam). Cf. Bombay edn. (sarvapūrvārtham for sarvatra pūjārtham).

"everyone". Therefore what is needed (food, etc.) should be given to whoever (comes) at whatever time (he comes)." 18

Several points are worth noting here. First, it is interesting that not only important guests and casual visitors but also dependants such as children, the old and the sick should be fed before the master of the house. Even more remarkable is Haradatta's suggestion that women such as 'sisters and so on' should be fed before him. However, if we compare similar rulings in Manu III.114, Vas.XI.7 and Baudh.II.7.13.5, we find some agreement with Haradatta's interpretation. Manu, for example, suggests that, even before one's guests, one should feed suvāsinih, as well as children, the sick, and pregnant women (garbhinīh). In this context, the term suvāsinī means 'a woman who lives in a good or comfortable house', and usually denotes the daughter, whether married or not, who lives in her father's house (cf. Medh. on Manu III.114). Both Sarvajñanārāyana and Nandana read svavāsinīh and take it to mean 'sisters'. Vas.XI.7 rules that, after feeding one's guests, one should feed the following members of one's own family (svagrhyānām): the unmarried girls (kumārī), the children (bāla), the old, the adolescent boys (taruna°) and the pradātāh. Unable to translate the last term, Bühler retains it while suggesting that it denotes 'a class of female relatives'. The Calcutta edition amends it to prabhrtīn ('dependants'), while Führer's edition reads prajātāh ('women who have given birth'; Bühler 1965:50, note 7). Baudhāyana's ruling simply lists 'guests, pregnant women, children, the old, the wretched and the sick', and makes no mention of other women at all.

Certainly, the custom in the more traditional homes today is for the women to eat only after their menfolk, guests and children have been served. However, it is also a widespread custom for the pregnant woman to return to her parents' home to deliver her child. In this case, the pregnant woman would also be the daughter or sister of the household. Haradatta's 'sisters and so on' would therefore include the unmarried and therefore very young girls, the married daughters on a visit home, pregnant women and those who have recently delivered a child. It would not include the wives of the

^{78.} kāle bhojanadāyinī (Sdhp.16v.5, Mbh. < Mbh.III.222.25a) iti bhārata-vacanāt / bālavṛddhāturādīnāṃ sarveṣāṃ yasmin kāle yasyāpekṣitæṃ tadā tasmai deyam // iti // Sdhp.16v.5-6.

male members of the household. In view of the importance of children and other rulings on pregnancy, the special treatment of the pregnant woman is not surprising (cf. section IV, pp.289-90). Finally, Tryambaka's last rather sweeping comment seems to render unnecessary most of the careful rulings he has made so far.

The final (unattributed) quotation in this section is attributed to the *Anuśāsanaparvan* of the *Mahābhārata* in section IV. 'The woman who provides food for weak, helpless, wretched, blind and poverty-stricken brahmins is (rightly called) "one who participates in the religious observances of her husband (pativratabhāginī)." '79

This quotation reinforces two major points concerning atithip $\bar{u}j\bar{a}$. First, it emphasizes the importance of the brahmin recipient of food and homage. As we have seen, the brahmin is the ideal guest for kṣatriya households (such as those in court circles) and, according to some, the only guest acceptable to the brahmin host. Secondly, the wife's tasks of preparing food, welcoming the guest, speaking pleasantly and serving him are all seen as her duty towards her husband's religious commitments rather than her own. In her role of ritual assistant, the wife's religious duty is to assist her husband in his $(pativratabh\bar{a}gin\bar{\imath}; cf. pp.50, 107-15, 281-2)$.

At meals (bhojanam; Sdhp.16v.8-19r.9)

Tryambaka next describes the duties of the wife that relate to eating (plates 6-9). This is an important topic in dharmaśāstra for, according to Manu V.4, mistakes in this sphere (annadoṣāt) are among the four main causes of death to brahmins. (The others are lack of Vedic study, failure to perform the appropriate actions, and laziness.) In fact, Tryambaka's presentation is by no means as elaborate as one might expect. His rulings may be divided into six categories: the wife's duty to serve at meals; the requirement that she should not be present when her husband eats; how she should serve the food; her own meal; her offering to the goddess Jyeṣṭhā; and, lastly, her post-prandial obligations such as clearing up and offering betel.

Tryambaka begins with the statement that the religious duty of

^{79.} brāhmaṇān durbalānāthān dīnāndhakṛpaṇāṃs tathā / bibharty annena yā nārī sā pativratabhāginī // iti // Sdhp.16v.6-7<Mbh.XIII.134.48. See also Sdhp.32v.5-6 (from section IV, pp.281-2).

women also includes serving at meals (parivesanam).80 Four quotations follow: the first indicates the duty of the wife to serve food to brahmins; the remaining three describe her duty to serve at her husband's meal (see plate 7).

The story of Uttanka,81 from the Adiparvan of the Mahabharata, is a curious one and Tryambaka quotes only what he needs. Uttanka is a student living in the house of his brahmin teacher, Veda. When Veda has to go away for a time, he asks his pupil to take his place (yat kimcid asmadgrhe parihīyate tad icchāmy aham aparihīnam bhavatā kriyamānam iti; Mbh.I.3.86). During Veda's absence, however, his senior wife (upādhyāyinī; see below) comes into her 'season' (rtumatī; that is, she enters the period after menstruation when husband and wife should make love). The other women (strībhih) instruct Uttanka to substitute for Veda in this matter also (Mbh.I.3.89). Uttanka refuses on the grounds that intercourse with one's teacher's wife is forbidden (akāryam); and Veda's orders do not include wrong-doing (Mbh.I.3.90). When Veda returns, he rewards Uttanka by granting him leave to go (i.e. his period of studentship is deemed to have been successfully completed). But when Uttanka asks to give the traditional thanks-offering (gurvartham; Mbh.I.3.95), Veda cannot decide what he wants. He sends Uttanka to his wife instead; and his pupil repeats the question to her (Mbh.I.3.98-9). Tryambaka's quotation contains her response.

'Addressed in this way, the teacher's wife answered Uttanka. "Go to Pausya. Beg from him the earrings worn by his kṣatriyā wife, and bring them (to me). In four days, there will be a religious ceremony, and I wish to serve food to the brahmins wearing those earrings. On that day, I shall make myself beautiful with those earrings. May good fortune be yours—(go and) beg!" 82

80. parivesanam api strīdharmah // Sdhp.16v.8.

81. Regarding the spelling of the name, the critical edition reads 'Uttanka'. Despite Sukthankar's second thoughts (addenda to Mbh.I.3.86) and van Buitenen's preference for 'Utanka', I have retained Tryambaka's spelling. According to Sukthankar, this is the spelling of the Bengali MSS, 'Udanka' being preferred by the southern recension.

82. ata evādiparvani uttankopādhyāyinyāh pativesanam uktam//saivam uktopādhyāyiny uttankam uvāca/gaccha pausyam bhiksasva tasya kṣatriyayā ye pinaddhe kuṇḍale stah/ te ānayasveti/ itas caturthe hani puṇyakam bhavitā/tābhyām ābaddhābhyām brāhmaṇān pariveṣṭum icchāmi/sobhayamānā mām yaṭhā tābhyām kuṇḍalābhyām tasminn ahani saṃpādayāmi/śreyo hi te syād

Tryambaka's point is that if brahmins are to be fed, then the host's chief wife should serve them. We may note two further points. First, the story is an interesting demonstration of a conflict of duties: the student's duty to obey his teacher to the letter; the prohibition on intercourse with one's teacher's wife (one of the five mahāpātakas or 'great sins'; cf. pp.219-20); and the duty not to let a woman's 'season' (rtu) pass neglected (rtukāladharmah; section pp.287-8). Uttanka solves his problem by weighing the opinions of the women (strīnām vacanam) against the unspoken intentions of his teacher; not surprisingly, the latter prevails. In the final section of his treatise, Tryambaka discusses the question of women caught in similar conflicts. His advice is predictable: the wife's first duty is to obey her husband even when this conflicts with other duties (itaradharmopamardenāpi; see section V, pp.308-9), even when it involves uoing something that is normally considered wrong (akāryakarane 'pi; section V, pp.309-12). In Tryambaka's view, therefore, Veda's wife is in the wrong: her duty to obey her husband's wishes should outweigh the urgency of the rtu. All the more surprising perhaps that Tryambaka refers to the episode at all.

Secondly, the terms ksatriyā and upādhyāyinī (or, more commonly, upādhyāyānī; see Mbh.I.3.100, variant reading) are of more than grammatical interest. Pān.IV.1.4 (ajādy atas tāp) rules that nominal stems in -a form feminines in -ā. Thus śūdra ('a śūdra man') becomes śūdrā ('a śūdra woman'; Kāś.); ksatriya ('a ksatriya man') becomes ksatriyā (a ksatriya woman'); upādhyāya ('a male teacher') becomes upādhyāyā ('a female teacher'; Kāty. on Pān.III.3.21); ācārya ('a male teacher') becomes ācāryā ('a female teacher'). Pān.IV.1.48 (pumyogād ākhyāyām) rules that the suffix -ī indicates the wife in relation to her husband. Thus śūdra (a śūdra man') becomes śūdrī ('the wife of a śūdra man'; Kāś. on Pān.IV.1.4). Similarly, ganaka ('a male astrologer') becomes either ganakā ('a female astrologer') or ganakī ('an astrologer's wife'; ganakasya strī ganakī, Kāś. on Pān. IV. 1.48), depending on who has the knowledge of astrology. Other examples cited by the Kāśikā include mahāmātrī ('the wife of a chief minister') and prasthī ('the wife of a chief').

bhikṣaṇaṃ kurvata iti // Sdhp.16v.8-17r.2 (Mbh.)<Mbh.1.3.100 (pratyuvāca for uvāca; pauṣyaṃ rājānaṃ for pauṣyaṃ; ye and staḥ omitted; ānayasva for ānayasveti; śobhamānā for śobhayamānā; māṃ omitted; saṃpādayasva for saṃpādayāmi; kṣaṇaṃ for bhikṣaṇaṃ). N.B. variant readings give both upādhyāyānī and upādhyāyī.

Such words apply to the woman because of her relationship with her husband (pumyogād ete śabdāh striyām vartante), and not because she possesses that same quality herself (na tu pumāmsamācaksate; Kāś. on Pān.IV.1.48). Pān.IV.1.49 (°ācāryānam anuk) rules that certain words such as ācārya add the augment ān before the suffix -ī to indicate this relationship of wife to husband. Thus Indra becomes Indrānī ('Indra's wife'); Varuna becomes Varunānī ('Varuna's wife'); and ācārya ('male teacher') becomes ācāryānī ('a teacher's wife'). According to the Kāśikā, several words take this augument optionally. Thus upādhyāya ('male teacher') becomes either upādhyādhyānī or upādhyāyī (both denoting 'the wife of the teacher'; see Mbh.I.3.100, variant readings; cf. Kāty. on Pān.III.3.21); ksatriya becomes ksatriyānī or ksatriyā (both denoting the wife of a ksatriya). It is not clear, therefore, whether the use of the term ksatrivā in the Mahābhārata quotation is meant to indicate a ksatriva woman or the wife of a ksatriya man; in fact epic Sanskrit is often not precise. The use of the term upādhyāyinī (and variant readings upādhyāyānī and upādhāyī) is clear: the knowledge belongs to the husband not the wife. It should be understood, however, that the distinction between women teachers and the wives of teachers admits of the possibility - in Panini's time if not in Tryambaka's - of women of both categories.

Tryambaka's next three quotations demonstrate that the wife should serve her husband at meals. In the Vanaparvan of the Mahā-bhārata, we are told that 'the glorious Draupadī, like a mother, first gave food to all her (five) husbands and to the brahmins and (only) then took what was left (siṣtam; i.e. for herself).'83 According to the Agnipurāṇa, the wife 'should provide for her husband whatever he likes in a meal, and bring it to him herself.'84 According to Vyāsa, 'one should always eat food that is mixed with ghee, is hot, beneficial, wholesome and of a moderate amount; and which is given (served) by one's wife after she has herself washed the dishes.'85

These quotations all stress the attentive service required of the

84. āgneyapurāņe pi// yad iṣṭam bhojane bhartus tat sampādyāharet sva-yam// iti// Sdhp.17r.4 (Ag.P.) <?

^{83.} vanaparvani draupadyāh pariveṣaṇam uktam // patīms tu draupadī sarvān dvijāms caiva yasasvinī / māteva bhoja[y]itvāgre siṣṭam āhārayat tadā // iti // Sdhp.17r.2-3 (Mbh.) < Mbh.III.47.10 (patīms ca for patīms tu).

^{85.} vyāso pi // svayam prakṣālya pātrāṇi dattam annam tu bhāryayā / bhoktavyam saghṛtam so [ṣṇa]m hitam pathyam mitam sadā // iti // Sdhp.17r.4 (entire śloka inserted in upper margin of MS; Vyāsa) <-?

wife. The reference to Draupadi feeding her husbands 'like a mother' (māteva) recalls the popular subhāsita that describes the ideal wife as one who is like a slave in her work (kārye dāsī), like a courtesan in bed (ratau veśyā), a mother with regard to food (bhojane jananīsamā), and a counsellor in adversity (vipatsu māntrinī, vipattau buddhidātrī; Pad.P. srstikhanda 47.56; Subh.p.366, satīvarnanam 9, 27). The Buddhist equivalent, the patibbatā, is similarly defined as a woman who cares for her husband as devotedly as a mother does for her child (Vim.I.11). Even the Buddha, lecturing the unruly Sujātā on strīdharma, lists the motherly type (mātā) among the four desirable kinds of wife; the others are the sisterly type (bhagini), the companion (sakhī) and the slave (dāsī; Ang.Nik.IV.p.91-4). Unlike Draupadī, however, Sujātā opts to be her husband's slave. Tryambaka alludes to these types himself in his section on women's property: Kausalya's virtue is demonstrated by the fact that she relates to her husband as slave (dasīvat), friend (sakhīvat), wife (bhāryāvat), sister (bhaginīvat) and mother (mātrvat), even when her husband ill-treats her (Sdhp.26[2]r.6-26[2]v.2; from section IV, pp.277-80).

The reference to a 'measured' (mitam) amount of food indicates that the good wife should not overfeed her husband. For excessive eating (atibhojanam) does one harm both in this world (anārogyam

anāyuṣyam) and in the next (asvargyam; Manu II.57).

Tryambaka's second major point is that 'the wife should not be in the presence of her husband when he is eating.'86 The ruling for this is taken from Yājñavalkya. 'One should not eat in the sight of one's wife (bhāryādarśane); nor when wearing (only) one (the lower) garment; nor when standing up.'87 Vijñāneśvara glosses bhāryādarśane as 'in front of her when she is nearby' (tasyām purato 'vasthitāyām; Mit. on Yājñ.I.131). Aparārka understands both 'while he is looking at her' (bhāryām paśyams) and 'while she is looking at him' (tayā ca drṣyamānas tathā; Apar.p.173). To explain 'the sin (involved) in the presence of the wife' (patnyāh sannidhāne doṣam (i.e. when her husband is eating), both Tryambaka and Vijñāneśvara quote the same śruti statement. 'A man should not

^{86.} bhartur bhojanasamaye patnyā samīpe na stheyam // Sdhp.17r.4-5.

87. tathā ca yājñavalkyaḥ // na bhāryādaršane 'snīyān naikavāsā na saṃsthitaḥ // Sdhp.17r.5-6 (Yājñ.) < Yājñ.I.131b; Par.M.I.i.p.425 (Yājñ.).

eat in the vicinity of his wife or his offspring will be without

strength.'88

This idea is evidently one of long standing. For the dizzving array of mystical correspondences set out in the Satapathabrahmana includes that between the sun, the altar and the eye and, further, that between 'the man in the sun' (mandale purusah), 'the gold man' (hiranmayah purusah) in the altar, and 'the man in the right eye' (daksine ksan purusah; Sat.Br.X.5.2.6-7). The last of these images is expanded in the verses that follow. Since a man is not complete without his mate, his other half, there is a second 'person' in the left eye (savve 'ksan purusah), thus making a pair or couple (mithunam; Sat.Br.X.5.2.8). The 'person' in the right eye is Indra; that in the left is Indrani and the god created the nose to keep them apart (vidhrtim akurvan nāsikām; cf. section IIA, p.78). For this reason the husband should not eat food in the presence of his wife; and if they eat apart, a strong son (vīryavan) will be born (Śat.Br.X.5.2.9). Since among men, kings keep apart the most, they are the ones who have strong sons (Sat.Br.X.5.2.10). The last remark presumably refers to the predominantly ksatriya customs of polygamy and separate women's quarters.

The significance of Tryambaka's prohibition, however, is by no means obvious. In the Smrticandrikā's treatment of the subject, for example, the emphasis is on privacy in general. A man should eat in private (etac ca bhojanam rahasi kāryam; Sm.C.II.p.599). For if he eats in private (guptah), he becomes rich; if he eats in public (prakāśe), his wealth is lost (Sm.C.II.p.599, Devala). According to some, one should eat entirely alone, that is, even apart from one's own relatives and other brahmins. For if several people sit down to eat in the same row, then each is liable to take on the effects of the others' sins (Sm.C.II.p.619, Brhaspati; cf. ekapankti, below, p.221; and one never knows the secret sins of another man (Sm. C.II.p.618, Ad.P.). This idea explains why even today an orthodox brahmin would not dream of eating in a public restaurant. Elsewhere, the question of being looked at by someone who is not eating arises. According to Usanas, for example, a man should not eat when many people who are not eating are watching (bahūnām

^{88.} patnyāḥ sannidhāne doṣam āha śrutiḥ // jāyāyā ante nāśnīyād avīryavad apatyaṃ bhavati // iti // Sdhp.17r.6-7 (śruti) < Mit. on Yājñ.I.131. Cf. Śat. Br.X.5.2.9; Vas.XII.31; Viṣ.Sm.68.46.

ca paśyatām); nor should many eat when one such person is watching (ekasya paśyataḥ; Sm.C.II.p.615). However, Viṣ.Sm.68.46 differentiates between this ruling (bahūnām prekṣamāṇānām naikasmin bahavas tathā) and the requirement not to eat 'together with' one's wife (nāśnīyād bhāryayā sārdham), thus implying that the reasons behind them are different.

In fact, this very common ruling not to eat 'with' one's wife is usually interpreted to mean not simply that he should eat apart from her but that he should not eat from the same dish. For example, Gautama's prohibition on 'eating with one's wife' (bhāryayā saha bhojana) is glossed by Haradatta as 'eating from one dish together with one's wife' (bhāryayā sahaikasmin bhājane bhojanam; Har. on Gaut.1.9.32). Kullūka interprets a similar ruling in Manu IV.43 (nāśnīyād bhāryayā sārdham) in much the same way (bhāryayā sahaikapātre nāśnīyāt, Kull.; sārdham ekapātre, Sarv.). For Medhātithi, the prohibition also applies to eating at the same time and place as one's wife (ekādhikaranam ekakāladeśam).

It is clear, however, that such views were not universally accepted. Nandapandita, for example, applies the prohibition only to the lower-caste wife (bhāryā asavarnā; Nand. on Vis.Sm.68.46, Adyar edn.). Several commentators and digest writers allow a brahmin to eat with his brahmin wife (e.g. Sm.C.II.p.617; Mit. on Yājñ.III.200; Par.M.I.i.p.425). According to the Smrtyarthasara, a man may only eat from the same dish as his wife at the time of their marriage (na bhāryayā sahāśnīyād vivāhavarjyam; Sm.A.p.69). In Baudh.I.1.2.3, however, there is an interesting distinction between the customs of north and south, one that often proves useful to commentators faced with conflicting rules (e.g. Uji. on Ap.II.4.9.7). Eating with an uninitiated person (anupetena saha bhojanam) and eating with one's wife (striyā saha bhojanam) are listed among the five practices peculiar to the south. (The other three are eating stale food and marrying the daughter of either one's maternal uncle or one's paternal aunt.) According to some authorities, the customs of a particular region do not incur sin when practised in that region (Baudh.I.1.2.6); according to others, the traditions of the learned and the conduct of those who live in Aryavarta are always authoritative (Baudh.I.1.2.7-9; Gaut.XI.20). The north-south boundary is the river Narmada, running north of Maharashtra. Tryambaka seems to side with the latter view. Thus, although it may be the

custom for southerners to eat with their wives, in his opinion this is wrong.

There follows a discussion of how the wife should serve the meal Tryambaka's first point is that 'when she is serving, she should not serve the food and so on by hand.'89 He quotes two ślokas attributed to Śātātapa. '(Eating) dishes which are served by hand, and salt served separately (as opposed to salt used in the cooking), is held to be like eating earth or the consumption of cow's meat.'90 'One should not eat salt, condiments, ghee, oil, or any of the variety of foods that are licked (from the tips of one's fingers, e.g. pickles) or drunk (e.g. soups, sauces, buttermilk, etc.) if they are served by hand.'91 Two further ślokas attributed to Yama follow. 'When almsfood, salt and condiments are served by hand, whoever eats them becomes impure and whoever serves them will not go to heaven.'92 'When served by hand, delicacies (snehā[h]), salt and condiments do the giver no good, while whoever eats them eats sin.'93 For, according to Atri, 'when ghee or oil falls from the nails of a brahmin woman (when she is serving food by hand), that (food) is deemed inedible; whoever eats it must perform the candrayana fast.'94 According to Apastamba, 'if ghee, oil, salt, liquids, anything made with milk (e.g. rice cooked in milk and sugar), or alms-food is

89. parivesanasamaye annādikam hastena na parivesanīyam // Sdhp.17r.7.

90. tathā ca śātātapaḥ // hastadattāni cānnāni pratyakṣalavaṇam taṭhā / mrttikābhakṣaṇam caiva gomāmṣābhyaśanam smrtam // Śdhp.17r.7-8 (Śāt.) (Sm.M.II.p.430 (gaumāṃṣābhyaśanam for go°; Śāt.); Par.M.I.i.p.428 (gomāṃṣāśanavat for gomāṃṣābhyaśanaṃ; Śāt.); Sm.C.II.p.604 (as Par.M.).

91. lavanam vyañjanam caiva ghrtam tailam tathaiva ca / lehyam peyam ca vividham hastadattam na bhaksayet // Sdhp.17r.8-9 (Sāt.) (Sm.M.II. p.430 (Sāt.); Par.M.I.i.p.428 (Paithīnasi); Sm.C.II.p.604 (as Par.M.).

92. yamah // hastadattā tu yā bhiksā lavanavyañjanāni ca / bhoktā hy aśucitām yāti dātā svargam na gacchati // Sdhp.17r.9-10 (Yama) < Sm.M.II.

pp.430,411 (Yama).

93. hastadattās tu ye snehā lavaṇavyañjanāni ca / dātāram nopatiṣṭhante bhoktā bhuñjīta kilbiṣam // Sdhp.17v.1 (Yama) < Vas.XIV.31; Sm.M.II.p.430 (Yama); Par.M.I.ii.p.428 (lavaṇavyañjanādayah for lavaṇavyañjanāni ca; Vṛddhaśātātapa).

94. atrih // ghṛtam vā yadi vā tailam brāhmaṇyā nakhaniḥṣṛtam / abhojyam tad vijānīyād bhuktvā cāndrāyaṇam caret // Sdhp.17v.2-3 (Atri) < Sm.M.II.

p.430 (dvijātīnām for vijānīyād; Atri).

served by hand, it is not to be accepted anywhere; and therefore one should serve (such) food (only if it is) contained in a leaf or grass (bowl or cup) and not by hand.⁹⁵

Bowls, plates or cups are still woven from certain large leaves (e.g. drona, Marathi; katori, Hindi) and broad-leaved grasses (topli, Marathi) for the use of traditional families, even educated urbanites, especially at times of large gatherings such as weddings and festivals. The Smrticandrikā quotes Paithīnasi's rulings concerning the types of leaves that may be used in this way (Sm.C.II. p.602). The custom is even more prevalent in southern India where banana leaves are much in evidence as plates not only in rural homes but also in some city restaurants.

More important, all these rulings, like the previous ones prohibiting a man from sharing a dish with his wife, relate to the prohibitions on eating the so-called 'left-overs' (ucchistam). If the person serving touches the food, then it is classed with the 'left-overs' of that person's meal, and as such impure and (therefore) prohibited to anyone else (see pp.221-7).

Tryambaka continues. 'This is why food should be served with a ladle or something similar (darvyādinā).'96 In order to make sense of the collection of rulings that follow, several emendations to the text have been necessary. These rest upon the assumption that the items that should not be served by hand (i.e. food in general, condiments, salt, alms-food, ghee, oil, anything cooked in milk, all liquids and 'lickable' substances, etc.; see above) are precisely those that should be served with some instrument such as a ladle (i.e. cooked food or food cooked in milk or ghee, condiments, water, food cooked in oil, and even uncooked food; see below). As we shall see, neither Kane's distinction between cooked and uncooked foods (PVK II.ii.p.762) nor Vidyārṇava's distinction between 'liquid and semi-liquid articles' and non-liquid ones (1979:165) is borne out by these rulings.

The first quotation is attributed to Apastamba, 'Cooked food (kṛtānnam; alternatively, 'food cooked in milk', śṛtānnam; or 'food cooked in ghee', ghṛtānnam; see note 97) and all condiments

96. tac ca parivesanam darvyādinā kartavyam // Sdhp.17v.5.

^{95.} āpastambaḥ // ghṛtaṃ tailaṃ ca lavaṇaṃ pānīyaṃ pāyasaṃ tathā / bhikṣā ca hastadattā tu na grāhyā yatra kutracit // tasmād antarhitaṃ cānnaṃ parṇena ca tṛṇena vā / pradadyān na tu hastena // iti // Sdhp.17v.3-4 (Āp.) < Sm.M.II.p.430 (... hastena nāyasena kadācana; Āp.).

should be served with a ladle.'97 Āpastamba is also credited with the pronouncement regarding 'the sin (involved) in serving water and so on without a ladle ([ā]darvyā; i.e. by hand).'98 'Whoever wishes to serve water or cooked food without a ladle ([']darvyā) is (on the same level as) a brahmin-killer (bhrūṇahā), a drinker of alcohol, a thief and one who sleeps with his teacher's wife. Neither food cooked with oil nor uncooked food should ever be (served) without a ladle (t[va]darvyā).'99

We may note first that here, as so often before, Tryambaka depends heavily on the Smrtimuktāphala. The similarity of both quotations and attributions suggest that they have been drawn directly from it. Secondly, the term bhrūna in bhrūnahā may mean either 'brahmin' (e.g. Gaut.II.8.11, Har.; Vas.II.42, XX.23) or 'foetus' (e.g. Gaut.III.3.9, Har.; Vas.XX.23; cf. bhrūṇaghnīm, Sdhp.38r.4-5, section IV, p.288). Since the purpose of this ruling is to convey absolute condemnation, I have preferred the former interpretation. For brahmin-murder is held to be the greatest crime of all (Manu VIII.381). It is invariably classed as one of the five 'great sins' for which no expiation is possible (mahāpātaka; the fifth, not mentioned here, is consorting with the perpetrators of the other four; cf. Manu XI.54, Yājñ.III.227, Vas.I.20). The classification of apparently mundane wrong actions (such as serving water without a ladle) as on a par with brahmin-murder is a standard if extravagant - means of outright condemnation in dharmaśāstra. Tryambaka quotes a similar parallel in relation to the

^{97.} tathā cāpastambah // darvyā deyam kṛtānnam ca samastavyanjanāni ca // iti // Sdhp.17v.5-6 (Āp.) < Sm.M.II.p.430 (sṛtānnam for kṛtānnam; Yama); Par.M.I.i.p.428 (ghṛtānnam tu for kṛtānnam ca; Paiṭhīnasi); Sm.C. II.p.604 (as Par.M.; Manu).

^{98.} udakāder [a]darvyā pariveṣaṇe doṣam āha sa eva // Sdhp.17v.6 (I have followed the emendation of darvyā to adarvyā given in PT).

^{99.} udakam yac ca pakvānnam yo [']darvyā dātum icchati / sa bhrūṇahā surāpaś ca sa steno gurutalpagaḥ// tailapakvam apakvam ca na t[v'a]darvyā kadācana // iti // Sdhp.17v.6-8 (Āp.; I have followed the emendation of yo darvyā to yo 'darvyā given in PT and, to be consistent, have made the further emendation of tu darvyā to t[v'a]darvyā) (Sm.M.II.p.430 (first śloka attrib. to Āp.; half-śloka to Yama; yo darvyā, tu darvyā); Sm.C.II.p.604 (yo darvyā; final half-śloka omitted; Manu); Par.M.I.i.p.428 (yo darvyā in Bombay edn., yodarvyā in Calcutta edn.; steyī ca for sa steno; final half-śloka omitted; Paithīnasi).

bad practice of serving unequal portions to diners sitting in the same row (see below).

Tryambaka turns to Parāśara for 'the sin (involved in) serving food in a vessel made of iron' (āyasa; 'le fer', Finot 1896:34).100 'If food is brought in an iron vessel, he (i.e. whoever eats it) eats the left-overs (ucchista) of a dog, and whoever gives it goes to hell. Whether one is bathing, sipping or doing anything else, an iron vessel is inappropriate.'101

In view of the variety of rulings available, Tryambaka's insistence on this point alone is curious. Certainly, Hārīta prohibits iron and earthenware vessels (Sm.C.II.p.602). But Ap.I.5.17.9-12 declares that one may eat out of an earthenware vessel that has either not been used (anaprīte mrnmaye bhoktavvam) or, if used, has been baked in fire (aprītam ced abhidagdhe); out of a metal one (lohāni; 'métaux', Finot 1896:12,90) that has been well scoured (parimrstam lauham prayatam; bhasmabhih parimrstam; Uji.); or out of a wooden one that has been well scraped (nirlikhitam darumayam). Moreover, Manu's rules of purification give precise details on how to clean vessels of gold, stone, silver, copper, iron, brass and so on (Manu V.111ff.). Certain materials are prohibited to certain individuals. An ascetic for example, is not to use a metal vessel (ataijasāni pātrāni, Manu VI.53; glossed by Kull. as 'gold, copper, brass or iron'; cf. Mit. on Yājñ.III.60; Yatidh.57.79-92; Olivelle 1977:37,168). Similarly, bronze vessels (kāmsyapātra) are prohibited to ascetics, Vedic students and widows (Sdhp.46v.1-2. Samvarta, Sm.C.II.p.602, Pracetas; see\section IV, p.299). While Manu IV.65 prohibits the use of broken vessels, the Smrticandrikā allows broken ones made of copper, silver, gold, conch or stone (Sm.C.II.p.601, Paithīnasi). The menstruating woman, however, should ideally use only her own cupped hands (section IV, pp.284-5). The number of different and often conflicting rulings on this subject makes Tryambaka's single prescription all the more surprising.

Still on the subject of how the wife should serve the food, Tryambaka rules that she should show no favouritism. 'When she is

^{100.} āyasena pātreņa pariveṣaņe doṣam āha parāśaraḥ // Sdhp.17v.8.

101. āyasena tu pātreṇa yad annam upadīyate / śunocchiṣṭam asau bhunkte dātā tu narakam vrajet // ayaḥpātram ayojam syāt snānācamanakarmasu // iti // Sdhp.17v.8-10 (Par.) < Sm.M.II.p.430 (Par.).

serving, she should not, on account of (her feelings of) affection and so forth, give unequal servings to those seated in the same row (ekapanktyupaviṣṭānām).'102 His evidence for this is attributed to Vasiṣṭha. 'When one gives (food) unequally to a row of diners (ekapanktau)—whether out of love or fear or the desire for gain—this action, seen in the Vedas and described in verse by the sages, the seers call "brahmin-murder" (brahmahatyām; cf. above).'103

A 'row of diners' (ekapankti) is a continuous line not broken by such formal barriers as a pillar, a door, a passage, changes of ground level, or even by lines drawn on the ground with powder or ashes (as is the custom even today in large gatherings such as weddings). Those sitting together in this continuous row must be of the same caste and social rank. Āp.I.5.17.2, for example, rules that one should not sit in the same row with unworthy people (anarhadbhir vā samānapanktau); glossed by Haradatta as those who lack good family, learning and moral conduct (abhijanavidyāvrttarahitā; Ujj. on Āp.I.5.17.2). For, as I have already remarked, those who sit together in this way partake of each other's sins (see above, p.215). It follows, therefore, that those who sit in the same row are necessarily of the same rank, and so they should be treated equally.

Tryambaka's next subsection concerns the wife's own meal. His first point is that 'she should pay homage to her husband's feet (bhartuh pādavandanam) before she eats.'104 His evidence is attributed to 'Skānda.' 'One supreme rule is pronounced for women: she should (first) pay homage to her husband's feet and then eat; this is the firm opinion (of the authorities).'105

Unlike the custom of paying homage to the feet of one's parents-in-law (see pp.161-2), that of touching the husband's feet is no

102. parivesanasamaye ekapanktyupavistānām snehādinā visamaparivesanam na kartavyam // Sdhp.17v.10-18r.1.

103. tathā ca vasisthah // yady ekapanktau visamam dadāti snehād bhayād vā yadi vārthahetoh / vedesu drstām rsibhis ca gītām tām brahmahatyām munayo vadanti // iti // Sdhp.18r.1-2 (Vas.) < Sm.M.II.p.427 (yas tv for yady; Yama); Vedavyāsasmṛti (SS; yas tv ekapanktyām for yady ekapanktau; vede ca for vedesu; tad for tām). Cf. Śankh.17.57.

104. bhartuh pādavandanam krtvā bhoktavyam // Sdhp.18r.2-3.

105. tathā ca skānde // strīnām hi paramaś caiko niyamaḥ samudāḥṛtaḥ/abhyarcya caraṇau bhartur bhoktavyam iti niścayaḥ // iti // Sdhp.18r.3-4 (Skānda) < Sk.P.III.2.7.39 (bhoktavyam kṛtaniścayā).

longer in evidence in Maharashtra today, nor was it even eightv years ago except perhaps as a preliminary to the wedding night (LSJ). Nonetheless, this gesture—reflecting as it does the many smrti statements to the effect that the husband is the 'god and master' of the wife (e.g. Manu V.154; Rām.II.24.21; Mbh.XIII. 134.51) - clearly was practised in orthodox households at least until the middle of the eighteenth century. Indeed, as already noted above (p.138), the high-caste village women of Nepal still 'pay homage' to their husbands' feet before every rice meal by drinking their 'foot water' (Bennett 1983: 174-5). Another possible interpretation of the ruling is that the wife should massage her husband's feet to relax him after the meal (see plate 8).

Tryambaka's second point is that 'the wife (patnī) should eat what is left (ucchistam) after her husband has eaten (plate 9). 106 This ruling is supported by three quotations. The first is attributed to Manu. 'After drinking the apośanam, a man should eat what has been given (to him) on his plate - if there is nothing wrong with it and then he should leave some remainder (ucchistam) for his wife, his servants and his slaves.'107 According to Vyasa, 'she (i.e. the good wife) desires what is given by her husband: she should eat what is left of her husband's food, water, fruit and so on, saying "This is a great prasāda!""108 Tryambaka's statement that 'the wife should eat only after her husband has eaten' is also supported with a quotation attributed to Vyāsa. 'If she (first) serves the gods, guests and servants, and her husband too, and then - according to the rules (of tradition) and the (Vedic) injunction—eats the food that is left over (sesannam), her household will always be well fed and contented, and she will be firmly grounded in her religious duty.'109

106. bhartur bhuktocchistam patnyā bhoktavyam // Sdhp.18r.4.

107. tathā ca manuh // pītvāposanam asnīyāt pātradattam agarhitam / bhāryābhrtakadāsebhya ucchistam sesayet tatah // Sdhp.18r.5-6 (Manu) < Sm.M.II.p.430 (Manu); Sm.C.II.p.608 (Vrddhamanu); Par.M.I.i.p.422 (dvijah for tatah; Vrddhamanu). Not in the available edns. of Manu.

108. vyāsah // seveta bhartur ucchistam annapānaphalādikam/ mahāprasāda ity uktvā patidattam pratīcchatī // Sdhp.18r.6-7 (Vyāsa; PT amends mah prasāda to mahān prasāda < Sk.P.III.2.7.24a (first half-śloka only; sevate for seveta; istam annam for annapāna°). See also Sdhp.23r.9-10, section IV, p.273 (Skānda; mahān prasāda for mahāprasāda).

109. bhartur bhojanānantaram eva striyā bhojanam āha vyāsah // dev[at]ātithibhrtyānām nirvāpya patinā saha / śesānnam upabhuñjānā yathānyāyam yathāvidhi // tustapustajanā nityam nārī dharmena yujyate // iti // Sdhp.18r.7-9

(Vyāsa; devātithi amended to devatātithi to fit the metre) < ?

Aposana is the technical term for the water sipped from the cupped hand (from the brahmatīrtha; see ācamana, section IIA, pp.75-7), in the ritual performed before eating (bhojanavidhi). After the vaisvadeva ritual, when the food is served, the man about to eat sprinkles water around the plate (paryusitam), announcing to the god of food: 'You are truth and I sprinkle you with truth' (satyam tva rtena parisiñcāmi, in the evening; rtam tvā satyena parisiñcāmi, at midday; Sm.A.69-70). Next, he makes offerings of rice on the ground beside his plate (baliharanam) to the lord of the earth (bhūpataye svāhā | bhuvanapataye svāhā | bhūtānām pataye svāhā//). Then he sips a little water (āpośanam; cf. Yājñ.I.106) from the base of his thumb, while announcing that it is nectar and will act as a 'cushion' for the god of food (amrtopastaranam asi). Then he makes five offerings of rice to the five 'breaths' (prānāya svāhā | apānāya svāhā | udānāya svāhā | vyānāya svāhā | sāmānāya svāhā //). After these five prānāhutis, the late digests (and modern practice) add a sixth offering to Brahman: he touches water, then his eyelids and forehead (saying, brahmane namah), and only then begins to eat (LSJ; PVK II.i.p.764). At the end of the meal, he again sips a little water, announcing this time that it will act as the 'cover' for the god of food (amrtāpidhānam asi). This ritual of bhojanavidhi is performed only by men. With some variations, it is still practised in the more orthodox households today (cf. Vidyārnava 1979:163-5).

Ucchista is what is left on a person's plate after he has eaten, with some exceptions (ucchistasesanam tu ghrtādivyatiriktavisayam; Par.M.I.i.p.422). In fact, it was important not to eat everything on one's plate. As both the Parāsaramādhavīya and the Smrtimuktāphala explain, a man should always leave some food on his plate after a meal, except for certain specific substances (e.g. curd, honey, ghee, milk; Par.M.I.i.p.422; Sm.M.II.p.431). These 'permitted leftovers' are to be given to his dependants: to his wife, servants or slaves, as Tryambaka's quotation explains. No one else should eat them. Even a śūdra may not do so unless he is a dependant (Manu IV.80; but cf. Vas.XI.10). A similar prohibition from Apastamba adds that if one does give these remnants to a non-brahmin, one should clean one's teeth and put the food particles thus acquired back on the plate before offering it (dantān skuptvā vilikhya tanmalam tasminn ucchisteva dhāya dadyāt; Ujj. on Āp.I.11.31.22), thus making its impurity graphically clear. The ruling that one should not eat the remains of anyone else's meal is relaxed only for the child (who may eat his parents' left-overs; cf. Sm.M.II.p.431). for the student (who should eat those of his teacher, at least in a formal sense; cf. Mit. on Yājñ.1.33; Baudh.1.2.3.35,etc.); for servants (who should eat those of their master); and, in particular. for the wife (who should eat those of her husband, from his plate) Thus when Draupadi, disguised as a servant, agrees to work for Virāta's queen Sudesnā, she insists that she will only work for one who does not give her 'left-overs' to eat or make her wash his feet (yo me na dadyād ucchistam na ca pādau pradhāvayet; Mbh.IV.8.29). The agreement between the two women that such things will not be required of her amounts to a promise that Virāta will make no sexual demands of Draupadī; that is, he will not treat her like a wife. Hence too the ruling that the menstruating woman should not eat from her husband's plate until she has been purified on the fourth day: marital intimacy is excluded at this time (see p.285).

It must be remembered, however, that for food to be acceptable in the first place, it must already be the sanctified 'left-overs' of the gods, ancestors, guests and anyone else on the list of priority given above. As Manu explains in several slokas, the householder should eat what remains (sesa) after he has offered food to the gods, sages, guests, ancestors and household deities (Manu III.117); he and his wife should eat what is left (avasistam) after the brahmins, relatives and servants have eaten (Manu III.116). A man who eats without first providing for guests and dependants is doomed (Manu III.115, 118); whereas the food that is left after the performance of a sacrifice (vajñaśista) is the food of virtuous men (Manu III.118). Thus, just as a man looks forward to eating the prasada of a sacrifice or pūjā, believing it to be blessed by the ritual offering (cf. Gonda 1980: 187ff.; Vidyārņava 1979:163; Morinis 1984:73), so the wife should look forward to eating the prasada left on her husband's plate after the ritual of eating, believing it to be doubly blessed. In this context, Tryambaka's use of the term patnī seems apt: we may conclude both that the practice is a religious duty rather than merely a domestic matter, and that it is the privilege of the chief wife. The explicit reference to the husband's 'left-overs' as prasāda is a further reflection of the traditional belief that a woman's husband is her primary god. In more general terms, as Parry explains, what pollutes the pure purifies the impure (1979: 97-100). Thus the 'leftovers' of the higher castes purify the lower castes; the prasada con-

secrated to the gods purifies all worshippers who receive it; and the remains of the husband's meal purify the wife. 110

Tryambaka's next statement, together with its supporting quotation from Manu, concerns the wife's offering to the goddess Jyesthā. I shall deal with this later (see below, pp.227-9). Here, I shall proceed with the other rulings relating to the wife's own meal.

A third point concerning this topic is that 'the patnī should avoid all food, drink and so on that her husband does not eat.'111 According to Vyāsa, 'the chaste wife (satī) should avoid everything that her husband does not drink, eat or (in any way) consume (e.g. betel, etc.).'112 Like Gandharī who, by blindfolding herself, chose not to see what her blind husband could not see (Mbh.I.110.14), the ideal wife should not even taste what her husband cannot or will not eat. Even at the beginning of the twentieth century, this was both the ideal and the practice of the more orthodox households (LSJ). For, as previously noted, it was believed that the perfect wife grew to be more and more like her husband until eventually she merged with him as the river merges with the sea (Manu IX.22; cf. above, pp.34-9, 156-7).

110. This custom has continued in traditional India well into the twentieth century. My own teacher, Tarkatīrtha Lakshmanshastri Joshi (now in his eighties), was married at the age of twenty-six to a girl of fourteen. Since his own mother had died, the female head of the joint household was his elder brother's twenty-two-year-old wife: it was her duty to teach the new bride how to behave. As a result, both women served food to their husbands at meal-times, always making sure that they had far more on their plates than they could possibly eat. When the men had finished, each wife ate what was left on her own husband's plate. Not until Lakshmanshastri Joshi took over his teacher's pāṭhaśālā some distance away, and so set up a separate establishment there, did he feel able to give his wife a separate plate and her own food. Two things are of interest here: first, that in this particular household the custom was enforced not by a man but by a woman, and one so young; secondly, that although Lakshmanshastri Joshi did not like the custom, he did not consider opposing the views of the grhamukhī, though she was younger than him by several years and he was a well-established scholar who had completed the full term of Vedic studies. According to Lynn Bennett, this practice is still in force in Nepal (1983:174).

111. bhartrabhuktam annapānādi patnyā varjanīyam // Sdhp.18v.2.

112. tathā ca vyāsaḥ || yac ca bhartā na pibati yac ca bhartā na khādati | yac ca bhartā na cāśnāti tat sarvam varjayet satī // iti // Sdhp.18v.2-3 (Vyāsa) < ?

A fortiori, 'the (good) wife should not eat (tasty or especially) wholesome food while neglecting (to serve them to) her husband.'113 A quotation attributed to 'Skanda' explains. 'If a woman neglects her husband while she alone eats wholesome food, then she will be (reborn as) a village sow or a female bat that eats its own excrement.'114 Clearly, if a woman eats only what is left on her husband's plate, there is little danger that this might happen. Since the hog eats all the village refuse and excrement and is commonly known by names deriving from this fact (e.g vitcara, vidvarāha), the last epithet may refer to it as well as to the bat. We may also note that threats of this kind always specify a female animal for a female offender: not only is it normal for a woman to retain her gender in transmigration (cf. Manu XII.72; Sdhp.39v.10-40r.1, from section IV, p.188), but a female is always a step below the male in the scale of births. This point is discussed in more detail in section III on the inherent nature of women.

Tryambaka's final point regarding the wife's meal is that 'she should not eat while her husband is watching.'115 According to a śloka attributed to Vyāsa, 'she should not do any of the following things when her husband is watching: eating, vomiting, sleeping, getting dressed or making herself beautiful.'116 This is the second of two ślokas, both attributed to Vyāsa, that are dealt with earlier in Tryambaka's subsection on getting dressed in the morning (section IIA, pp.95-6, note 72). Similar rulings may be found elsewhere. Manu IV.43, for example, rules that a man should not look at his wife when she is eating, sneezing, yawning or sitting at ease (āsīnām yathāsukham). Gaut.IX.9.32 specifies not looking at a woman who is anointing her body with oil (cf. Har.).

The Satapathabrāhmana gives one reason why the husband should

^{113.} striyā bhartāram vihāya mṛṣṭam annam na bhoktavyam // Sdhp.18v. 3-4.

^{114.} tathā ca skānde // yā bhartāram parityajya mṛṣṭam aśnāti kevalam / grāme sā sūkarī bhūyād valgulī vā svavidbhujā // Sdhp.18v.4-5 (Skānda) < Sk.P.III.2.7.44 (miṣṭam for mṛṣṭam; vātha for vā sva°). See also Sdhp.27r.9-10, section IV (smṛtyantaram).

^{115.} paśyati priye patnyā na bhoktavyam // Sdhp.18v.5.

^{116.} tathā ca vyāsaḥ // bhojanam vamanam nidrām paridhānam ca vāsasām/ prārambham maṇḍanānām ca na kuryāt paśyati priye // iti // Sdhp.18v.5-6 (Vyāsa) < Sm. M.I.p.157 (Vyāsa). Cf. section IIA, note 72.

eat apart from his wife (Sat.Br.X.5.2.9; see above, pp.214–17), and quite another for why the wife should eat apart from her husband. As is explained in the section on offerings made to the wives of the gods (patnīsamyāga), one should conceal such offerings and the fire from the sight of the male gods. If one does not do this, the gods will expect to receive those offerings themselves and so will be disappointed. The verse concludes: and this is why Yājñavalkya says that on earth too women should eat apart from men (Sat.Br.I.9.2.12).

I now return to the rulings omitted earlier concerning the wife's equivalent to her husband's pre-dinner ritual (bhojanavidhi). 'Women should make an offering of food (balidānam) to the goddess Jyeṣṭhā at the time of their own meal.'117 The following two ślokas are attributed to Manu. 'The woman who does not make a daily food-offering (bali) to Jyeṣṭhā, according to her resources, from the food she is about to eat, will go to hell when she dies. Women who want sons, grandsons and wealth should propitiate Jyeṣṭhā with a food-offering (balikarman) every day without fail.'118

It is important to distinguish between three separate rituals here. First, the 'great sacrifice' (mahāyajña) in which morsels of food are offered to all beings (balikarman, bhūtayajña; e.g. Āp.II.2.3.18ff.; PVK II.ii.pp.745ff.; cf. above, pp.176-8), is performed by men at the same time as the vaiśvadeva ritual. Secondly, the simple offering of morsels of food beside one's plate as a formality before eating (baliharana) is performed by men as part of the bhojanavidhi. Thirdly, women are required to make their own formal offering of morsels of food to the goddess Jyesthā (balidānam) before they too may eat. By using the term balikarman for the women's ritual, it is being deliberately raised to the level of the rituals performed by men. This is in keeping with the high moral tone with which the duties of women are described in this treatise.

Jyesthā, literally 'eldest', is the goddess of misfortune, personi-

117. svabhojanasamaye strībhir. jyeşthādevyai balidānam kartavyam // Sdhp.18r.9.

118. tathā ca manuḥ // na dadāti ca yā nārī jyeṣṭhāyai pratyahaṃ balim / bhojyād annād yathāśakti sā pretya narakaṃ vrajet // avaśyam eva nārībhir jyeṣṭhāyai balikarmaṇā/ prīṇanaṃ pratyahaṃ kāryaṃ putraputradhanepsubhiḥ // iti // Sdhp.18r.10–18v.2 (Manu) (Sm.M.I.p.158 (tu for ca; Vyāsa). Not in available edns. of Manu.

fied as the elder sister of Laksmi or Śri, the goddess of beauty and prosperity. According to some accounts of the myth of the great churning of the ocean by the gods and demons, Jyesthā was born from the poison swallowed by Siva (e.g. Pad.P.VI.260.22-3). According to the Lingapurāna (II.6.2ff.), she emerged from the ocean when it was churned for the second time (v.4). Jyesthā (also called Alaksmī, 'misfortune') represents the darker side of creation. As the Lingapurāna explains, in order to delude mankind (mohanāya), Visnu made the universe twofold (jagaddvaidham idam cakre). The good half (dharma) comprised the brahmins, the Vedas, and the goddess Śrī (v.3); the bad half (adharma) comprised wicked or inferior men (aśubhān), those outside the Vedas (veda[b]āhyān) and the goddess Jyesthā (v.4). The latter dwells far from the path of the Vedas (v.17,27) and is always present wherever husband and wife quarrel (yatra bhartā ca bhāryā ca parasparavirodhinau; v.31) and wherever false mendicants (bhiksu[b]imba; i.e. heretics), naked Jains (ksapanaka) or Buddhists (bauddha) are found (v.54). According to the myth, Jyesthā married a sage who found her so irreligious and antisocial that he abandoned her in such a place where local divinities were worshipped and heretical (i.e. non-Vedic) rituals were performed. Instructing her to support herself on the offerings made by women devotees (v.79), the sage left her there. Eventually, Jyesthā repented of her ways and turned to Visnu for help.

Throughout his treatise, Tryambaka insists that the orthodox wife should worship no deity other than her husband. It is interesting, therefore, that the only exceptions he allows are the two sister goddesses, Śrī (Laksmī) and Jyesthä (Alaksmī). I have discussed briefly the ambivalent attitudes evident in stories about Śrī and the negative associations carefully glossed over by Tryambaka (see section IIA, pp.60-3). Jyestha presents an even more ambivalent image of and for the Hindu wife. Indeed, the resonances between the goddess and her namesake in orthodox society—the jyesthā or senior wife in the polygamous household—are particularly striking. As the older wife—perhaps superseded by a younger one chosen for her beauty rather than according to ritual requirements the goddess is usually portrayed as a woman of unappealing face and solid proportions. An ornate hair-style, costly ornaments, and the tilaka on her forehead indicate her good fortune in that her husband is still alive (cf. section IIA, pp.96-101). She is flanked

Day 229

by two attendants, described in the texts as her son and daughter, and so has evidently earned the respect due to the mother of her husband's ritual heir. While the crow on her banner and the donkey ascribed to her in some texts are clearly inauspicious, the broomstick is both a tool and a weapon. In fact, this highly ambivalent image combines many of the major themes relating to the high-caste senior wife: domestic concerns; ritual inferiority; and yet the acknowledged power in the home. As the goddess of 'inferior' people who lack Vedic initiation and ritual, Jyesthā is the obvious recipient of the worship of women. But the offering of food by orthodox (yet uninitiated) women to such a goddess presents a marked contrast with the equivalent offerings made by their initiated husbands (cf. Leslie 1984).

Tryambaka finally considers what the good wife should do after her meal (bhojanānantarakrtyam). A general rule, presumably applicable to both men and women, is attributed to Śāṇḍilya. 'After washing both hands with either earth or something like ground māṣa beans, and after washing one's knees and feet, one should clean one's teeth with twigs.' 120 Māṣa beans are a common food today (considered heavy and hard to digest; Meulenbeld 1974:194), but in earlier times they were also used as a cleansing agent (cf. Gode 1969:163, Apar.). (The question of the twigs to be used for cleaning one's teeth is discussed in section IIA, pp.78–82).

'Then,' according to the *Smṛtyarthasāra*, 'after washing one's hands, one should drop (water) into one's eyes by letting it trickle from (the ends of) one's fingers. Then one should touch one's eyes (i.e. wipe them), sip water, and contemplate one's personal deity

119. E.g. The Image of Man 1982:116, Fig.79; Delhi National Museum nos.59.153/339, 59.153/342, 62.484; American Institute of Indian Studies, Varanasi, no.12670; Institut Français d'Indologie, Pondicherry, neg. nos. 252-9, 1704-9, 5809-9, 5840-6, 6155-11, 6793-10, 7512-8, 7632-5. Cf. Lal 1980:81-2, Figs.8a-c; Rao 1914: I.ii.pp.157-9, Plates CXXI-CXXIII. For the text and translation of the ritual worship of Jyesthā, but without any allusion to its relevance for women, see Baudhāyanagrhyaparišiṣtasūtra III.9, pp.19-20, 50-1; cf. Caturvargacintāmaņi II.ii.pp.638ff.

120. bhojanānantarakṛtyam āha śāṇḍilyaḥ // māṣādicūrṇair mṛdbhir vā prakṣālya karayor dvayam / prakṣālya jānupādau ca kāṣṭhair dantān viśodhayet // Sdhp.18v.6-8 < ?

(iṣṭadevatā).'121 The act of dropping water into the eyes after a meal is both a ritual and a medical requirement. For the fingers used are those one has been eating with and the traces of food left on them (after washing) are believed to have healing qualities. The term upasparśana can mean touching something with water as a form of ablution but it is used in this context to denote the ācamana ritual described earlier (pp.75-7). For even today it is the custom of orthodox men or initiated boys (e.g. in a traditional pāṭhaśālā) to eat, wash hands, drop water into the eyes, and then sit with their hands 'between their knees' (antarjānu; cf. section IIC, p.75) to do the sipping ritual (LSJ). The implication here is that women should do this too.

The next set of rulings describes the process of clearing away and washing up; these are also couched in the masculine. Attributed to Āpastamba, they are taken from the Āpastambadharmasūtra section on the duties of the householder. '(Any particles left) where it (the meal) has been eaten should be swept up and taken away, and the area should be sprinkled with water. Then one should scrape the traces of food from the vessels, wash (the vessels) with water, and take them to a clean (or pure) place to the north for Rudra. In this way, the home becomes auspicious (śubham) (again).'122

To clarify this, Tryambaka gives Haradatta's commentary on the sūtra, interspersed with what seem to be comments of his own. The explanation runs as follows. 'Yatra (implies sthāne and thus) means "in the place where food is eaten". "One should sweep it up" means one should gather the left-overs in that place into a pile with a broom and take them elsewhere. When one has taken them out, one should sprinkle the area with water. After sprinkling it with water, then from those vessels, that is, those in which the cooking was done

^{121.} smṛtyarthasāre 'pi // tato hastau sammṛjya parisrāvyānguṣṭhābhyām cakṣuṣor niṣicya cakṣuṣī spṛṣṭvāpa upaspṛṣyeṣṭadevatām smaret // iti // Sdhp. 18v.8-9 (Sm.A.) (Sm.A.p.69 (°ānguṣṭhena for °ānguṣṭhābhyām; niṣicyākṣinī for niṣicya cakṣuṣī; spṛṣṭvāgnim for spṛṣṭvāpa).

^{122.} tadanantarakrtyam āhāpastambah // yatra bhujyate tat samūhya nirhrtyāvoksya tam dešam amatrebhyo lepān samkrsyādbhih samsrjyottaratah śucau deše rudrāya ninayet / evam vāstu śubham bhavati / Sdhp.18v.9-19r.1 (Āp.) < Āp.II.2.4.23, Pune edn. (śivam for śubham); Āp.II.2.4.24, Benares edn. (as Pune edn.).

Day 231

at the time ¹²³—and on this subject (Tryambaka interjects), Amara declares that bhāṇḍa, pātra, amatra and bhājana all mean "container" ¹²⁴—from them one should scrape the "traces", that is, the traces of food and condiments. Then one should wash (the vessels) with water. Then one should take (the vessels) to a clean place to the north, that is, of the house, saying "Let this be for Rudra;" ¹²⁵ or (Tryambaka interjects), according to another work, saying "May homage be to Rudra." ¹²⁶ In this way, the home becomes auspicious (sivam), that is, it becomes prosperous. This is the meaning (of the sūtrā)." ¹²⁷

Although neither Āpastamba nor Tryambaka specify that this process of cleaning up should be done by the wife or the women of the household, in the context of Tryambaka's treatise this is the obvious interpretation. As Tryambaka explains below, washing up after the midday meal is one of the major domestic duties the wife must complete before sunset. The sprinkling of water in the place where food has been eaten indicates both a physical cleansing of the area and a ritual purification. Indeed, Vidyārnava warns that this cleansing of both the vessels used and the place of eating is essential for the ritual purity of all concerned: 'for a man is not really purified so long as these are not cleansed' (1979:165).

The wife's final post-prandial duty is to prepare betel. Two unattributed ślokas explain. 'After eating, while sitting at one's

123. atroj[j]valā// yatra sthāne bhujyate tat samūhya samūhanyā tatratyam ucchistādikam samūhya samūhīkrtya nirhared anyatra / nirhrtya tam dešam avokset/ avoksya tato 'matrebhyah yesu kāle pākah krtah tāny amatrāni// Sdhp.19r.1-4 (Ujj.) < Ujj. on Āp.II.2.4.24, Benares edn. (rāšīkrtya for samūhya samūhīkrtya; anyatah for anyatra; avokṣat for avokṣet; kāle omitted).

124. tathā cāmarah // sarvam āvapanam bhāndam pātrāmatre ca bhājanam //

iti // Sdhp.19r.4 (Amar.) < Amar.II.9.33.

125. tebhyo lepān vyañjanānnalepān saṃkṛṣyādbhiḥ saṃṣṛjya gṛhasyottarataḥ śucau deśe rudrāyedam astv iti ninayet // Sdhp.19r.4-5 (Ujj.) < Ujj. on Āp.II.2.4.24, Benares edn. ('nnalepān vyañjanalepāmś ca for lepān vyañjanānnalepān; saṃkṛṣya kāṣṭhādināvakṛṣya adbhiḥ saṃṣṛjet for saṃkṛṣyādbhih).

126. rudrāya namo 'stv iti kośāntaram // Sdhp.19r.5-6.

127. evam vāstu sivam bhavati samrddham bhavatīty arthah// iti// Sdhp.19r. 6 (Ujj.) < Ujj. on Āp.II.2.4.24, Benares edn. (evam kṛtam for evam; sarvasamṛddham for samrddham; bhavati and arthah omitted).

ease, (one should prepare) something cleansing for the mouth using betel, and something cleansing (for the system) using one of the essential ingredients such as the sunthi root or the āmalaka fruit. Then one should offer a good areca nut and a good leaf with powdered lime on it to the brahmins (i.e. guests) and to the gods; and after that one may chew betel (oneself), '128 In a medical context, sodhana (translated here as 'something cleansing') denotes medicine that removes bad humours (Meulenbeld 1974:511). In particular, sunthī (usually translated as 'dried ginger'129) and betel are taken to stimulate the digestion (Meulenbeld 1974:462-3; 474-5). Since it is the wife's duty to prepare all the items necessary for the gods in the devapūiā ritual (including food and betel), and to prepare food for and serve her husband, his guests and family, we may assume that it is also her job to prepare and serve the items for refreshment and digestion after the meal (cf. Sinha 1980:126-7). We should also note, however, that since the use of betel is also deemed to make a woman attractive (see section IIA, pp. 96-7), it is forbidden to the menstruating woman, the woman whose husband is away, and the widow (see section IV, pp.284-5, 291, 299-300).

According to Dakṣa, one should spend the rest of the afternoon (i.e. the sixth and seventh parts of an eightfold day) allowing one's meal to digest while listening to recitals of the epics and purāṇas (Dakṣa II.61-9; cf. pp.45-9). According to Yājñ.I.113, the rest of the day (ahaḥṣeṣam; i.e. until sunset) should be spent in the company of learned men (siṣṭaiḥ; glossed by Mit. as itihāsapurāṇā-divedibiḥ), those one likes (iṣṭaiḥ; glossed by Mit. as kāvyakathā-prapañcacaturaiḥ, 'those skilled in acting out scenes from drama and narrative'), and one's own relatives. It seems clear from Bāṇa's account in the Kādambarī, for example, that these pleasures were also available to royal or court women such as queen Vilāsavatī (anavaratavācyamānāḥ punyakathāḥ śuśrāva; Kād.p.135). As I have suggested in my introduction, perhaps Tryambaka's

^{128.} bhuktvā tu sukham āsīnam tāmbūlenāsya sodhanam / sunthyāmalaka-dhātūnām ekenātha visodhanam // supūgam ca supatram ca cūmena ca samanvitam / pradadyāt dvijadevebhyas tāmvūlam carvayet tataḥ // iti // Sdhp. 19r.6-9 (ca varjayet amended to carvayet) < ?

^{129.} According to Sanjukta Gupta, śunthī is a sharp hot root of another family altogether, and is given (especially to children) for colds and coughs (personal communication).

Day 233

own treatise was intended to be read aloud to the court women and expounded upon during this afternoon siesta (see pp.22-3, 49). Tryambaka, however, mentions no such activity. Instead, he lists all the household tasks that the wife should dispatch before sunset.

'Cleaning the house (a second time), washing the pots (after the midday meal), and gathering together all the paraphernalia (required for the evening rituals)—these tasks should definitely be done before sunset because they are necessary for the vaisvadeva, atithi and other rituals which should be performed in the evening. But the pounding of rice should not be done at sunset (a second time).'130 Tryambaka quotes a śloka attributed to the Mārkandeyapurāṇa. 'If a woman in her ignorance cleans rice and so on when the sun has set, she will be barren in life after life.'131 On the other hand, also according to the Mārkandeyapurāṇa, 'it is wrong not to clean the house in the evening: if a woman fails to do the cleaning at sunset, she will be without husband and property in life after life.'132

Despite the apparent confusion about the timing of these tasks, there seem to be two points. First, the preparation of rice (cleaning, pounding, etc.) should be done only once a day, before dawn. Secondly, other household tasks such as sweeping and cleaning the house, should be done both morning (i.e. before dawn) and evening (i.e. before sunset). Similarly, the washing of pots and pans after the midday meal and the preparations for the evening ritual should all be completed before sunset. In this way, both home and wife will be in a fit state for the evening ritual and the evening meal. As we shall see, the preparations for the evening rituals presuppose the preparation of food as well.

^{130.} rātrau kartavyavaišvadevātithipūjanādyupayogitayā grhasammārjanabhāndaprakṣālanasāmagrīsampādanādikam samdhyākālāt pūrvam eva kartavyan // vrīhyavahananam tu samdhyākāle na kartavyam // Sdhp.19r.9-19v.1.

^{131.} tathā ca mārkaṇḍeyapurāṇe // samdhyākāle tu samprāpte dhānyasaṃ-skaraṇādikam / kurute yā tu mohena vandhyā janmani [janmani] // Sdhp.19v. 1-2 (Mārk.P.) < ?

^{132.} sāyam kāle grhasammārjanākarane dosa ukto mārkandeyapurāne // samdhyākāle tu samprāpte mārjanam na karoti yā / bhartrhīnā bhavet sā tu ni [h]svā janmani janmani // iti // Sdhp.19v.2-4 (Mārk.P.) <?

IID Evening (Sdhp. 19v.4–21r.3)

The considerably shorter section relating to the wife's duties in the evening may be divided into two main groups. First, Tryambaka deals briefly with the evening equivalents of morning rituals and tasks: the evening agnihotra, paying respect to one's elders, the vaiśvadeva ritual and bali offerings, paying homage to guests, and the evening meal (Sdhp.19v.4-20r.4). Secondly, he gives several rulings regarding sexual intercourse at night (śayanam; Sdhp. 20r.4-21r.2).

On the question of whether the wife need be present at the evening agnihotra ritual as well as at the morning one, opinions differ. Tryambaka explains that, according to Baudhāyana, 'the wife's presence at the evening ritual is necessary.' The first part of the sūtra quoted is also given in Tryambaka's section on the morning fire ritual (section IIB, p.130, note 26). 'The chief wife (patnī) should be present at the evening and the morning (sacrifice).' The rest of the sūtra adds that 'some say (she should be present) every evening.' Tryambaka concludes that 'in that case, there would be no rule (requiring the patnī's presence) for the morning (ritual).'2

The second ritual duty to be performed by the wife each evening is that of paying respect to her elders (cf. section IIC, pp.156-68). According to the *Smrtiratna*, 'such things as paying respect to one's elders and homage to guests should be done (in the evening) as (they are) in the morning.' The quotation is given in the masculine. '(In the evening) as in the morning (lit. daytime), one who has performed the fire ritual, paid homage to his elders and, according to his resources, offered hospitality to guests may perform the vaiśvadeva and bali rituals and then eat.'4

- 1. sāyamagnihotrasamaye patnīsannidhānasyāvasyakatām āha bodhāya-naḥ// Sdhp.19v.4-5.
- 2. sāyamprātar evaisā patny anvāste // sāyamsāyam ity eke // (< Baudh. śr.III.4.p,72) iti/ ata eva prātar aniyama iti// Sdhp.19v.5. Cf. section IIB, note 26.
- 3. tato gurunamaskārātithyādikam divāvat kartavyam ity uktam smṛliratne// Sdhp.19v.5-6.
 - 4. hutāgnir vanditaguruh krtātithyas ca saktitah / vaisvadevabalim cāpi

Tryambaka continues. 'The cooking for the vaisvadeva ritual should also be done in the evening (a second time).' The quotation that follows is attributed to Visnu. 'O king, in the evening as well (as in the morning), one should take freshly cooked food and, together with one's wife, make bali offerings at the time of the vaiśvadeva ritual.'5 The quotation is precisely as given in both the Parāśaramādhavīya and the Smrticandrikā. In the Visnupurāna, however, which all three claim to quote, it is the patnī who should take the freshly cooked food and make the bali offerings, but without mantras (patny amantram). Tryambaka makes this point next, with an important proviso. 'In the evening (lit. "at night"), if the husband is not there, the vaisvadeva and bali offerings may also be performed by the patnī, but without mantras.'6 He quotes Manu. 'The patnī should make the bali offering using food prepared in the evening, without mantras.'7 But neither Manu nor his commentators stipulate that the husband should be away before this ruling comes into effect. The second half of Manu's śloka merely explains that the vaiśvadeva ritual, and therefore the bali offerings too, are prescribed for both morning and evening. According to Tryambaka, however, the patnī may only substitute for her husband when the latter is away; otherwise she should assist as usual. Either way, she should prepare fresh food for the evening ritual.

Tryambaka next deals with the ritual hospitality to guests which, according to the *Visnupurāna*, should be observed before the evening meal as well as before the midday one (cf. section IIC, pp.183-210). In fact, the ritual is of even greater importance in the

kṛtvāśnīyād yathā divā // iti // Sdhp.19v.6-7 (Smṛtiratna) < Sm.M.II.p.455 (vaiśvadevam for vaiśvadeva°; yathāvidhi for yathā divā, the latter given as variant; Smṛtiratna).

^{5.} sāyam vaišvadevārtham pākam āha viṣnuh // punah pākam upādāya sāyam apy avanīpate / vaišvadevanimittam vai patnyā sārdham balim haret // iti // Sdhp.19v.8-9 (Viṣṇu) < Par.M.I.i.p.439 (Viṣ.P.); Sm.C.II.p.627 (Viṣ.P.); Sm.M.II.p.455 (Viṣ.P.); Viṣ.P.III.11.102 (patny amantram for patnyā sārdham).

^{6.} rātrau vaišvadevabalidānam patyasannidhāne patnyāpy amantram kartavyam // Sdhp. 19v.9-10.

^{7.} tatra manuh // sāyam siddhasya cānnasya patnyamantram balim haret // iti // Sdhp.19v.10 (patnyāmantram amended to patnyamantram; Manu) < Manu III.121a (tv annasya siddhasya for siddhasya cānnasya); Kūrm.P.II.18. 109a (cānnasya siddhasya).

evening than at midday. The quotation reads as follows. 'The wise man should honour any guest who comes (to his house) according to his own resources. He should bid him welcome, O Parthiva, and honour him, bowing down as he offers him water to wash his feet and a seat, and then (he should honour him) by offering food and a bed. O king, whatever sin accrues to men when a daytime guest turns his back and leaves (unfed), that same (sin) increases eightfold when he turns his back and leaves (unfed) once the sun has set.'8 The idea that the evening meal is of greater ritual importance than the midday meal no doubt follows from the fact that the evening agnihotra is the primary part of the twofold fire ritual, cf. agniśuśrūsa; section IIB, pp.102-7). On the practical level, of course, it is also harsher to turn a stranger away at night.

Finally, Tryambaka considers the evening meal itself. According to Sandilya, 'the householder should eat at night that which is beneficial, wholesome and very satisfying.'9 Clearly, Tryambaka's treatment of evening rituals and duties tells us little more than that these activities should be performed in the evening much as they are in the morning or at midday.

Tryambaka begins his subsection on going to bed (śayanam) with a quotation from the Smrtyarthasara. 'After performing the vaiśvadeva oblation (homa) and offering hospitality to guests, after eating a light meal surrounded by one's dependants, then, making (full) use of sweet-smelling unguents, garlands, betel and so on, one

8. tadānīm atithipūjoktavisņupurāņe // atithim cāgatam tatra svašaktyā pūjaved budhah // pādasaucāsanaprahvah svāgatoktyā ca pūjayet / tatas cānnapradānena śayanena ca pārthiva // dinātithau ca vimukhe gate yat pātakam nrpa / tad evāstaguņam pumsām sūryodhe vimukhe gate // iti // Sdhp.20r.1-3 (Vis.P.) < Vis.P.III.11.103b-105 (pūjanam for pūjayed; tu vimukhe for ca vimukhe); Par.M.I.i.p.440 (verses 102b,104; 1 MS has v.103; divātithau for dinātithau); Sm.M.II.p.456 (bhojayed for pūjayed; °āsanah prahvah for °āsanaprahvah; divātithau tu for dinātithau ca; Vis.P.).

9. tato bhojanam āha śāṇḍilyaḥ// naktam kuṭumbako 'śnīyād dhitam pathyam sutrptimat // iti // Sdhp.20r.4 (Śāndilya) < Śm.M.II.p.455 (kutum-

biko for kutumbako; Śāndilya).

10. smrtyarthasāre // homam vaišvadevam ātithyam ca krtvā bhrtyaih parivrto laghu bhuktvā striyā saha sugandhānulepanamālyatāmbūlādi sevamanah svapet // iti // Sdhp.20r.4-6 (Sm.A.) < Sm.M.II.p.457 (bhūtyaih for bhrtyaih; sevamānam for sevamānah; Sm.A.); Sm.A.p.70 (ātithyarcanam should sleep with one's wife.'10 The Pune edition of the Smrtyarthasāra emphasizes that a man should sleep with his own wife (svastriyā saha). The statement that a man should eat 'surrounded by his dependants' seems somewhat at odds with the rulings mentioned earlier concerning the ritual importance of privacy at meals or at least of eating only with those of similar rank (section IIC, pp.214-17). We must therefore assume the formal separation of diners by, for example, powder designs on the ground between them (cf. ekapankti; p.221).

Tryambaka gives the ruling for the wife. 'Only after she has paid homage (namaskrtya) to her husband's feet may she go to bed.'11 This statement is supported by a śloka attributed to Vyāsa. 'After paying homage to her husband's feet, she should go to bed. Treating her beloved in a way that gives him pleasure (āhlādasamyuktam krtvā), she should engage in sexual intercourse (samyogam ācaret; i.e. she should make love to him).'12

This ruling, with its emphasis on the initiative of the wife, recalls the view mentioned earlier that the ideal woman is all things to her husband: mother, sister, friend, slave and lover (pp.213-14). In fact, according to the writers of manuals on sexual love, the women of Maharashtra were considered especially proficient in the erotic arts and prepared to take the initiative themselves (sakalacatuhṣaṣṭiprayogarāginyah; Kām.II.5.29). There is, of course, the common (male) belief that the sexuality of women is greater than that of men and their need for intercourse consequently more imperative (e.g. Carstairs 1971:73). The negative consequences of this are discussed at some length in section III (pp.246-72) on the inherent nature of women. According to the theorists, wives are of three basic kinds: very young and therefore extremely shy in sexual matters (mugdhā, 'artless'; navodhā, 'newly married'; Randhawa 1962: plate II); somewhat more advanced and less inhibited (madhyamā or madhyā); and, best of all, the mature wife who is confident of her own sexuality (praudhā;

for ātithyam ca; bhuñjīta for laghu bhuktvā; tatah svastriyā for striyā; sugandhalepanatāmbūlādi for sugandhānulepanamālyatāmbūlādi).

^{11.} bhartuh pādau namaskrtyaiva sayanam kartavyam // Sdhp.20r.6. 12. tathā ca vyāsah // pādau bhartu[r] namaskrtya paścāc chayyām samā--

višet // priyam āhlādasamyuktam krtvā samyogam ācaret // iti // Sdhp.20r. 6-7 (Vyāsa) <?

Randhawa 1962: plate III; Bahadur 1972: 26ff.). In his section on general behaviour, Tryambaka himself advocates a bold confidence in sexual matters (*prāgalbhyaṃ kāmakāryeṣu*, Sdhp. 22v.4; section IV, pp.273-4; cf. plates 12, 13).

Following the scribal notations on MS T_I, I shall take the Baudhāyana quotation next. It describes the scene from the husband's point of view. 'Then he should take her into a beautiful room that has been well washed and smeared with cow-dung; (a room that is) perfumed, decked with flowers, incense, lights and a bed; a place where they will not be disturbed; (one that is) illuminated in the (four) directions by means of wicks placed in ghee; (one that has) above (the head of the bed) a jar of water and a mirror. In

such a place, he should make love to her.'13

Paintings depicting the scene show most of the items listed here. For example, one of the many classifications of women includes the wife who expects her husband or lover to return at any moment and who waits at the door with the bed prepared (vāsakasaijā; Bahadur 1972:114). The paintings show a private room carefully arranged with a bed and cushions (Randhawa 1962; figs. 36, 37, 39), garlands of flowers (figs. 37,39), lighted candles in each of the four directions (fig.39, plate XIII), containers for such things as sandalwood paste, perfumed unguents and betel (figs.36,39), and a water-pot at the head of the bed (figs.36,39; cf. Sm.M.II.p.457; Sm.C.II.p.629). In particular, sandalwood paste is used to cool and perfume the body, betel to sweeten the breath (cf. section IIA, pp.96-7). Scenes showing the delights of love-making (samyoga) also record many of the items prescribed by Baudhayana (e.g. Randhawa 1962: fig.76; plates III,IV,XIX). In the Kāmasūtra too, such a 'pleasure room' (ratyāvāsa) is described as decked with flowers and fragrant with perfumes (Kām.II.10.1). The mirror is a frequent addition to such scenes, either as an essential part of the toilet of either husband or wife (Randhawa 1962:45, figs.14,28,49, plate X; Sinha 1980:123) or as a means of intensifying the experience of sexual union (Randhawa 1962:29, fig.6). Although Baudhāyana does not say so, it would presumably be the wife's job to prepare

^{13.} bodhāyanah // atha śrīmantam agāram sammṛṣtopaliptam gandha-vantam puṣpavantam dhūpavantam dīpavantam talpavantam samādhivāsam dikṣu-sarpihsūtrendhanapradyotitam udakumbhādarsocchirasam prapādya tasminn enām samveṣya // iti // Sdhp.20r.9-20v.1 (Baudh.; PT amends samveṣya to samveṣyato) (Baudh.gr.I.6.22 (... samveṣya tasyā antike japati).

the room and to gather the items required for love-making (as she does those for image worship; see section IIC, pp.178-80, notes 34-5).

To avoid repetition, I have extended the passage transposed by the scribe of MS T₁ to include the following two sūtras, also attributed to Baudhāyana. The first, attributed to the Baudhāyana-grhyaparibhāṣāsūtra, describes the preliminaries to love-making. Then, when the sun has set, they adorn each other and lie down on the bed. Then he decks her with a garland (full) of all kinds of sweet fragrances.' According to the second sūtra, attributed to the Baudhāyanagrhyaśeṣasūtra, 'the husband should make love to (his wife) in the first half of the night; and from midnight to the brāhmamuhūrta (see section IIA, pp.51-2), sleeping on a low bed (or on the ground; adhaḥśayanam) (is enjoined).' 15

It is not clear whether the last of these rulings applies to both husband and wife or only to the wife. Judging by the many paintings depicting the place of love-making, a raised bed was common among the wealthier classes (Randhawa 1962: plates XIX,III; figs.21,37, 39). Tryambaka himself alludes to such a bed in his section on women's property. For the items that Sītā gives away before her departure into the forest include 'a raised bed studded with jewels and covered with luxurious cushions' (paryankam agryāstaranam nānāratnavibhūṣitam, Sdhp.26[3]v.4-5; from section IV, pp.277-80). The term pāryanka denotes a particularly fine wooden four-poster (e.g. Sinha 1980:43,61,151,159). Such a bed is typical of wealthy or princely families, and examples may still be found in Indian palaces today. According to Tryambaka, neither the menstruating woman nor the widow is permitted to sleep on such a bed (see section IV, pp.284-5, 299-300).

It seems unlikely that, after making love, both husband and wife would descend to the floor to sleep (cf. Randhawa 1962: plate III, depicting the entwined couple in what appears to be post-coital sleep, still on their raised bed). Perhaps Tryambaka's intention is

^{14.} bodhāyanaparibhāsāyām // athāstam ita āditye 'nyonyam alankrtyopari sayyāyām sayāte / athainām sarvasurabhigandhamālyā yunakti // iti // Sdhp. 20v.1-3 (bodhāyanaparibhāṣāyām < ?

^{15.} tac cheşe bodhāyanah // tasyāḥ saha patyā pūrvarātrāv upasamveśanam / ardharātrād adhaḥśayanam ā brāhmamuhūrtād // iti // Sdhp.20v. 3-4 (seṣe bodhāyanah) < ?

that the wife should leave her husband to sleep on the bed while she resorts to a mat on the floor. It is certainly customary in some rural areas today (e.g. in western Rajasthan) for the husband to sleep on a raised bed while his wife and family sleep on the floor (or on a low bed; cf. Chaki-Sircar 1984:98). In fact, the practice was fairly common among traditional families in Maharashtra earlier this century (LSJ). Moreover, dharmasāstra rulings specify that the couple should only lie together during sexual intercourse (yāvat saṃnipātaṃ caiva saḥaśayyā; Āp.II.1.1.21); once that is over, they should sleep separately (tato nānā, Āp.II.1.1.22; tataḥ prthak śayīyātām, Ujj., Benares edn.) and bathe (Āp.II.1.1.23;II.1.2.1; Gaut.I.9.25; Manu V.144).

Back in sequence once more, Tryambaka's next point is that 'she (the wife) should not sleep naked.' The subsequent quotation is attributed to Manu. 'They should make love, the man having removed his clothes, the woman without removing hers; if both remove their clothes, discord will enter (into them).' 17

This seems a surprising ruling, especially in view of the obvious nakedness of the woman in some of the paintings extolling sexual love (e.g. Plates 12, 13; cf. Randhawa 1962; plate III; Sinha 1980; 43, 45, 49, 51, etc.). It is also at odds with the ruling below that she should not keep her blouse on. Perhaps what is meant here is that, if she removes her clothes to make love, she should dress again to sleep. Aśv.gr.III.9.6, for example, rules that a man should not look at a naked woman except during sexual intercourse (na nagnām striyam īksetānyatra maithunāt). Certainly, it is customary for women even today to sleep in their saris. It was also the custom, especially in middle-class homes a generation or two ago, for the wife to wash and put on a clean sari after making love. (As a result, children amused themselves by noting whether the sari worn on emerging from the bedroom in the morning was the same as that worn on disappearing into it at night; LSJ.) However, although Tryambaka's own words may be interpreted in this way, the śloka he quotes may not. With regard to men, although (according to Tryambaka) they may remove their clothes for love-making, they too should not sleep naked

^{16.} śayanam ca nagnayā na kartavyam // Sdhp.20r. 7-8.

^{17.} tathā ca manuh // amuktavasanā yosid vimuktavasanah pumān / samvišetām ubhau muktavasanau kalir āvišet iti // Sdhp.20r.8-9 (Manu) < ? Not in N.S. edn. of Manu.

(Āśv.gr.III.9.6; Gaut.I.9.60; Manu IV.75; Vis.Sm.70.3; Sm.A. p. 70).

A series of ślokas attributed to Vyāsa follow. Tryambaka introduces them by emphasizing the first ruling given. 'Sexual intercourse with one's husband should not be performed with wet feet.'18 The relevant sloka reads as follows. 'If a woman makes love with her husband when her feet are wet, she deprives her husband of long life and goes to hell herself.'19 This ruling is applied elsewhere to men as well as women. Manu VI.76, for example, rules that one should eat with one's feet still wet (i.e. from the purificatory sprinkling; ārdrapādas tu bhunjīta; cf. Vis.Sm.68.34) but one should not make love with wet feet (nārdrapādas tu samvišet). 'Make love' (samvišet) is glossed by the commentators as 'sleep' (sayīta, Sarv.; supyāt, Kull.; cf. nārdrapādah supyāt, Vis.Sm.70.1; Sm.A.p.70, etc.). However, paintings of Rādhā having her wet feet dried by a maidservant (e.g.Randhawa 1962: plate X) are obviously more piquant if the first meaning is assumed. On these grounds, I suspect that the young bride described by Sinha (1980:123) as having her feet massaged is in fact having her wet feet properly dried.

The next two ślokas (also attributed to Vyāsa) return to the subject of the wife's attire. 'If a woman makes love with her husband while wearing a bodice, she will certainly be a widow in three years or even sooner. If a woman (dayitā; lit. "beloved") makes love with the "palm-leaf" type of earrings (tālapattra) dangling from her ears, she will be a widow in this life within five or seven

years.'20

The reasons for both rulings seem self-evident. Regarding the first, we may recall the earlier requirement that a woman should always cover her breasts (section IIA, p.90, note 69). The rule that she should remove her bodice for love-making reinforces the idea that women of this class usually wore bodices in public. In Tryambaka's circles at least, it seems that a woman's naked breasts

^{18.} ārdrapādayā bhartrsango na kartavyah // Sdhp.20v.4.

^{19.} tathā ca vyāsah // ārdrapādā ca yā nārī bhartrsangam samācaret / āyusyam harate bhartuh sā nārī narakam vrajet // Sdhp.20v.4-6 (Vyāsa) <?

^{20.} kancukena samam nārī bhartrsangam samācaret / tribhir varṣais ca madhye vā vidhavā bhavati dhruvam // tālapattragalatkarnā dayitā maithunam vrajet/ pancame saptame varṣe vaidhavyam iha jāyate // Sdhp.20v.6-8 (tālāpatra° amended to tālapattra°; Vyāsa) < ?

were more likely to be associated with sexual intimacy than with fashion or custom.

A glance through paintings depicting high-class men and women will demonstrate their fondness for ornaments. Women in particular wore elaborate earrings, nose-rings and hair ornaments (e.g. Randhawa 1962: plates VII, XI, figs.11,68; cf. Śāhendravilāsa V. 33-42,VI.216). Even the naked woman pictured in her husband's embrace wears a mass of jewellery at her wrists, ankle and throat, in her nose and ears, and on her forehead (e.g. plates 12, 13; cf. Randhawa 1962: plate III). The 'palm-leaf' earring—also mentioned in the Kādambarī (Kād. II.28; MW 1976:445)—is evidently a particularly large, pendent ornament that might impede the intimacy of lovers.

The next śloka (also attributed to Vyāsa) deals with the lifting of certain important prohibitions for the duration of love-making. 'Allowing one's body to touch (lit. "cling to") the (other's) feet, (eating the other's) left-overs (ucchiṣṭam), blows, anger, rage and reproaches—in love-making, none of these is wrong.'21

As explained earlier, touching someone's feet is a formal gesture made by an inferior to his or her superior (gurūnām abhivādanam; section IIC, pp.157-60). While it is proper for a wife to touch her husband's feet, therefore, the reverse is unthinkable except in the special context of love-making. Lifting this prohibition makes all kinds of intimacies possible: from the man throwing himself at the woman's feet in an extravagant gesture of adulation (pādapatanam, Kām.III.2.11; cf. Upadhyaya 1981: plate XXVIII) to a variety of otherwise impossible positions for sexual intercourse (Kām.II.6.1 ff.). Paintings even show the woman touching the man's head with her foot as a form of rebuke if, for example, he mentions another woman's name (Upadhyaya 1961: plate XLIIa; Sinha 1980:91).

Similarly, eating the left-overs of someone else's meal (ucchiṣṭam) is a sign of one's own humility in relation to that other person. Again, while it is proper for the wife to eat her husband's left-overs, the reverse is normally condemned (cf. pp.221-7). Lifting this prohibition allows not only eating from the same dish (as at the time of marriage) but also the intimacies of drinking wine or taking food directly from the lover's mouth (e.g. vadanena tāmbūladānam; Kām.III.2.12).

^{21.} pādalagnatanus caiva hy ucchistam tādanam tathā / kopaḥ krodhas ca nirbhartsā samyogeṣu na doṣakṛt / Sdhp.20v.8-9 (Vyāsa) < ?

With regard to physical blows, it is generally agreed that a husband may beat his wife if she has done something wrong (e.g. Manu VIII.299-300; but not on the head or chest, Medh. and Kull. on Manu VIII.300). The reverse is inconceivable. In contrast, a woman must control her thoughts, words and actions (manovāgdehasamyatā, Manu V.165,166; cf. Gaut.I.9.3; Yājñ.I.87). She should never answer back even when she is scolded (ākrustāpi na cākrośet) nor show her anger or resentment even when she is beaten (tāditāpi prasīdati, Sdhp.23r.4-5, from section IV, pp.273-4; cf.Sk.P.III. 2.7.18) or if her husband takes another wife (Manu IX.83). In lovemaking, such prohibitions are swept aside. As a result, the manuals on the art of love have produced detailed classifications of the permitted types of scratching (Kām.II.4), biting (Kām.II.5) and striking (Kām.11.7). Sexual intercourse becomes an erotic 'quarrel'; striking one's partner a sign of passion. Vātsyāyana's description of 'love quarrels' (pranayakalaha) is to the point: when a woman is (or pretends to be) jealous, a great quarrel arises; she cries, becomes angry, strikes her lover, pulls his hair, kicks him repeatedly on his arms, head, chest and back, and rebukes him with harsh and reproachful words (Kām. II. 10.40-6). Indeed, it is said that lovers in the throes of passion are impervious to pain (Kām.II.7.1ff.). These elements are frequently recorded in poetry and art. For example, the eight types of lady-love (nāvikā) include the woman who, having quarrelled with her lover, sends him away (abhisandhitā or kalahantarita; cf. Randhawa 1962: fig.40); and the one who reproaches her lover bitterly for sleeping with another woman (khanditā; cf. Randhawa 1962: fig. 42). Tryambaka's point is that such behaviour, normally forbidden to the good and submissive wife, is acceptable in the privacy of making love.

The next śloka, also attributed to Vyāsa, reads as follows. 'Kunkuma, collyrium, haldi power (haridrā) and sandalwood paste, clean clothes and betel—each brings happiness (and is therefore auspicious) in love-making.'22 The ointments, powders and pastes—all mentioned in Tryambaka's section on getting dressed in the morning (IIA, pp.96-7), constitute the signs of the happily married woman. Clearly, the ideal wife will be as carefully dressed and perfumed for the evening as she is at the beginning of the day (see plates 2-5).

22. kunkumam cāñjanam caiva tathā haridrācandane / dhautavastram ca tāmbūlam saṃyogeṣu subhāvaham // iti // Sdhp.20v.9-10 (Vyāsa) < ?

According to Vātsyāyana, she will come to the 'pleasure room' freshly bathed and dressed (Kām.II.10.1). After they have made love, they will each go separately to wash, returning to chew betel together and to apply ointments to each other's bodies (Kām.II. 10.13-14).

Tryambaka's last point, both in this section and in his treatment of daily duties as a whole, is to lift one more prohibition for the purpose of love-making. 'There is nothing wrong in wearing dark

blue (nīla) clothes when making love.'23

This relates to a prohibition that is normally couched in the masculine and therefore apparently applies to men. As I have already shown in the section on getting dressed, the male snātaka is repeatedly enjoined to wear white garments and not dyed ones (raktam, Gaut.I.9.5; sarvān rāgān vāsasi, Āp.I.11.30.10). Āp.I.11. 30.11 also prohibits cloth that is naturally black (kṛṣṇaṃ ca svā-bhāvikam; such as kambala, a kind of woollen cloth, Ujj.). Dark blue cloth, that is, cloth dyed with indigo (nīlam, nīlīraktam) is both specified for śūdras and forbidden to higher varṇas (see section IIA, p.89).

Tryambaka's quotation is attributed to Āpastamba. 'If a brahmin puts on his body a garment that has been dyed dark blue, he must sit day and night (without eating) and then purify himself by (drinking) pañcagavya.'²⁴ The purifying properties of pañcagavya are discussed in section IIA (pp.59-60). A later śloka from the Āpastambasmṛti, not given by Tryambaka, adds that if one sits down to eat while wearing blue garments, one must undergo the cāndrāyana fast (Āp.Sm.VI.8). Tryambaka merely gives the exception. 'There is no sin attached to women (wearing dark blue garments) in

bed during love-making just for fun.'25

This suggests that the prohibition regarding dark blue clothes normally applies to both men and women but, for women, it no longer applies during love-making. Certainly, women are portrayed in both poetry and art wearing dark blue as they emerge from the

23. upabhogasamaye nīlavastradhāraṇam na doṣādhāyakam // Sdhp.20v.10.

24. tathā cāpastambaḥ // nīlīraktam yadā vastram brāhmaņo 'ngeṣu dhāra-yet / ahorātroṣito bhūtvā pañcagavyena śudhyati // Sdhp.20v.10-21r.2 (Āp.) < Āp.Sm.VI.4; Mit. on Yājñ.III.292, p.500; Apar.p.1186; Ang.35 (vipro dehesu for brāhmano 'ngesu).

25. strīnām krīdārthasambhoge sayanīye na dusyati // iti // Sdhp.21r.2 (Āp.) < Āp.Sm.VI.1b; Mit. on Yājñ.III.292; Apar.p.1186; Ang.32b.

Evening 245

bedroom in the morning (e.g. Randhawa 1962:186, plate XX, cf. plate III). The associations attached to the colour presumably reinforce the intimacy of the scene. The idea that this same sari should not be worn during the day recalls a similar rule for men in the Apastambadharmasūtra: one should come together (for sexual intercourse) when wearing a garment (reserved) for (making love to) women (strīvāsasaiva samnipātaḥ syāt, Āp.II.1.1.20; glossed by Ujj. as stryupabhogārtham vāsaḥ; by Sm.M.I.p.77 as strīsam-yogārthavāsasā). As the Ujjvalā explains, the issue here is that one should wear the right thing at the right time (evakāro bhinnakramah). Thus one should not wear the garment one makes love in when performing sacrificial ritual and so on during the day (na tena . . . brahmayajñādi kṛtyam). In principle, this ruling would seem to apply to women as well as men.

Having produced rulings for almost every activity in a woman's day, from the moment she wakes in the morning to the garments she should wear at night, Tryambaka finally brings this lengthy and detailed section to a close. 'These are the daily duties (of women).'26

III. The Inherent Nature of Women

(strīsvabhāvaḥ; Sdhp.21r.3-22r.8)1

After instructing the virtuous wife on her duties throughout the day, Tryambaka turns to face the objection most likely to undermine his whole project. The problem is simple but devastating. If women are inherently wicked, as they are traditionally supposed to be, then how can they possibly have any interest in learning what Tryambaka is at such pains to teach them? Why does he bother to teach women at all? Tryambaka puts this question in the form of a pūrvapakṣa. 'The problem is (nanu), how can there be any (real) inclination towards receiving religious instruction ('dharmaśravane) as described (by me above) on the part of women who are by nature corrupted (svabhāvato duṣṭānām strīnām)? For the inherent faults of women (strīnām svabhāvikadosā[h]) are widely recognized.'2

Tryambaka does not spell out the traditional argument for the inherent sinfulness of women; but it is clearly assumed. In his section on snāna, for example, he rules that twice-born men should perform the bathing ritual with mantras (mantravat), śūdras and women without (tūṣnīm; section IIA, p.83, note 60; cf. Manu II. 66-7, IX.18; Yājñ.I.13; Baudh.I.5.11.7, II.2.3.46) Since being born a woman or a śūdra is the result of particular sins in a previous birth,3 the mere fact of femaleness is seen as the proof of sin. Being sinful, a woman is amantravat; being amantravat, she cannot purify herself of sin; she therefore remains sinful all her life. It is quite logical, therefore, to attribute all manner of innate unpleasantness to women.

The Jaina explanation for why the nineteenth Tirthankara was born a woman (Malli) makes this graphically clear. In her previous life, Malli was a king who, together with his friends, renounced the

1. An earlier version of this section, entitled 'Strīsvabhāva: The Inherent Nature of Women', is included in Oxford University Papers on India, Vol.1, part I, edited by N.J. Allen et al., Delhi (O.U.P. 1986). This in turn formed the basis of the much briefer paper of the same title delivered at the Sixth World Sanskrit Conference, Philadelphia, 13–20 October 1984.

2. nanu svabhāvato duṣṭāṇām strīṇam nirūpitadharmasravane ca katham pravrttih // strīṇām svabhāvikadoṣās ca bahulam avagamyante// Sdhp.21r.3-4.

3. subhakrcchubhayonīşu pāpakrtpāpayonişu/ upapadyati dharmajña yathā-dharmam yathāgamam// Mbh.XIII.120.9. Cf. Manu XII.3,9.

world. They agreed to undertake the same number of fasts, but the king cheated (by claiming ill health, etc.) and so outdid his friends in austerity. Since he was otherwise without fault, he was reborn a Tīrthankara; since he had cheated, he was reborn a woman. Such faults as cheating, deviousness, greed and cunning are widely agreed to be the cause of a female birth (cf. Jñātrdharmakathāsūtra viii; cited Jaini 1979:39-40, note 93).

More commonly, however, an individual retains his or her gender in transmigration. For example, threats involving rebirth at a lower level in the hierarchy of births always specify a female animal for a female offender (e.g. section IIC, p.226, note 114; Sdhp.39v.10-40r.1, from section IV, p.288; Manu XII,72, etc.). In similes (in $k\bar{a}vya$, etc.), it is also unusual to cross gender. Two conclusions may be drawn. First, since sinfulness is the mark of a female birth, the female of the species is always lower than the male. Secondly, so deeply ingrained is this sinfulness that it is more difficult for a female to be reborn as a male than it is for an animal to be reborn as a human. This is the scale of Tryambaka's problem. If sinfulness is natural to women, and so powerful in its effect in life after life, then how can mere religious instruction help?

Tryambaka begins by collecting evidence for the pūrvapakṣa (i.e. the prima facie view) he hopes to demolish. The first three ślokas, attributed to the Anuśāsanaparvan of the Mahābhārata, are taken from Bhīsma's discourse to Yudhisthira on the inherent nature of women (strīsvabhāvakathanam; Mbh.XIII.38-9). 'Women are inherently fickle (calasvabhāvā[h]), difficult to manage, and in their very nature (bhāvata[h]) difficult to understand; as (unintelligible as) the words of a wise man, so are women.'4 We may note in passing that here are the bad qualities of instability and fickleness attributed to the goddess Śrī by the cows; and hence their excuse for refusing her request (section IIA, pp.60-3). The second śloka involves a play on words: since māyā ('magic', 'trickery') is a feminine noun, it is taken to be female. 'The (cunning) tricks (māyā) of (the demons) Śambhara, Namuci, Bali and Kumbhīnasi⁵ too—

^{4.} tathā cānušāsanike // calasvabhāvā duḥsevyā durgrāhyā bhāvatas tathā / prājñasya puruṣasyeha yathā vācas tathā striyaḥ // Sdhp.21r.4-5 (Mbh.) < Mbh.XIII.38.24.

^{5.} Śambhara and Namuci are asuras of the Dānava clan (Mbh. I.59.11-12, 20-2); both were killed by Indra in the great war between the gods and the

all these they (i.e. wise men) know to be women (<code>voṣit[ah]</code>; i.e. female).'6 The third <code>śloka</code> is equally resounding. 'Ever since the five gross elements (were created), ever since the (three) worlds were created by the creator, ever since men and women (<code>pramadā[h]</code>; lit. "seductive" or "wanton") were fashioned—ever since then there have been faults (<code>doṣāḥ</code>) in women (<code>pramadāsu</code>).'7 For the sake of consistency, the next half-śloka is taken out of sequence. For, despite the fact that Tryambaka includes it in a later passage attributed to the <code>Rāmāyaṇa</code>, this too belongs to Bhīṣma's discourse on women in the <code>Mahābhārata</code>. '(On the one side of a balanced scale,) the edge of the razor, poison, snake(s) and fire; and on the other (i.e. equal to them), women.'8

Tryambaka continues with two choice quotations from Manu's ninth chapter on the religious duties relating to men and women (strīpumdharma). According to Tryambaka's version of these oftquoted lines, 'they (i.e. women) are innately (svabhāvataḥ) promiscuous, fickle-minded, lacking in love, and unfaithful to their husbands even when closely guarded.'9 Furthermore, at the time of their creation, '(the original) Manu allocated to women (the habit of) lying and sitting around, (a love of) ornament, (indiscriminate) sexual desire, anger, meanness, treachery and bad conduct.'10

asuras (Mbh.III.165.19-20; III.168.18-19). Bali is an asura of the daitya clan (Mbh.I.59.11-12,20); he too was defeated by Indra in the great war (Mbh. III.165.15; III.168.20); he was also conquered by Viṣṇu in the form of a dwarf (Mbh.III.100.21; III.299.13). There is no other reference to Kumbhīnasi in the Mahābhārata.

^{6.} śambharasya ca yā māyā yā māyā namucer api // baleḥ kumbhīnaseś caiva sarvās tā yosito viduh // Sdhp.21r.5-6 (Mbh.) < Mbh.XIII.39.5.

^{7.} yataś ca bhūtāni mahānti pañca yataś ca lokā vihitā vidhātrā // yataḥ pumāṃsaḥ pramadāś ca nirmitās tadaiva doṣāḥ pramadāsu nārada // iti // Sdhp.21r.6–8 (Mbh.) < Mbh.XIII.38.30.

^{8. (}rāmāyane 'pi // Sdhp.21r.10) kṣuradhārā viṣam sarpo vahnir ity ekatah striyah // Sdhp. 21v.3-4 (Rām.) < Mbh.XIII.38.29b. The full sloka puts even more in the scales to balance the evil of women: antakah samano mṛtyuh pātālam vaḍavāmukham / kṣuradhārā...etc..

^{9.} manuh // p[um]ścalyāś calacittāś ca ni[h]snehāś ca svabhāvataḥ / rakṣitā yatnato 'pīha bhartṛṣv etā vikurvate // Sdhp.21r.8-9 (Manu) < Manu IX.15 (paumścalyāc calacittāc ca naisnehyāc ca . . .).

^{10.} sayyāsanam alankāram kāmam krodham anāryatām / drohabhāvam kucaryām ca strībhyo manur akalpayat // Sdhp.21r.9-10 (Manu) < Manu IX.17 (anārjavam, 'dishonesty', for anāryatām; PT follows Manu).

Tryambaka's third and last source of quotations derogatory to women is the Rāmāyana. These are culled from three separate episodes. First, Queen Kausalya's lament to Sītā before the latter's departure to the forest with Rama includes the bitter complaint that 'the hearts of women do not care for (good) family, (good) deeds, wisdom, gifts, or even affection, for their hearts are inconstant.'11 In context, of course, Kausalyā's words compliment Sītā, whose devotion to Rāma even in adversity places her so far above the common run of women. Sītā goes further still, and begs Kausalyā not even to associate her with such wicked women.12 The next two ślokas are taken from the sage Agastya's words to Rāma before he advises the prince to settle in Pañcavatī. Again Sītā's behaviour is contrasted with that of ordinary women. For, according to Agastya, 'this has been the nature of women (ever) since creation (began): they cling to him who prospers and abandon him who runs into difficulty.'13 'For women take after (i.e. model themselves on) the fickleness of lightning flashes, the sharpness of weapons, and the speed of Garuda and the wind.'14 In the Rāmāyana episode, Agastya, having made his point, exonerates Sītā from all such blame. 15 Tryambaka simply quotes further criticisms of women, this time as spoken by the female ascetic Anasūyā (wife of the sage, Atri) to Sītā. She too compliments Sītā by denigrating the women who refuse to behave as she does. 'For wicked women - who do not know right from wrong in this way, and who, although dependent on their husbands for protection (bhartrnāthā[h]), wander about with their hearts subject (only) to their own desires - (such women,) O Maithili, incur disgrace and a fall from dharma.'16 In the context of Anasūyā's advice to Sītā, these words describe the

^{11.} rāmāyane 'pi // na-kulam na krtam vidyām na dattam nāpi samgraham / strīnām grhnāti hrdayam anityahrdayā hi tāḥ // Sdhp.21r.10-21v.1 (Rām.) < Rām.II.39.23b,24a (vidyā for vidyām, samgrahah for samgraham).

^{12.} na mām asajjanenāryā samānayitum arhati // Rām.II.39.28b.

^{13.} eṣā hi prakṛti[h] strīṇām ā sṛṣṭe raghunandana/ samastham anuraj-[y]anti viṣamastham tyajanti ca// Sdhp.21v.1-2 (Rām.)<Rām.III.13.5.

^{14.} śatahradānām lolatvam śastrānām tīksnatām tathā / garudānilayoh śaighryam anugacchanti yositah // Sdhp.21v.2-3 (Rām.) < Rām.III.13.6.

^{15.} iyam tu bhavato bhāryā dosair etair vivarjitā // Rām.III.13.7a.

^{16.} ayodhyākānde sītām praty anasūyā // Sdhp.21v.4. na tv evam avagacchanti gunadoṣam a[sa]tstriyah/ kāmavaktavyahrdayā bhartrnāthās caranti yāh // prāpnuvanty ayasas caiva dharmabhramsam ca maithil[i] // Sdhp.21v. 4-6 (Rām.) < Rām.II.117.26-27a. See also Sdhp.25r.3-4, section IV.

behaviour and fate of bad women, not the inherent nature of women in general. Out of context, as presented by Tryambaka, the implication is that such is the behaviour of the majority of women.

Tryambaka ends with a well-known śloka on the fate in store for women who indulge their evil tendencies. 'By their breach of conduct, women who behave badly (durvṛttāḥ) cause their three families—of father, mother and husband—to fall, bringing them misfortune both in this world (disgrace) and in the next (bad karma).'17

Tryambaka concludes his case for the innate wickedness of women by directing us to his own voluminous commentary on the *Rāmāyaṇa*, the *Dharmākūta*, where, he tells us, 'further examples (of this kind) are to be found.' 18 (For a brief discussion of the authorship of the *Dharmākūta*, see pp.10-13.)

The argument is resumed once more. If, as a result of hearing in this way about the multiplicity of faults (attributed to women), someone were to ask how women could (possibly) have any inclination towards religious duty, then the answer is (twofold): because it is understood from the words of Manu and others that they (women) have such qualities as inherent purity (tāsām svabhāvika-śucitvādi guṇānām avagamāt); and because it is also understood from the words of the Viṣṇupurāṇa that women are inherently blessed with good fortune (strīṇām svabhāvato dhanyatvāvagamād api).'19 Before dealing with the specific quotations provided by Tryambaka, I shall consider in more general terms the first of his two assertions.

In ascribing purity to women, Tryambaka takes the bull by the horns. For it is precisely the impurity of women that is usually assumed. There are two major reasons for this. First, there is the impurity of menstruation (see section IV, pp.283-4). This is not merely one of the twelve impurities of the body (cf. Manu V.135), but the inescapable reminder of a woman's guilt. The story of

^{17.} śīlabhangena durvṛttāḥ pātayanti kulatrayam / pitur mātus tathā patyur ihāmutra ca duḥkhadāḥ // iti // Sdhp.21v.6-7 (Rām.) < Sk.P.III.2.7.59 (duḥkhitāḥ for duḥkhadāḥ). See also Sdhp.21v.3-4, from section IV.

^{18.} vistaras tu rāmāyaṇadharmākūte drastavyaḥ // Sdhp.21v.7-8. Cf. Dharmāk.II.i.p.309.

^{19.} evam doṣabāhulyaśravaṇāt katham dharme pravṛttir iti ced ucyate//... ityādi manvādi vacanais tāsām svabhāvikasucitvādi guṇānām avagamāt //... iti viṣṇupurāṇavacanena strīṇāṃ svabhāvato dhanyatvāvagamād api // Sdhp.21v. 8, 22r.1, 6-7.

Indra's brahminicide is told in the Taittirīyasamhitā. When Indra kills Viśvarūpa, he is condemned by the three worlds as a brahminkiller. To escape the effects of this most heinous crime, he persuades the earth, trees and women to assume one-third of his guilt each. In return, he grants each a boon: the earth, when dug, will heal within one year; trees, when cut, will grow again; and women, unlike other animals, may enjoy sexual intercourse at any time (Tait. Sam.II.5.1ff.), even in advanced pregnancy (cf. section IV, pp.288-9). Indra's guilt took the form of fissures in the earth, sap in trees hence one should avoid 'red secretions' and resin from cut trees (Manu V.6; cf. Tait.Sam.II.5.4)—and menstrual blood in women. In several variations on this theme, Indra distributes his brahminicide in four parts: among women, fire, trees and cows (Mbh.XII. 329.28-41); among rivers, mountains, earth and women (Mbh.V. 10-13); among trees, earth, women and water (Bhag.P.VI.9.6-10). The constant recipient is women. In some texts, Indra's sin causes the recipients to become impure; in others, the recipients are already impure. For example, the guilt of Indra is offloaded onto 'foetus-killers' in the Atharvaveda (p.522ff.); onto sinful brahmins who serve śūdras and so on in the Skandapurāna (V.3.118.141); and onto those who kill brahmins in the Rāmāyana (VIII.86.10-16). Menstruation, the sign of a woman's participation in brahminmurder, is thus a mark of both her sexual appetite and her innate impurity (cf. O'Flaherty 1976:153ff.; for the symbolic 'menstrual pollution' of rivers and the earth, see Salomon 1984:153ff., 175-6).

Secondly, as women lost the right to Vedic education and upanayana (cf. Baudh.I.5.11.7; Manu IX.18; etc.), they were increasingly relegated to the level of the śūdra. For example, Manu gives the same rules of purification to women as to śūdras (V.139). Pace R.M. Das (1962:257), who claims that this verse illustrates the purity of women, what is important here is not that women only need to sip water once to become pure but that they are equated with śūdras (who also have to sip water once) and not with twice-born men (who must sip three times).

Again and again, women are linked with other creatures whose only common quality is impurity. As early as the Śatapathabrāhmaṇa, we learn that a woman, a śūdra, a dog and a crow are the embodiments of untruth, sin and darkness.²⁰ Since the śūdra is the lowest of the four classes of men, whose touch defiles (cf. Ap.

^{20.} anrtam strī śūdrah śvā kṛṣṇah śakunis . . . // Śat.Br.XIV.1.1.31.

1.5.17.1 and Har. comm.), and since dogs and crows are always regarded as unclean (cf. Ap.I.5.15.16, I.5.16.30; Baudh.I.6.14.15. Vis.Sm.XXIII.38; etc.), the implication is that women too are impure. Even Manu's claim that a woman's mouth is always pure.21 so often quoted out of context (e.g. Das 1962:257), is something of a back-handed compliment (cf. Manu IV.208). For the verse clearly states the peculiar circumstances in which what is otherwise regarded as impure may be considered pure: a woman's mouth for the purpose of kissing (cumbanādau, paricumbanādau, Sarv., Rāgh., Medh. on Manu V.130; cumbanālinganādau, Nand. on Vis.Sm. XXIII.49); fruit that has fallen as a result of a bird (glossed as 'crows, etc.') pecking it; the flesh of a deer seized by (the hunter's) dog (Manu V.130 and commentaries; Vis.Sm.XXIII.49; cf. Vas. XXVIII.8). Vis.Sm.XXIII.50 expands upon the last point, explaining that the meat of an animal killed by dogs, or by any other carnivorous animals (glossed as 'tigers, jackals, birds of prey, etc.'), or by such as candālas (glossed as 'outcastes and hunters'), is pure. Tryambaka's claim that women are innately pure is therefore by no means obvious.

He supports the claim in two ways. In doing so, he wisely avoids the pitfalls of comparing women with men: the beliefs surrounding sexual difference make that a fruitless approach. Instead, he produces evidence for a purity that is, by its very nature, peculiar to women.

First, he alludes to the traditional view, encapsulated in the Vedic marriage hymn (vivāhasūkta; R.V.X.85), that the marriage ceremony celebrates not the young girl's first marriage, but her fourth. Her previous three marriages are on the transcendent or symbolic plane.²² As the vivāhasūkta explains, Soma acquired her first, then the Gandharva, Agni was her third husband, her fourth is born of

^{21.} nityam āsyam śuci strīnām . . . // Manu V. 130a; Vis.Sm.XXIII.49a (Nand. quotes Laiigabārhaspati, smṛtyantara and Yamasmṛti in support of the purity of women). Cf. Bṛ.Saṃ.73.8 (the feet of brahmins, the backs of cows, the faces of goats and horses are pure; but women are pure all over); Vas.XXVIII.9.

^{22.} For other sets of four items of which three are invisible and transcendent and only the fourth is visible here on earth (e.g. purusa, R.V.X.90; vāk, R.V.I.164.45; and the sacred fires, Tait.Sam.II.6.6.1, Šat.Br.I.2.3.1), see Malamoud 1982:36.

man (manusyajāh).23 The three deities are the divine guardians of the young girl. According to Sāyaṇa, Soma marries the girl child at birth (jātām kanyām; Sāy. on R.V.X.85.40), for the moon is the deity of early growth, who 'moulds the years' (samānām. glossed as samvatsarānām; māsa ākrtih, glossed as kartā; R.V.X. 85.5 and Say.). The Gandharva is the deity of childhood and virginity (cf. R.V.X.85.21-2). Agni is the god of maturity, dwelling in the sacred fire round which the bride must walk. According to the Grhvasamgraha (quoted in the commentary on the Gobh.gr.III.4.6 statement that a bride should be nagnikā), Soma enjoys her first, the Gandharva, when her breasts develop, Agni when she menstruates. Alternatively, in the words of Samvārta 64 (cf. Sm.C.I.p.79), Soma enjoys a girl when hair begins to grow on her body, the Gandharva when she menstruates, Agni when her breasts develop. Each in turn 'marries' the girl, enjoys her favours, rewards her, then passes her on (R.V.X.85.41a). By the time the girl reaches her fourth husband, therefore, she is the recipient of three divine gifts. As Tryambaka intones of women in general (in a quotation attributed vaguely to 'Manu, etc.'), 'Soma gave them cleanliness (saucam), the Gandharva an auspicious (or pure; śubham) tongue (lit. "speech" or "voice"), Agni all-round purity (sarvamedhyatvam); and therefore women are pure (medhyā) indeed.'24 The commentators on Yājñ.I.71 stress that this does not mean that women are without fault (Mit.); nor that their sins are less serious than those of a man (Bal.); it merely explains why the penalties incurred by women are lighter (Mit., Bal.). But it is a powerful śloka, often called to the defence of women: by Rāghavānanda to enlarge upon Manu's dictum that a woman's mouth is always pure (Manu V.130); by Viśvarūpa to show that, unlike men, women, being pure in body, speech and mind, are free from sin;25 by Apararka in praise of women (Dh.kośa I.ii.1086). In Sm.C.I.p.79, however, the śloka is

^{23.} somah prathamo vivide gandharvo vivida uttarah / trtīyo agnis te patis turīyas te manusyajāh // R.V.X.85.40. Cf. Pār.gr.I.4.16-17.
24. somah saucam dadau tāsām gandharvas tu subhām giram / pāvakas

^{24.} somah saucam dadau tāsām gandharvas tu subham giram / pavakas sarvamedhyatvam medhyā vai yosito hy atah // Sdhp.21v.8-9 (Manu etc.) < Yājñ.I.71 (dadav āsām; ca for tu). Cf. Baudh.II.2.4.5; Vas.XXVIII.5-6.

^{25.} yasmāt somādibhir āsām śaucam manovākkāyalakṣaṇam dattam, tasmān nirdoṣā evaitāḥ / puṃsām eva niyogakartṛṇām doṣa ity abhiprāyaḥ // Dh.kośa I.ii.1086 (Viśvarūpa's comm. on Yājū.I.71).

declared to be 'only in praise of women' (praśamsāmātram), meaning that the allusions to ritual purity (sarvayajñārhatvam) are purely rhetorical (cf. Br.Sam.73.7 for a similar verse).

This important śloka is often adduced as evidence for another quite different issue, that of the early marriage of girls (see my discussion of $nagnik\bar{a}$ in section IIA, pp.86-8; cf. Thieme 1971). As the symbolism stands, however, it seems obvious that a girl was expected to marry her human bridegroom after receiving the signs and gifts of the three gods; that is, after her breasts had developed and she had begun to menstruate. But the obvious is repeatedly ignored. According to the Jyotirnibandha, for example, two years should be allowed for each deity, and therefore a girl should not marry until she is six years old (Vidyāmava 1974). Similarly, Samvārta 67 concludes that a girl should be safely married off before she develops any of the three signs of femaleness already described as indications of her divine marriages (see Samvarta 64, cited above); preferably at the age of eight.²⁶ ilthough such interpretations are clearly distortions of the text, it is evident that something very like them is accepted by Tryambaka. For if he acknowledged the real import of the Rgvedic verse he quotes (and thus the need for girls to marry after menstruation), then he would not feel the need to defend rtukāladharma with such vigour (see section IV, pp.287-8). For a detailed analysis of R.V.X.85 in its Rgvedic context, including a useful discussion of these three celestial 'husbands' or 'guardians' of the bride, see Menski 1984:II, §3.1, pp. 219-83.

Tryambaka's second argument for the purity of women tackles the important question of menstruation. Far from being the mark of great sin, menstruation, according to his next quotation (also attributed to 'Manu, etc.'), is the mark of an all-encompassing purity unique to women. 'Women are incomparably pure; at no time are they defiled; for menstruation sweeps away their sins month after month.'27 In fact, this is the classic argument not for the

26. romakāle tu samprāpte somo bhunktetha kanyakām / rajo dṛṣṭvā tu gandharvāḥ kucau dṛṣṭvā tu pāvakaḥ // . . . tasmād vivāhayet kanyām yāvan na rtumatī bhavet / vivāho hy aṣṭavarṣāyāḥ kanyāyās tu praśasyate // Samvārta 64 and 67, quoted Sm.C.I.p.79.

27. striyah pavitram atulam naitā dusyanti karhicit / māsi māsi rajo hy āsām duritāny apakarṣati // Sdhp.21v.9-10 (Manu etc.) < Baudh.II.2.4.4.; Vas.XXVIII.4. Cf. Vas.V.5; Yājň.I.72; Br.Sam.73.9.

purity of women per se but for the proper treatment of women who have become 'defiled' by contact with other men (e.g. Baudhāyanavivaranam, Dh.kośa I.ii.1085). Vas.XXVIII.2-3 includes in this category women who have been raped or carried off by thieves, as well as those who are merely bad-tempered or who have left home. In a śloka recalling the story of Indra's brahminicide, Manu V.108 asserts that menstruation purifies women of impure thoughts (glossed by Medh. as 'thinking about other men').28 Early dharmasāstra writers took a similar view of a wife's adultery, ruling that she should be abandoned only if she continued to go astray (cf. Par. Sm.X.34), or if she conceived (cf. Yājñ.I.72; garbhena dusyate kanyā, Mbh.XIII.36.17). Some writers, like Aparārka, insist that such lenient passages refer only to 'mental' rather than physical adultery (etac ca mānase vyabhicāre; Apar. on Yājñ. 1.72). This point of view makes progeny not sexual fidelity its main concern. 'Physical' adultery is doubly reprehensible for it may both deprive a man of the son he needs for religious observances and lead to confusion of class (varnasamkara; Manu VIII.353).

Notwithstanding his insistence here on the innate purity of women, Tryambaka belongs to the sterner school of thought. Although he does not deal specifically with adultery, he has included many of the familiar ślokas on the subject in his section on rtukāladharma (section IV, pp.287-8). (Chief among these is the pronouncement that the wife who 'offends against' (langhayet) her husband should be devoured by dogs in a public place (Sdhp.38r. 2-3 (Manu VIII.371). Similarly, in his section on dying with one's husband (sahagamanavidhi), Tryambaka embarks on a lengthy discussion of whether or not sahagamana may be regarded as a prāyaścitta or rite of atonement for women who have behaved badly (even in a non-sexual sense). He concludes that there is no such prāyaścitta for women; that there is therefore no escaping the penalties awaiting such a woman in hell; and thus that women would be well-advised to behave (see section IV, pp.295-7). In view of these two quite separate judgements, it is hard to see what power of purity other than the symbolic might be conferred by the menstrual flow of women. Tryambaka's concern, however, is not to present a coherent view of how women fit into the cosmic scheme

^{28.} mṛttoyaiḥ śudhyate śodhyam nadī vegena śudhyati / rajasā strī manodustā saṃnyāsena dvijottamaḥ // Manu V.108.

of things, but to persuade women to conform. Hence his problem: he must show on the one hand that women are in dire need of religious instruction, and on the other that they have not fallen too low to appreciate and apply it.

Having established a woman's peculiar claim to purity, Tryambaka must also demonstrate that she is inherently and uniquely blessed (see note 19). Such a view is clearly not in line with orthodox beliefs about karma and sexual difference. If birth as a woman is the result of bad karma, and birth as a (twice-born) man that of good karma, in what sense can one argue that the former is more fortunate than the latter? It would be like saying that being born a śūdra, although strictly speaking the penalty for bad karma in a previous life, is in fact a greater blessing than birth as a dvija. This seems especially unlikely with regard to brahmins who by the mere fact of their birth are to be honoured by the gods (Manu XI.84); who own everything by virtue of their innate superiority (Manu I.100); who are gods visible here on earth, maintaining both the universe and the gods in heaven (Vis.Sm.XIX.20-2); who are the highest beings in the whole world (Mbh.XII.56.22); and so on.

But this is precisely what Tryambaka claims. He draws his evidence from a passage in the sixth book of the Visnupurāna. Since the quotation he gives is both incomplete and out of context, it will be useful to present a fuller version of the story here. Book V of the Visnupurāna ends with the destruction of the Yādavas. Book VI describes the dissolution of the universe and the onset of the kali age in which 'four-footed virtue' is destroyed (dharmas catuspād, VI.1.8; cf. also Kūrm.P.I.27.20; Manu 1.81-2 and Kull.; vrso hi bhagavān dharmah, Manu VIII.16). Chapter 1 describes the degeneration of all things in the kali age: the rules of varna and āśrama are no longer observed (Vis.P.VI.1.10); people take what texts they choose as scripture, worship whatever gods they please (Vis.P.1.14), decide for themselves what is right (Vis.P.VI.1.15); men of all levels consider themselves equal to brahmins (Vis.P.VI.1. 23); women are fickle, short, greedy, disobedient, selfish, immoral, and so on and so forth (lolupā hrasvadehās ca bahvannādanatatparāh...; Vis.P.VI.1.28-31). According to another description of the kali age, women will have too many children (bahuprajāh), be short of stature (hrasvadehāh), cast off all morals (śīlācāravivarjitāh), have intercourse through the mouth (mukhebhagāh), bristle with hair (keśaśūlāh), and fornicate with slaves and even animals (Mbh. III.186.35-6, 55; cf. Kürm.P.I.28.140). Perhaps as an antidote to

this, chapter 2 of the *Viṣṇupurāṇa* recounts in the form of a story the few redeeming properties of this degenerate age (cf. Br.P.229. 15-36; PVK V.ii.928-30; Wilhelm 1982:1-17).

The story runs as follows. Some sages were unable to agree in which of the four ages the least merit accrued the greatest reward, and by whom that reward was most easily obtained. They went to Veda-Vyāsa, found him in the midst of his ablutions, and waited. Three times, Vyāsa immersed himself. As he rose the first time, he pronounced the kali age excellent;29 as he rose the second time, he congratulated the śūdra on being blessed; 30 and as he rose the third time, he exclaimed that no one was more blessed than women. But once again, it is a back-handed compliment that praises someone or something in the company of other people or things not normally praised. His bathing ritual over, the sages asked him to explain these apparently extraordinary pronouncements. Vyāsa's answer is characteristic of the puranic ideal. The kali age is the best in that it is the easiest age in which to achieve religious merit: what in the kṛta age takes ten years of tapas, brahmacarya and japa may be achieved in the kali age in one day and night; the results obtained by meditation in the krta age, by sacrifice in the treta age, by worship in the dvāpara age, may be attained in the kali age merely by reciting the name of Visnu (Vis.P.VI.2.15-17). The śūdra is blessed because none of the restrictions on the dvija (i.e. years of study and selfdenial, costly sacrifices, strict rules governing food, etc.), apply to him; he has only to serve the twice-born to obtain his reward (Vis.P.VI.2.22-3). The case for women is much the same.

Tryambaka quotes only the parts of this story that refer to women. The somewhat mutilated passage reads as follows. 'The great sage immersed himself, rose up once more and said: "Women are supremely blessed (sādhudhanyā[h]). Who is more blessed than them?"'31 Tryambaka explains that 'when they heard Vyāsa's words, the sages asked him what he meant and Vyāsa replied '32 The quotation continues with the relevant parts of Vyāsa's answer. 'Since, O twice-born men, a woman who is of benefit to her hus-

^{29.} vyāsah sādhuh kalih sādhur ity eva sṛṇvatām tatah // Viṣ.P.VI.2.6b. 30. utthāya sādhu sādhv iti sūdra dhanyāsi cābravīt // Viṣ.P.VI.2.7b.

^{31.} nimagnas ca samutthāya punah prāha mahāmunih / yoṣitah sādhu-dhanyās tās tābhyo dhanyataro 'sti kaḥ // Sdhp.22r.1-2 (Viṣ.P.) < Viṣ.P.VI.2.8 (sa nimagnah for nimagnas ca).

^{32.} iti vyāsavacanam śrutvā ko 'syārtha iti prastīrn munīn prati vyāsah // Sdhp.22r. 2-3 (PT amends prastīrn to prstavato).

band by serving him in thought, word and deed, will come to dwell in the same heaven as he does³³—that is, (she can attain) those same (worlds) as a man (can but) without enormous effort—that is why I said the third time about women that they are blessed.'³⁴ Vyāsa concludes the episode: 'Dharma is fulfilled in the *kali* age with very little effort³⁵ (. . . and) by women without effort merely by serving their husbands. And that is why, the third time, I considered these (three; i.e. the *kali* age, the śūdra and women) to be most blessed (*dhanyataram*).'³⁶

Tryambaka's purpose here is clear. He wishes to demonstrate first, that women are not beyond religious instruction; secondly. that they are to be envied for the ease and efficacy of the religious duty allotted to them. But if we examine this evidence in its puranic context, there is a serious contradiction here. For the puranas introduced several striking changes into the religious ideals and practices of the post-Vedic era. The notion that the highest rewards can be attained by the least effort is typical. But if, as Vyāsa declares, repeating the name of Visnu has replaced the tapas, brahmacarya and so on of the dvija, why has it not also replaced the dvijašuśrūsanam of the śūdra and the patiśuśrūsanam of women? Bhakti, if it is allowed at all, supersedes the obligations of both svadharma and sanātanadharma. By bhakti, Harikeśa sidesteps the svadharma of the yaksa (cf. Matsy.P.180.5ff.; Sk.P.IV.32.I-175); Sukesin that of the rāksasa. Vām.P.11-16 describes how the latter, a king of demons (11.7), sought advice from holy sages regarding the duties specific to each class of beings (11.14-27). He is told of the

^{33.} yā strī susrūṣaṇād bhartuḥ karmaṇā manasā girā / taddhitā samavāpnoti tatsālokyaṃ yato dvijāḥ// Sdhp.22r.3-4 (Viṣ.P.)<Viṣ.P.VI.2.28 (yoṣit susrūṣ-aṇaṃ bhartuḥ karmaṇā manasā girā/ kurvatī samavāpnoti tatsālokyaṃ yato dvijāḥ//).

^{34.} nātiklesena mahatā tān eva puruso yathā / tṛtīyam vyāhṛtam tena mayā sādhv iti yoṣitām // Sdhp.22r.4-5 (Vis.P.)</br>

^{35.} svalpenaiva prayatnena dharmah sidhyati vai kalau (Vis.P.VI.2.34a). This and the next two half-ślokas (concerning the kali age in general and śūdras in particular; vital to the sense of the original passage) are omitted in Sdhp..

^{36.} tathā strībhir anāyāsāt patišuśrūsayaiva hi/ tatas trtīyam apy etan mama dhanyataram mata[m]// Sdhp.22r.5-6 (Vis.P.) < Vis.P.VI.2.35b,36a (trtayam for trtīyam, dhanyatamam for dhanyataram).

dharma prescribed for daityas (11.16) and rākṣasas (11.26). After a discourse on the actions leading to hell (remarkably similar to the dharma of demons, 12.1–43), the sages list the 'ten-limbed' sanātana-dharma prescribed for all (14.1). Sukesin returns to his city of demons and commands them all to practise sanātanadharma (16.1–4) and bhakti (16.19). Angered by the demons' deviation from their ordained svadharma (16.34–7), Sūrya destroys their city (16.38–9). Sukesin is saved by the intervention of Siva, who thus effectively upholds bhakti against svadharma. But despite his purāṇic quotations, Tryambaka is not of the purāṇic mould. His rigid codification of strīdharma places him firmly in the orthodox post-Vedic age. He uses Vyāsa's pronouncements solely to prove that women are not beyond redemption; the implications of the comments on the kali age simply do not apply.

For Tryambaka, patisusrūṣaṇam is not only the most effective religious observance for women; it is the only one. His section on things to be avoided makes this abundantly clear. Not only may a woman not worship any god other than her husband, but she is also forbidden to engage in any religious observance other than devotion to him. Here Tryambaka declares only that women are blessed with the easiest path to heaven; there he intones that any alternative or additional observance will 'cause them to fall' (see section IV, pp.274-6, note 7). Such pronouncements dismiss the claims of bhakti altogether: women must conform to the functions prescribed. For the moment, however, the emphasis is on the unique blessing that a female birth confers. In view of this, Tryambaka concludes that 'it is indeed reasonable (to suppose) that there is an interest (on the part of women) both in receiving instruction in their religious duties and in performing them.'37

Tryambaka's insistence on the blessings of being born a woman recalls the story of king Bhangāśvana, whose success and happiness so irritates Indra that the god transforms him into a woman (Mbh. III.12). Leaving his family and his kingdom, the female Bhangāśvana retires to the forest where she produces another family with an ascetic living there. Indra causes the two sets of children to quarrel

^{37.} iti dharmānām śravaņe tadācarane ca pravṛttir yuktaiva // Sdhp.22r.8. Unlike PT, I have followed the scribe's inversion marks and restored the intended order to Sdhp.22r.7-8 (cf. note 41), incl. the marginal insertion of iti at the beginning.

and kill each other. The carnage complete, he gives Bhaigāśvana the opportunity of reviving one set of children, Bhangasvana chooses the children she has produced as a woman on the grounds that the love of a woman is greater than that of a man (Mbh.XIII 12.42). When Indra then offers to transform her back into a man. Bhangāśvana refuses. She prefers to remain in her female form because she has found that women always experience greater pleasure in sexual intercourse than men (Mbh.XIII.12.47).38 This is an interesting story in the context of stridharma for it makes a virtue of the much-maligned sexuality of women. For example, the usual assertions are that the sexual drive is stronger and more destructive in women (e.g. Mbh.XIII.20.59-60, 64-7); that sex, the cause of death in the world, is the direct result of the passionate nature of women (e.g. Mark.P.49.28-9); that the origin of evil itself is directly linked to the sexual passion of women (e.g. Mbh.XIII.40. 5-12). Even Tryambaka's argument that women are uniquely blessed does not extend to a defence of female sexuality. For, as we have seen, he does not take issue with Manu's statement that women are innately promiscuous and oversexed (see note 9). For Tryambaka's purposes at this point, the story of Bhangāśvana would be counterproductive.

Tryambaka's third and final argument in support of his thesis that women can benefit from religious instruction is simply that even bad people can improve. He takes as his scriptural proof the famous (but here unattributed) saying that 'good conduct destroys inauspicious mark(s)'.³⁹ The complete śloka, taken from Manu's section on rules for the snātaka, maintains that good conduct makes all things possible—long life, the desired offspring, inexhaustible wealth—thereby annihilating the inauspicious potential (alakṣ-aṇam) of one's nature or circumstance.⁴⁰ Sarvajñanārāyaṇa and Rāmacandra gloss alakṣaṇam as alakṣmīm ('misfortune'); Rāgha-vānanda as ninditarogaparadārādisevanam ('culpable diseases and a fondness for the wives of other men', i.e. both physical and behavioural defects; cf. Manu XI.48-54). Such defects cause those

^{38.} striyās tv abhyadhikah sneho na tathā purusasya vai // Mbh.XIII.12.42a. striyāh purusasamyoge prītir abhyadhikā sadā // Mbh.XIII.12.47b.

^{39.} ācāro hanty alakṣaṇam // Sdhp.22r.7 < Manu IV.156; Vas.VI.8; Vis.Sm.LXXI.91 (Adyar edn., Mysore MS).

^{40.} ācārāl labhate hy āyur ācārād īpsitāh prajāh / ācārād dhanam akṣayyam ācāro hanty alakṣaṇam // Manu IV.156.

who have them to be despised by good people (Manu XI.53); if they are not expiated in this life, one is reborn with 'culpable characteristics' (ninditair laksanair; Manu XI.54). However, according to Manu, good conduct produces good effects even if one lacks all auspicious marks (sarvalaksanahīno 'pi; Manu IV.158), even — to return to the context of strīdharma — if one has the misfortune to be born a woman. Tryambaka's version of all this runs as follows. 'Because of the saying that "good conduct destroys inauspicious mark(s)", it is indeed possible (for women) by virtue of their good conduct (i.e. as a result of religious instruction) to give up the (inherent) faults (traditionally and rightly) ascribed to them.'41

This is the orthodox view of svadharma. In the story of the worm that makes its way back up the scale of births (kītopākhyānam; Mbh. XIII.118-20), the moral is that good conduct produces auspicious births, evil conduct evil births. And good conduct is defined as that appropriate to one's birth (Mbh.XIII.120.9). Thus a ksatriya who performs his duty well (vrttaślāghī, i.e. who is praised for conduct appropriate to his station; Mbh.XIII.119.23) becomes a brahmin. For women, who cannot purify themselves by mantras or worship other gods, strīdharma is the only hope. If they fulfil the requirements prescribed, they may be rewarded by being reborn as men, perhaps even as dvija men blessed with the right to recite mantras. Granted this means of purification, they may then aspire to better and better births. In the meantime, however, strīdharma must be their only goal.

Tryambaka's contribution to the debate on strīsvabhāva is not to be found in any one point, but rather in his juxtaposition of negative and positive statements about women in an attempt to make sense of the inherent contradictions. The more usual approach is to keep the negative and positive quite separate, and not to admit of a contradiction at all. Hence we find eulogies of exemplary individuals or the ideal roles of wife and mother in one place, and denunciations of wicked individuals or the wickedness of women in general some-

where else.

Manu, for example, tells us that one's daughter is the highest object of one's affection (Manu IV.185, among the rules for snātakas); that one's sister and aunts deserve the same respect as one's

^{41.} nirūpitadosānām tu ācāro hanty alaksaņam iti vacanāt sadācāreņa nivrttih sambhavati // iti // Sdhp.2r.7-8. Cf. note 37.

mother (Manu II.133, among the rules for students); that one owes one's mother-in-law the respect due to the guru's wife (Manu II.131; cf. Manu IV.183); that one's mother is a thousand times more venerable than one's father, a hundred thousand times more so than an ācārya (Manu II.145; cf. Manu II.227). Elsewhere, however, he warns that even a learned man should take care when in the company of a woman, even his own mother, sister or daughter, for it is the nature of women to seduce men (Manu II.213-15; cf. Manu IX.14-17). As Tryambaka's examples show, the Rāmāyana is dotted with derogatory references to women and yet exorbitant praise of such as Sītā (see notes 11-18). In the Mahābhārata, Draupadi is praised for her management of husbands and household (Mbh.1II.222-4; cf. section IV, pp.280-1); and celebrated as the 'salvation of the sons of Pandu' after she has rescued her husbands from the consequences of the ill-fated dice-game (Mbh. 11.64.2). Kuntī is honoured as the ideal long-suffering mother (e.g. Mbh.I.138.15-19), Gändhäri as the embodiment of intelligence and justice (e.g. Mbh.II.66.28ff.), Sulabhā for her wisdom (Mbh. XIII.308), and so on. Yet when the nature of women comes under discussion - as, for example, in the strīsvabhāvakathanam recounted to Yudhisthira by Bhīsma (Mbh.XIII.38) - then women are the root of all evils, nothing is more wicked than women.42 Occasionally, positive and negative are juxtaposed with somewhat startling effect, as when a naga's wife, already described as obedient, dutiful and virtuous, is asked if she has neglected her duties 'due to being weakened by the imperfect understanding natural to women' (akrtarthena strībuddhyā mārdavīkrta; Mbh.XII.347.2-4). But even then, the implicit contradiction is neither stressed nor explained.

At the heart of this confusion is a barely examined but radical distinction between the wicked nature of women (strīsvabhāva) and the virtuous behaviour of wives (strīdharma). This distinction is never explicitly made in any rulings on strī, not even in a text like the Strīdharmapaddhati. But the stress on wifely occupations and duties, and the total lack of interest in the woman except as wife (e.g. in her childhood, her education, the occupations open to her before marriage, etc.) clearly imply that all notions of woman

^{42.} striyo hi mūlam dosānām // Mbh.XIII.38.1b,12b. na strībhyah kimcid anyad vai pāpīyastaram asti vai // Mbh.XIII.38.12a. Cf. notes 4,6,7.

should be submerged in the ideal of 'wife'. This is true even when the husband is away (see section IV, p.291), or has died (see section IV, pp.291–8, 298–304). Thus any part of 'woman' that diverges from the ideal 'wife' is due to her wicked nature and to be condemned. This makes sense of such examples as that of the nāga who praises his dutiful wife yet condemns her woman's nature. It also explains why the two topics are usually treated separately; why the strīsvabhāvakathanam is a tirade of abuse (Mbh.XIII.38) while the discourses on the duties of women present models of patience and virtue (e.g. Mbh.XIII.124, 134). If the two can be opposed, conflict and argument are clearly possible. But can they logically be opposed?

In its widest, cosmic sense, dharma is the law of the universe, the fundamental order sustaining the world, inherent in the very nature of things. Both descriptive and prescriptive, it indicates both what is and what ought to be, the real and the ideal. In the realm of individual action, therefore, it embraces both what one does and what one ought to do. The kṣatriya, for example, should and does fight; the vaiśya should and does engage in business. Each individual's action, defined by birth and circumstance, is his duty; it was ordained to be so and is therefore right. At this level, there is no conflict: individual dharma is simply the reflection of cosmic law.

But two areas of conflict emerge in relation to the dharma of women: the potential clash between strīdharma and sanātanadharma (see section V, pp.309-12); and a confusion within the notion of svadharma itself. In the case of men, svadharma is usually taken to mean the specific duties laid down by vama and āśrama. According to Medhātithi and Kullūka (on Manu II.25), svadharma is of five kinds: that of varna; that of āśrama; that of varna and āśrama combined; that arising from a particular cause or occasion (naimittikadharma; such as that appropriate for the purification of something, dravyaśuddhyādi, Medh.; or the rules of expiation, prāyaścittavidhi, Kull.); and that inherent in having a particular quality or characteristic (gunadharma). According to Kullūka, gunadharma is that which accrues because of a quality; for example, the quality of being a king (i.e. one responsible for his subjects) gives rise to the protection of those subjects.⁴³ But there is surely no

^{43.} yo gunena pravarteta gunadharmah sa ucyate/yathā mūrdhābhişiktasya prajānām paripālanam// Kull. on Manu II.25.

conflict here. For the inherent nature of an individual, his svabhāva, is the source of his dharma, not a temptation away from it. Thus the śūdra, even if freed by his master, is not released from servitude because this is innate in him⁴⁴ and was ordained (cf. Manu VIII. 413). The śūdra's servile nature impels him to serve; the king's regal nature impels him to rule, fight and protect. As the Bhagavadgītā declares, a man must act according to his 'nature' (prakṛti), however wise he is.⁴⁵ His svabhāva is thus both his character and his duty, both what is and what is right.

So why is this not true of women? Why is it consistently assumed that a woman's svabhāva will entice her away from her duty instead of reinforcing or defining it? In what sense can the svabhāva of women alone be in opposition to their svadharma, and therefore

bad?

Perhaps the treatment of kings is the nearest parallel to that of women. Manu exhorts the king to control his senses at all times (Manu VII.44), in particular to beware of the ten evil tendencies that arise from the love of pleasure (kama) and the eight that arise from anger (krodha). The former (kāma) covers hunting (mrgayā), gambling (aksa), sleeping in the day (divāsvapna), censure (parivāda), women (striyah), drunkenness (mada), the three kinds of music (tauryatrika; i.e. song, dance and instrumental music), and frivolous or fruitless travel (vrthātyā; Manu VII.45,47). The denunciation of women here is in fact a warning against excessive sexual indulgence and, perhaps, the snares of domestic life. This is a typical example of how women are treated: not as individuals, but as symbols of all that is considered bad about sex and the family. The latter (krodha) covers scandal-mongering (paiśunya), violence (sāhasa), treachery (droha), envy (īrṣyā), slander (asūyā), seizure of property (arthadūṣaṇa), and verbal and physical assault (vāk-, dandapārusya; Manu VII.48). Out of these, Manu isolates the seven worst — drunkenness, gambling, women and hunting (due to kāma); physical and verbal assault, and the unlawful seizure of property (due to krodha) and describes them as 'prevalent everywhere'. 46 Thus, in the Maha-

^{44.} na svāminā nisrsto 'pi śūdro dāsyād vimucyate / nisargajam hi tat tasyā kas tasmāt tad apohati // Manu VIII.414.

^{45.} sadršam cestate svasyāh prakrter jñānavān api / prakrtim yānti bhūtāni nigrahah kim karisyati // Gītā III.33.

^{46.} sarvatraivānusanginah (Manu VII.52), glossed by Kull. as sarvasmini eva rājamandale prāyenāvasthitasya, 'generally established in the entourage of every king'. Cf. Mit. on Yājā.I.309-11.

bhārata, Vikarņa seems to be excusing Yudhisthira when he says that gambling is one of the four vices (vyasanāni) of kings (Mbh.II. 61.20). Similarly, Carstairs describes how, in his village in Rajasthan, the Rajputs hold riotous parties at which daru is drunk 'till they become senseless' and summonses are sent to the 'drummergirls'. Such behaviour, clearly a lapse of self-restraint, is seen as intrinsic to the svabhāva of their class: as one Rajput confesses, 'That is what Rajputs are like . . . uneducated, uncivilised, lusty men' (Carstairs 1971:109–10).

But the parallel with women is not exact. For Manu is merely stating the dangers inherent in the powers of kingship, and thus the pitfalls to be avoided by the conscientious king. Despite the many scriptural examples of such kingly behaviour (parakrti, see note 53), neither Manu nor Kautilya ever state that kings are 'by nature' drunkards, gamblers, lechers, abusers of people and property, and so on. In Kaut. I. 6.1-12, a sixfold classification of evil tendencies (lit. arisadvarga; 'enemies') that a king should cast out is illustrated by twelve examples (two of each), drawn largely from the Mahābhārata and the purānas. In each case, the king and his kingdom perish; in none of them is any generalization made about the inherent nature of kings. The problems awaiting the king are those inherent in his function; hence the warnings. Those awaiting women are inherent in their nature; hence the condemnation. However, the line between the dangers inherent in a function and the inherent characteristics of one who holds that function is far from clear, even in the case of kings.

The problem occurs when one's nature somehow fails to coincide with one's function. Normally, there is no problem. Certainly, dharmaśāstra does not admit of one. But if we look beyond the codification of dharmaśāstra to the vaguer realms of purāṇic mythology, the problem is there. For example, a cruel and devious nature is appropriate in the demon whose function is to obstruct the gods. As O'Flaherty explains, this is at first a purely structural opposition between the gods and the demons. Gods and demons are 'separate but equal': each does his own job; the gods encourage sacrifice, the demons destroy it. Later literature develops the moral emphasis: it is still true that the demons are only doing their job, but they are evil nonetheless (O'Flaherty 1976:64-5). Similarly, promiscuity is acceptable in the apsaras whose function is to seduce both men and gods. Thus Menakā, who is described as 'distinguished in the divine qualities of the apsaras' (guṇair divyair apsarasām . . .

viśisyase), is sent by Indra to seduce Viśvāmitra away from his ascetic activities (Mbh.I.65.20ff.). When Viśvāmitra, falling for her charms, lusts after her, the apsaras is 'blamelessly willing' (sa cāpy aicchad aninditā; Mbh.I.66.7). For nature is appropriate to function; and both, being the result of karma, are ordained. Hence the whole of creation—including yakṣa, rākṣasa, apsaras and asura—is ordained to be as it is, each according to his or her karma (yathā-karma: Manu I.37,41).

But what if the demon wants to be good; for example, the demon king Bali who rules virtuously in hell (Vām.P.49.1-14); or Prahlāda, the pious demon who respects brahmins (Mbh.XII.124.19-63)? Both must be stopped. What if the apsaras aspires to the role of wife; for example, Urvasī who becomes for a while the wife of Pururavas (R.V.X.95)? Such is the anomalous position of women. A demonic and promiscuous nature is ascribed as their lot due to the karma that produces a female birth (e.g. notes 6,9); yet they must suppress it all in favour of their function as wives. But whereas the (ordinary) demon or apsaras is faced with an ethical conflictordained evil (i.e. svadharma, including svabhāva) versus aspiration to goodness (sanātanadharma) - women are caught in a trap caused entirely by karma. Their position is more akin to that of the halfbreed demon priest (cf. O'Flaherty 1976:137ff.). For both Viśvarūpa (see Mbh.XII.329.17-30; Bhāg.P.VI.7.2-40, etc.) and Vrtra (see Sk.P.VI.269.16-60), a demonic svabhāva (their maternal heritage) is in direct opposition to the svadharma of brahmin priest (their paternal heritage). Quite apart from the fact that such unions are in accordance with the principles of anuloma marriage (cf.PVK.II. 1.52), it is no surprise - in view of the orthodox attitude towards women—to find that in each case the demon priest is born of a demon mother and a brahmin father: inheriting demonic qualities from one's mother fits. This pattern is reinforced by the widespread notion that a child's heart is born of its mother (see section IV, pp. 289-90). Conflict is inevitable; both Viśvarūpa and Vrtra are doomed. No wonder that Śrī, goddess of fortune and model for the Hindu wife (see section IIA, pp.60-3) remarks that no one knows if she is demonic or divine, and she is called 'intolerable' (duhsahā; Mbh.XII.218.7-8). Theoretically, at least, her position is indeed intolerable. Hence the need for Tryambaka to address himself to the problem.

But how might such a problem be resolved? It seems that there is

a basic binary division of opinion: those who dispute that women are wicked, whether on rationalistic or apologetic grounds; and those who, while allowing exceptions at the level of individual or class, insist that they are.

Of the two ways of disputing the thesis that women are wicked, perhaps the least popular is the rationalistic approach. This is pursued, for example, by Varāhamihira in his classical work on omens, 47 the Brhatsamhitā, written in the sixth century A.D. In his section in praise of women (strīpraśamsā), Varāhamihira rejects the traditional view of the inherent sinfulness of women on the grounds that it is not true. First, he argues that the three religious goals of man - dharma, artha and kāma - all depend on women. For women provide men with sons; they are the incarnation of Laksmi, goddess of prosperity, in the home (cf. section II A, pp.59-64); and they are the source of sexual pleasure. 48 Next, he condemns those men who, having chosen the ascetic (vairāgya) path for themselves, seek to persuade others to follow them by denigrating women and ignoring their good qualities. 49 Finally, he asks what faults normally attributed to women are not committed - and more brazenly by men (Br.Sam.74.6). For example, marital fidelity is the duty of both husband and wife, infidelity equally sinful in either case; since women are faithful more often than their husbands are, it follows that women are superior (Br.Sam.74.12). Verse 14 adds that men are faithful out of impotence (asaktyā50), women by their strength of will (dhairyena). Similarly, a man utters endearments to his wife in private but forgets her when she dies; but when the man dies, his wife is so filled with gratitude for their life together that she embraces his corpse upon the fire (Br.Sam.74.16). Varāhamihira con-

47. Traditionally, *jyotihšāstra* is divided into three major subjects or *skandhas: samhitā* (omens or divination), *ganita* (astronomy) and *horā* (astrology). For a further classification of the areas covered by *jyotihšāstra*, see Pingree 1981.

48. tadartham dharmārthau sutaviṣayasaukhyāni ca tato / grhe lakṣmyo mānyāḥ satatam abalā mānavibhavaiḥ // Br.Sam.74.4c-d. For the joys of sex, enjoyed by every being from Brahmā to worms, see Br.Sam.74.18-20.

40. ye 'py anganānām pravadanti dosān vairāgyamārgena gunān vihāya / te durjanā me manaso vitarkah sadbhāvavākyāni na tāni tesām // Br.Sam.74.5.

50. I have followed the reading given in the Bangalore and Calcutta edns. (tatrāśaktyā, 74.14) rather than that in the Benares edn. (tatra śaktyā, 73.14).

cludes that the abuse heaped on women is the measure not of the wickedness of women but of the audacity of wicked men (dhārṣṭyam asādhūnām). They are like thieves who, in the very act of stealing (muṣṇatām iva caurāṇām), jabber 'Stop thief!' to put the blame elsewhere.⁵¹

Yudhisthira displays an equally rational attitude when he asks Bhīsma to explain what is meant by the joint practice of religious duties (sahadharma) by husband and wife after marriage (Mbh.XIII. 19.1). Sahadharma is said to lead to heaven but, as Yudhisthira points out, husband and wife usually die at different times (Mbh. XIII.19.3b-4). Furthermore, the heaven or hell one goes to depends on the actions of each separate individual (Mbh.XIII.19.5). Even more to the point, both the rsis and the Veda declare women to be wicked (anrtah), so how can there be joint practice of dharma when the man is good and his wife is bad (Mbh.XIII.19.6-7)? Unfortunately, this eminently reasonable question does not elicit the answer it deserves. Bhīsma embarks instead on the lengthy story of Astāvakra and the venerable female ascetic52 to whom he is sent in preparation for his marriage. Despite her advanced age, the ascetic repeatedly attempts to seduce him, assuring him all the while that for women there is no greater delight and no more destructive urge than sex (Mbh.XIII.20.59-60, 64-7); that even very old women are consumed by sexual passion (Mbh.XIII.22.4-5); that (a woman's) sexual desire can never be overcome in all the three worlds (Mbh.XIII.22.9). At last, duly enlightened as to the true nature of women - including the evident fact that even after initiation and the taking of ascetic vows, even in extreme old age, a woman cannot overcome her lustful nature — Astāvakra returns to marry his bride. Like Yudhisthira, we have forgotten the question. The rational approach is once more engulfed by prejudice.

The apologetic approach is taken by the exponents of mīmāmsā. The original concern of this school was the detailed investigation of dharma, primarily as enjoined in Vedic texts but extended to include dharmaśāstra too (see section I, p.41). For example, Jai.

^{51.} aho dhārṣṭyam asādhūnām ninditām anaghāḥ striyaḥ/ muṣṇatām iva caurānām tiṣṭha caure 'ti jalpatām// Br.Sam.74.15

^{52. . . .} tatra draksyasi vai striyam // tapasvinīm mahābhāgām vrddhām dīksām anusthitām // Mbh.XIII.19.23-4. As the story progresses, however, she is repeatedly referred to simply as 'woman' (strī).

1.3.1-2 rules that asabda (i.e. smrti) is authoritative in so far as it is based on śruti; Śabara that smṛti is both authoritative (pramānam smrtih; Sab. on Jai.I.3.2) and equal to the Veda (vedatulyā hi smrtih, Sab.on Jai.VI.2.2; cf. Kum.Ta.I.3, adhi. 1-3). This in turn rests on the premise, first outlined in the Jaiminīyasūtra (approximately second century B.C.), that the Veda is eternal, self-existent and authoritative. Vedic utterances — all of which are held to be eternally valid - are divided into three kinds. The initial division is twofold: mantra and brāhmaņa (Jai.II.1.32-3; Kum.Ta.II.1, adhi. 11). The latter (i.e. real meaning) subdivides into vidhi and arthavāda. Elsewhere, the Veda is divided into five parts: vidhi, arthavāda, mantra, nāmadheya and pratisedha (e.g. Arthas.p.3; cf. PVK V.ii. 1098, 1225). Mantras are technically valid but without any real meaning: the three samhitās (Rg-, Yajur- and Sāmaveda) are thus bracketed out as they do not need to be understood (cf. Kum.Ta.I.2, adhi.4). Ritual utterances consist of injunctions (vidhi) that must be taken literally (karmakānda); they refer to matters beyond our experience and so may not be questioned. Non-ritual utterances (glossed as arthavāda, exaggerated descriptions or explanations) must be understood in a non-literal sense (jñānakānda); they relate to matters within our experience and are therefore open to verification. If an arthavada statement is contradicted by experience, then - in theory - preference should be given to the latter. However, since by definition the Veda contains no false statements, the contradiction itself is deemed an illusion: when the correct interpretation is found, it will cease to appear. The classic example is the statement that 'the sacrificial post is the sun' (ādityo yupah, Śab. on Jai.I.4.12.23; Mīmāmsākośa II.p.909). The identity of post and sun is evidently false: it is therefore to be interpreted as a rhetorical device to glorify the post with a view to encouraging the appropriate sacrifice.

The interpretation laid on the repeated abuse of women is merely one more example of the kind of special pleading to which the exponents of $m\bar{n}m\bar{a}ms\bar{a}$ are driven by their need to find all Vedic utterances true. Arthavāda is further divided into four subgroups: praise (stuti), intended to flatter the recipient into correct behaviour; condemnation (nindā), intended to frighten him/her into abandoning evil behaviour; the actions of others (parakṛti), to point moral lessons; and the customs of a previous age (purākalpa), acceptable

then but not now.⁵³ The rhetoric of praise is well known, especially in the case of brahmins. For example, a brahmin's words are never untrue (Vis.Sm.19.22); whether he is learned or not, a brahmin is a great deity (Manu IX.315); whatever defects exist in a *vrata*, in *tapas*, or in sacrificial ritual, they all disappear when brahmins support them (Par.Sm.VI.52); and so on.

The mīmāmsā attitude to nindā is summed up by Śabara's maxim: condemnation (nindā) is not intended simply to condemn what is condemnable but to enjoin and praise its opposite. According to this view, therefore, Manu is not claiming that women are promiscuous, uncaring, vain and lazy (e.g. notes 9-10)—for all such statements may be falsified by experience—but that they should endeavour to be faithful, loving, modest and hard-working. It is, in effect, a rhetorical device for social control.

This is an attractive interpretation. Certainly, Manu himself declares that only one who investigates the pronouncements of the rsis (ārṣā) and the teachings on dharma by means of reasoning that is consistent with the system of the Veda (glossed by the commentators as the rules of mīmāmsā) can be said to understand dharma. 55 But, pace R.M.Das (e.g. 1962:12; where he claims that the nindā ruling makes it unnecessary to invoke different levels or periods of teaching to explain contradictory ślokas), the mīmāmsā ruling on nindā does not automatically dissolve the problem. For, if nindā were a routine method of exhortation, then women would not be singled out to receive it. Snātakas, for example, would not merely be told to avoid acquiring wealth through forbidden occupations (Manu IV. 15) or to avoid attachment to sensual pleasures (Manu IV.16); they would—as a purely rhetorical device—be condemned for having a natural tendency to put wealth before duty, or for being un-

^{53.} Mīmāmsāparibhāṣā pp.27-8 (cited PVK V.ii.1242); Vāy.P.59.134-7. For parakṛṭi and purākalpa, see Jai.VI.7.26,30; Kum.Ta.I.2, adhi.I, sū.7. For some examples of parakṛṭi, see Manu X.105-8; Medh. on Manu II.151 and X.105-8. Arthavāda may also be given a threefold classification: guṇavāda, and bhūtārthavāda or vidyamānavāda (Medh. on Manu II.227; Śab. on Jai.I.4.23; Arthas.p.26).

^{54.} na hi nindā nindyam ninditum prayujyate || kim tarhi | ninditād itarat prašamsitum | tatra na ninditasya pratisedho gamyate kin tv itarasya vidhih || Sab. on Jai.II.4.20. Cf. Kum.Ta.1.2, adhi.1, sū.7.

^{55.} ārsam dharmopadeśam ca vedaśāstrāvirodhinā/ yas tarkenānusandhatte sa dharmam veda netarah // Manu XII.106. Cf. Medh., Kull., Rāgh..

duly attached to the senses 'by nature'. The various rulings on brahmins, kṣatriyas and vaiśyas, or even students, hermits and ascetics, would include digressions on the 'natural dispositions' of the types involved, exhorting them to appropriate action by means of condemnation. But this is not the case. Even śūdras receive instructions or threats rather than direct condemnation. For example, they are told that they may not accumulate wealth (Manu X.129), that they may not hear, learn, recite or teach the Veda (Manu III.156, IV.99, X.127; Gaut.XII.4-6); but they are not actually described as being 'by nature' acquisitive or ambitious beyond their station. Only women are repeatedly instructed by means of direct condemnation. So selective an application of nindā suggests that it is in practice far more than a rhetorical device: it rests on prejudice.

Of the two main approaches supporting the thesis that women are wicked, the response of social psychology to prejudice can hardly be avoided. According to this kind of attitude, the 'good Jew' is merely the exception to an otherwise rigid antisemitism; the intelligent black merely the exception to an otherwise acknowledged racial inferiority. Neither individual constitutes a refutation of the prejudice concerning his class: the exception to it is marvelled at instead. In the realm of women, this is perhaps the majority view. All the examples that Tryambaka quotes from the Rāmāyaņa fall into this category. Kausalyā complains that, unlike the faithful and devoted Sītā, most women are inconstant (notes 11,12). Agastya heaps abuse on women in general before exonerating Sītā from blame (notes 13-15). He also compliments Sītā by comparing her behaviour to the wicked ways of other women (note 16). In the Mahābhārata, Bhīsma expounds this view. When Yudhisthira questions him concerning sahadharma, Bhīsma reverts to prejudice, declaring (in the words of the female ascetic) that women are obsessed with sex: only one in a thousand, or perhaps even one in hundreds of thousands, will be devoted to her husband, a pativratā (Mbh.XIII.20.65). It is this same prejudice that persuades the common man today that 'the exception proves the rule' in the incorrect sense that it 'establishes' that rule instead of 'testing' or refuting it.

A dramatic example of this viewpoint is found in Yaśaścandra's play entitled *Mudritakumudacandraprakarana*. The play is set in the court of Siddharāja Jayasimha, the great Cālukya king of northern Gujarat (A.D. 1094-1143). Act V presents a debate between the

leaders of the two rival sects of Jainism: Kumudacandra is the head of the Digambaras, Devasuri that of the Śvetāmbaras, while Siddharāja takes the chair. The issue under discussion is whether or not women can attain salvation. According to the Digambaras, they cannot; according to the Śvetāmbaras, they can. The latter view maintains that, while salvation is beyond the capacities of most women, it is within the reach of those few possessed of sattva (the quality of purity or goodness). Devasuri cites as evidence women from mythology (such as Sītā) and from the contemporary world (such as Mayaṇallā, the queen-mother, who ruled as regent for many years while Siddharāja was a boy). The discussion reveals the two opposing poles of prejudice: the reverence shown to a few individual idealized women (whether real or mythical), and the contempt shown to women in general (Mudritakumudacandraprakaraṇa V; cf. Sandesara 1953:362-3).

The second approach in support of the thesis that women are wicked also allows exceptions, but on the level of a class or type of woman rather than an individual. This view takes up the radicalif theoretically illogical—distinction between a woman's nature (strīsvabhāva) and her ordained function as wife (strīdharma), and pits one against the other. All fear and condemnation is directed at women as biological creatures, representatives of wild or untamed nature. Hence the pollution taboos surrounding the physical aspects of being female: menstruation, sexuality, childbirth. Hence the condemnation of female emotion and passion. All praise is directed at women as social entities, paragons of virtue in whom the biological is tamed and controlled. This tension between 'culture' and 'nature', between 'society' and 'the wild', is a familiar one to social anthropologists (e.g. E. Ardener 1975; Okely 1975). For any class, race or even nation outside the self-imposed barriers of a given group may be classified as 'the wild'; women, gypsies or the Japanese. Both fascinating and terrifying, women as women are condemned. But if they allow themselves to be controlled by their ordained function as wives, the condemnation reserved for women no longer applies.

This is evidently Tryambaka's own advice. If, by the appropriate behaviour, women transform themselves into devoted wives, then the inherent evil of their female natures—the 'inauspicious marks' (alaksanam) of a female birth—will be annulled (note 41). Tryambaka's treatise describes precisely how this miracle may be wrought.

IV. The Duties Common to (all) Women

(strīṇām sādhāraṇā dharmāḥ; Sdhp.22r.8-48v.6)

I shall present the remainder of Tryambaka's lengthy treatise in the form of a summary. This fourth section is divided into nine major topics, following Tryambaka's own rather loose subdivisions.

General rulings on behaviour (Sdhp.22r.9-25r.10)

Many of the quotations in this section have been quoted verbatim in earlier ones. For example, a woman should not expose her navel, ankles or breasts (Sdhp.22r.10-23v.1 = Sdhp.7r.5-6, section IIA, p.90, note 69). She should wear haridrā, collyrium, kunkuma, sindūra, a short-sleeved bodice and so on (Sdhp.22v.5-7 = Sdhp.7r.9-7v.1; section IIA, p.96, note 73). Without being told to do so, she should make ready all the items for worship (Sdhp.23r. 7-9 = Sdhp.12v.6-8, 4r.3-4; section IIC, p.179, note 35). She should eat her husband's left-overs, saying 'This is a great prasāda!' (\$dhp.23r.9-10 = Sdhp.18r.6-7; section IIC, p.222, note 108). She should never be alone, nor bathe naked (Sdhp.23v.7 = Sdhp.6v.8;

section IIA, p.84, note 63); and so on.

Others reinforce rulings already given and are discussed in the relevant sections. For example, she should never answer back even when scolded, nor show her anger or resentment even when beaten (Sdhp.23r.4-5; see section IID, pp.242-3). She should not go to festivals or public gatherings, on pilgrimages, or to such things as weddings or public shows (Sdhp.23v.2; see section IIB, p.137, note 38). If she wants to bathe in a sacred place, she should drink the water used to bathe her husband's feet, for her own husband is superior to even Sankara or Visnu (Sdhp.23v.10-24r.1; see section IIB, p.137, note 39). The good wife never loves another man whether he bribes her with fine things, begs her humbly, or seizes her by force; if he looks at her, she does not meet his eyes; if he smiles at her, she does not smile back; if he speaks to her, she does not answer (Sdhp.24.1-5; see section IIC, p.175); and so on.

In addition, we may note the following rulings that are representative of this section. According to a quotation attributed to Aśvalā-

vana, the qualities of the ideal wife include 'devoted service to her parents-in-law and, especially, to her husband; co-operation with her husband in religious matters (dharmakarve 'nukūlatvam). restraint in economic matters (arthakārye 'pi samyamam); bold confidence in sexual matters (prāgalhhyam kāmakāryesu; cf. section IID, pp.237-8); cleanliness of body, an auspicious presence. and a gentle tongue'. With regard to her husband, according to a quotation from the Rāmāvana, 'even if he is wicked, licentious or poverty-stricken, he is — for inherently noble women — the supreme deity (paramam daivatam),'2 and her guru.3 'When she sees him returning home from outside, therefore', according to a quotation attributed to the [Smrti-]samgraha, 'she should lovingly hurry to bring him water, food, betel, and a fan to cool him; then she should do such things as massage his feet and speak in an engaging or amorous way (cātuvacanaih) so as to drive away his cares.'4 The section ends with a well-known subhāsita (attributed here to the [Smrti-]samgraha). 'A father gives within limits, a brother and son as well; but a husband's giving is unlimited - what wife will not worship him?'5

Things to be avoided (varjanīyāh; Sdhp.25r.10-25v.6)

This is in fact an artificial subdivision. For although the quotations do indeed spell out the activities a good wife should avoid, the

1. āśvalāyanaḥ // bhaktiṃ śvaśurayoḥ kuryāt patyuś cāpi viśeṣataḥ / dharmakārye [ˈ]nukūlatvam arthakārye 'pi saṃyamam// prāgalbhyaṃ kāmakāryeṣu śucitvaṃ nijavigrahe / maṅgalaṃ satataṃ patyuḥ satataṃ priyabhāṣaṇam // Sdhp.22v.3-5 (Āśv.) < Sm.M.I.p.158 (Vyāsa).

2. ayodhyākānde sītām praty anasūyāvākyam // Sdhp.24v.9-10. du[h]sīlah kāmavrtto vā dhanair vā parivarjitah / strīnām āryasvabhāvānām paramam daivatam patih // Sdhp.25r.1-2 (Rām.) < Rām.II.109.24. Cf. Manu V.154.

- 3. viditam tu mamāpy etad yathā nāryāh patir guruh// Sdhp.25r.5 (Rām.) < Rām.II.110.2b.
- 4. samgrahe // bāhyād āyāntam ālokya tvaritā ca jalāšanaiḥ / tāmbūla-vyajanaiš caiva pādasaṃvāhanādibhiḥ // tathaiva cāṭuvacanaiḥ khedasaṃno-danaiḥ paraiḥ / yā priyaṃ prīnayet prītyā trilokī prīnitā tayā // Sdhp.25r.7-9 (saṃgraha)<? See also Sdhp.31r.7-8 (from section IV, pp.280-1)<Mbh. III.223.6.
- 5. mitam dadāti hi pitā mitam bhrātā mitam sutah / amitasya hi dātāram bhartāram kā na pūjayet // Sdhp.25r.9-10 (samgraha) < Subh.378/4 (śocati for pūjayet); Mbh.XII.145.6 (mātā for bhrātā preferred reading; twenty-one MSS read bhrātā incl. one MS from the TMSSM library); Sk.P.III.2.7. 47c-48a (sutam sutah for mitam sutah). See also Sdhp.53v.9-10, from section V.

section remains in effect a continuation of the earlier one on general behaviour. Three ślokas in particular are worth recounting here, all of them unattributed by Tryambaka.

'These are the six things that corrupt women (nārīnām dūṣaṇāni sat): drinking; keeping bad company; deserting one's husband (glossed by Tryambaka as "sleeping in the house of someone other than one's husband"); roaming around (on one's own); sleeping (glossed by Tryambaka as "sleeping in the daytime"); and staying (i.e. spending time) in other people's homes.'6 Some of the aspects involved in 'keeping bad company'—that is, the men and women with whom the good Hindu wife may not properly associate—are discussed in section IIC, pp.170-6). Since it is deemed necessary to begin each day by meditating with one's husband (see section IIA, pp.52-4), it makes sense that the conscientious wife never spends the night away from him. The question of whether or not she may sleep in the hottest part of the day after the midday meal is discussed briefly on page 49.

'These are the six things that cause women and sūdras to fall (strīsūdrapatanāni ṣat): recitation (or repetition, i.e. of sacred texts; japa [h]); austerities (tapas); going on pilgrimages; renunciation (pravrajyā); the chanting of mantras (mantrasādhanam); and the worship of deities (devatārādhanam).'7 To this śloka we may add a similar one taken from section V, and attributed there to Āśvalāyana. 'Sūdras are enjoined by Brahmā to serve the twice-born always, and likewise women to serve their own husbands. Women who are devoted to their husbands should never engage in japa recitation, austerities (tapas), offerings into fire (homa), religious donations (dāna), or any other religious observance (or vow; vrata) or ritual (makha), as long as their husbands are alive.'8 The important implications of these ślokas have been discussed in the

^{6.} atha varjanīyāḥ // Sdhp.25r.10. pānam durjanasamsargah patyā ca viraho !anam/ svapno 'nyagehavāsas' ca nārīṇām dūṣaṇāni ṣaṭ // Sdhp.25r.10-11 Manu IX.13 (nārīsamdūṣanāni for nārīṇām dūṣaṇāni). patyā virahaḥ pati-8ṭhā[d] gṛhāntarasayanam // svapn[o] divāsvāpaḥ // Sdhp.25r.11.

^{7.} japas tapas tīrthayātrā pravrajyā mantrasādhanam / devatārādhanam ceti strīsūdrapatanāni sat // Sdhp.25v.1 < Atri 135b-136a (caiva for ceti); Sm.M.I.p.158 (tīrthasevā for tīrthayātrā; caiva for ceti; Atri); Sm.M.II.p.390. See also Sdhp.59r.2-3, from section V (caiva for ceti; Manu).

^{8.} āśvalāyano 'pi // Sdhp.58r.2. śūdrānām dvijaśuśrūṣā vihitā brahmaṇā yathā / strīṇām svabhartṛṣuśrūṣā tathaiva vihitā sadā // na syāj japas tapo hom[o] dānavratamakhādikam / strīṇām patiparāṇām tu patyau jīvati kiñ cana // Sdhp.58r.3-5 (Āśv.), from section V < ?

relevant sections. For example, the recitation of mantras (japa. mantrasādhana) is dealt with in the sections on devatādhyānam (IIA, pp.52-4), gomatimantra (pp.67-9), snānam (pp.82-8), samdhyā (IIB, pp.105-7), arghyadānam (pp.149-55), devapūja (IIC. pp.178-80), vaiśvadeva (pp.180-3), and strīsvabhāva (III, pp.246-72). Going on pilgrimages (tīrthayātra) is discussed in section IIB (pp.132-41); renunciation (pravrajyā) in the section on parapurusa (pp.170-6); the worship of deities (devatārādhanam) in the sections on devatādhyānam (pp.52-4), the goddess Śrī (pp.60-3), devapūjā (pp.178-80), vaiśvadeva (180-3) and the goddess Jyesthā (pp.227-9). Offerings into the fire (homa) are described in section IIB (pp. 102-7, homa; and pp.107-15, the role of the wife); religious donations (dana) in the sections on managing the household accounts (pp.168-70) and strīdhanam (IV, pp.277-80); religious vows or observances (vrata) in the sections on the role of the wife (IIB, pp.107-15) and strīsvabhāva (III, pp.246-72). The exclusion of women from Vedic education and ritual sacrifice in general is discussed in sections I (pp.34-9) and IIB (pp.107-15). The assertion that, for women, household duties are the equivalent of performing the sacrifice is considered in the sections on daily duties (strīnām āhnikam, pp.44-50) and household tasks (IIC, pp.168-76); and the idea that serving one's husband is the equivalent of the Vedic student serving his guru in the section on paying obeisance to the husband (IIC, pp. 162-3). The question of what religious practices are open to a woman after her husband has died is discussed in the sections on sahagamanavidhi (IV, pp.291-8) and vidhavādharmah (IV, pp.298-304).

Lastly, 'nothing should be done independently (svātantryena) by a woman, either as a child, a young girl or an old woman, even in her (own) home.'9 For, as Manu himself explains in the crucial following verses (omitted here by Tryambaka), she should be subject to her father in childhood, to her husband in her married life, and to her sons in widowhood (Manu V.148; see section IV, pp.299-

300). The rest of this brief section is predictable.

Women's property (stridhanam; Sdhp.25v.6-27r.4)

Some aspects of this topic are discussed briefly in the approp-

9. bālayā vā yuvatyā vā vṛddhayā vāpi yoṣitā / na svātantryeṇa kartavyaṃ kāryaṃ kiṃcid gṛheṣv api // Sdhp.25v.4-5< Manu V.147; Sm.M.I.p.157

riate sections. Most important, perhaps, is the notion that the possession of property is a necessary prerequisite for the performance of sacrifice; and thus that the ineligibility of women to own anything (since they themselves are 'owned'; see note 10) means that they have no right to perform sacrifice (see section I). In addition to this, the question of whether or not a wife may earn money is raised in section IIB (pp.132-41); the wife's responsibility to manage the household accounts in section IIC (pp.168-70); her right to make religious donations (dāna) in sections IIC (pp.168-70) and IV (pp.274-6). But such passages merely touch on what is an extremely complex topic pursued in great detail in numerous commentaries and digests. The problem here is how one may reconcile apparently conflicting rulings. Briefly, Tryambaka proceeds as follows.

On the one hand, there are a number of rulings that deny women the rights of ownership, inheritance and the independent disposal of property. According to an unattributed quotation (in fact taken from Manu), for example, 'these three—a wife, a son and a slave—are held to be without property ([a]dhanāḥ): whatever they acquire (or earn) is the property of him to whom they belong.'10 According to śruti, women are powerless (nirindriyā) and without inheritance (adāyādiḥ; Sdhp.25v.7-8). According to another quotation from Manu (attributed here to Kātyāyana), 'women should not set aside anything (for their own use) from the property of the joint family or even from their own property (svakād api ca vittād) without the permission of their husbands.'11 Regarding a woman's lack of independence in such matters (tatra svātantryābhāve), Tryambaka quotes Hārīta. 'A woman is not entitled to independence (na strī svātantryam arhati) with regard to giving (dāne) or throwing (dhamane; lit. 'blowing' things) away, or with regard to any particular religious matter, or with regard to taking (ādāne; i.e.

⁽Manu); Sm.C.III.ii.p.584 (Manu); Subh.366/15 (kimcid kāryam for kāryam kimcid).

^{10.} bhāryā putras ca dāsas ca traya ete 'dhanāh smṛtaḥ / yat te samadhi. 8acchanti yasyaite tasya tad dhanam // Sdhp.25v.6-7 < Manu VIII.416 (evādhanah for ete 'dhanāḥ; yasya te for yasyai te). See also Sdhp.26[1] r.8-9; 26[1]v.3-4.

^{11,} na nirhāram striyah kuryuh kulumbād bahumadhyagāt / svakād api ca vittād dhi svasya bhartur anājāayā // Sdhp.26r.9-10 (Kāty.)<Manu IX.199. See also Sdhp.25v.5-6, from section IV, pp.274-6; Sdhp.26[1]r.4 (Yājā.).

something for her own use) or disposing (visarge; i.e. of things in general).'12

On the other hand, according to another quotation attributed to Manu, there are six kinds of 'women's property'. 'That which is given (to her) in the vicinity of the fire (at the marriage ceremony); that which is (given to her) when (she is) taken to her new husband's home; that which (is given to her by her husband) in the act of love; and that which (is given to her) by her mother, brother and father—these are known as the sixfold property of women (sadvidham strīdhanam).'13 (For the application of the term strīdhanam to property acquired by the husband from the wife's family at the time of marriage, i.e. dowry, see Derrett 1984:185.) Tryambaka also points out that, according to Āpastamba, 'If the wife makes an occasional religious donation (naimittike dāne) when her husband is away, this is not called "theft".'14 Similarly, the epics frequently show women (such as Kausalyā) who are described elsewhere as virtuous and yet who make donations apparently in their own right.

Tryambaka's conclusion follows Rāghavānanda's comment on Manu VIII.416 (quoted above, see note 10). The so-called 'independence' of the wife, like that of the slave, is no independence at all. For the wife's right to her property implies the ownership of her husband too ((bhāryādhane bhartur api svāmitvāvagamāt; Sdhp.26 [1]v.2-3). What then is the difference between a wife's 'own property' and that which is common to both wife and husband? With regard to the distribution of property owned jointly by the two of them, the wife needs her husband's permission but he does not need hers. With regard to the sixfold strīdhana, however, the right of ownership is all hers; but she still needs her husband's permission to exercise it.

14. āpastambo 'pi // na hi bhartrvipravāse naimittike dāne steyam upadiśanti // iti // Sdhp.2-3 (Āp.) < ?

^{12.} tatra svātantryābhāve hārītaḥ // dāne vā dhamane(?) vā 'pi dharmārthe vā višeṣataḥ / ādāne vā visarge vā na strī svātantryam arhati // iti // Sdhp.26 [1]2-3 (Since MS T₁ is hard to decipher, I have followed the reading dāne vā dhamane vā 'pi of MSS T₂ and T₃; i.e. in preference to the readings dāne vā dhamam ne vā 'pi of MS M and dāne bādhamate vā 'pi of PT)<? Cf. Manu IX.3.

^{13.} tad āha manuḥ // adhyagny adhyāv[ā]hanikam dattam ca prītikarmani/mātṛbhrātṛprāptam ṣaḍvidham strīdhanam smṛtam // iti // Sdp.25v.9-10 (Manu)< Manu IX.194. See also Sdhp.26v.6; Sdhp.26[1]r.6-7.

For his part, he may use her property only if he has her permission. Indeed, as Tryambaka explains, 'a husband should never seize (control of) his wife's property as long as she is alive; if he does so by force (balāt), he should be punished by the king.'15 The quotation that follows—attributed to Mādhava—extends the ruling to a woman's other male relatives. 'Neither husband, son, father nor brother has the power to take or dispose of a woman's property (strīdhana); if any one of them makes use of (lit. "enjoys") a woman's property without her permission (lit. "by force"), he should be made to give it back with interest (savrddhikam) and he should incur punishment (dandam; e.g. a fine).'16,17

15. strīdhanam tasyām jīvavatyām bhartrā na grāhyam balāt grahane rājītā dandya ity āha mādhavah // Sdhp.26[2]r.2-3.

16. na bhartā naiva ca suto na pitā bhrātaro na ca / ādāne vā visarge vā strīdhane prabhaviṣṇavaḥ // yadi tv ekataro 'py eṣam strīdhanam bhakṣayed balāt / savriddhikam pradāpyaḥ syād daṇḍam caiva samāpnuyāt // iti // Sdhp. 26[2]r.3-5 (Mādhava) < Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1458 (hy ekataro for tv ekataro;

savrddhim pratidāpyah for savrddhikam pradāpyah; Kāty.).

17. This important ruling was quoted in a recent judgement of the Indian Supreme Court hailed by the media as 'an unequivocal victory' for women's rights and 'a major break-through in dowry disputes'. Sunil Sethi's article, published in India Today in April 1985, opens with the following. For some time now the Supreme Court has acquired a healthy reputation for passing judgements heavily weighted in favour of women's rights. Last fortnight that reputation was amply reinforced when the court passed a landmark judgement declaring that all gifts made over to a woman at the time of her marriage remained her absolute private property till the end; and that her husband, or any other, had no right to them without her sanction. . . . But the Supreme Court, in fact, was upholding the right of a woman to retain nuptial gifts as enshrined in the ancient concept of stridham (woman's wealth) first mooted by the Vedic sage Manu. Quoting from classical treatises on Hindu law, the 25-page judgement . . . noted that "neither the husband, nor the son, nor the father, nor the brother, has power to use or to aliene the legal property of a woman. And if any of them shall consume such property against her own consent he shall be compelled to pay its value with interest to her.... In other words, gifts of cash, ornaments, silver, clothing — or anything that constitutes dowry — may be entrusted by the wife to the husband to keep but he would be deemed "guilty of criminal breach of trust" if he either misappropriates or refuses to return what the court regards "as the absolute and personal property of his wife". (Sethi 1985:57.)

Tryambaka explains that when the epics describe virtuous women such as Kausalyā or Sītā giving things away, the permission of their husbands is assumed. For without the husband's permission (bhartur ājñāṃ vinā), the wife should not give anything away, even to her own relatives (naiva svabandhubhyo diśed dhanam; Sdhp.27r, 2-3).

In praise of the pativratā (Sdhp.27r.4-33v.8)

This section consists almost entirely of quotations, including lengthy passages quoted verbatim from the *Mahābhārata* and the *Agnipurāṇa*. Many of the individual rulings are also given earlier in the relevant contexts. In this section, apart from the theme of the proper behaviour of wives, there is virtually no thread of argument.

The first series of ślokas are attributed to 'other smṛti texts' (Sdhp.27r.5-27v.4; smṛtyantaram), the second to the Agnipurāṇa (Sdhp.27v.4-10). Both merely reinforce points that Tryambaka has made elsewhere.

The third series consists of two entire chapters quoted verbatim from Draupadī's conversation with Satyabhāmā in the Vanaparvan of the Mahābhārata (Sdhp.27v.10-31v.7< Mbh.III.222-3). Satyabhāmā asks Draupadī how she has managed to gain such control over her husbands (the five Pandavas) that they are never angry with her. 18 What is her secret? Is it the result of 'a religious observance (or vow; vrata); (the practice of) austerities (tapas); bathing (in sacred waters; snānam); (reciting) a mantra (or spell); (using) herbs (with magical properties); the (magic) power of knowledge (vidyāvīryam); the (magic) power attained by (using special) roots (mūlavīryam); japa recitation; offerings into the fire (homa); or the (tantric rituals described in) āgama texts (āgamā[h])'?19 Draupadī rejects all such methods as appropriate only to wicked women (cf. pp.274-6 above); for drinking the water used to bathe one's husband's feet as the proper alternative to bathing in a sacred place, see section IIB, pp.134-8. 'My husbands have come under my

^{18.} katham ca vasagās tubhyam na kupyanti ca te subhe // tava vasyā hī satatam pāndavāh priyadarsane // Sdhp.28r.5 (Mbh.) < Mbh.III.222.4c-5a.

^{19.} vratacaryā tapo vāpi snānamantrausadhāni vā / vidyāvīryam mūla vīryam japahomāgamās tathā // Sdhp.28r.6-7 (Mbh.) < Mbh.III.222.6 (japahomas tathāgadāḥ for japahomāgamās tathā).

control,' she explains, 'as a result of my attentiveness, my eternal readiness to serve, and my devoted services to my elders.' Draupadī then proceeds to enumerate all the familiar qualities of the pativratā. They may be summed up in one śloka. 'There is no deity like him—that is, like one's husband—in all the god-filled worlds; when he is pleased, through his grace (prasādāt) all desires are fulfilled; when angered, he kills.'21

The fourth set of rulings, attributed to the Agnipurāna, is taken from Kṛṣṇa's advice to his younger sister, Subhadrā, on the eve of her marriage (Sdhp.31v.7-32r.2). His main point is that she should 'forget all about us (i.e. her own family), even her mother and father. For the husband alone is a woman's family; the husband alone is a woman's wealth; the husband alone is a woman's religious duty, and her chief austerity.'22 The importance of forgetting one's own family and never returning to one's father's house is taken up again at some length later in this section (p.288)

The fifth passage is taken, with some omissions, from the conversation between Umā and Maheśvara in the Anuśāsanaparvan of the Mahābhārata (Sdhp.32r.2-33r.2 < Mbh.XIII.134.32-3,34b-5,36b,38-41,43,45-52a,53-5). It opens with Umā's statement that 'the religious duty of a woman (strīdharmah) is created at the outset, that is, at the time of marriage, by her relatives: in the presence of the (marriage) fire, she becomes her husband's partner in the religious sphere (sahadharmacarī).'23 Umā then enumerates the qualities of the ideal wife who 'participates in the religious duty of her husband' (dharmacārinī, dharmabhāginī), who 'takes his vow

^{20.} avadhānena subhage nityotthitatayaiva ca / bhartāro vašagā mahyam gurušušrūšayaiva ca // Sdhp.29v.7-8 (Mbh.)<Mbh.III.222.37 (*tthānatayaiva for *tthitatayaiva; *šušrūšanena for *šušrūšayaiva).

^{21.} naitādṛśam daivatam asti satye sarveşu lokeşu sadaiva[t]eşu / yathā patis tuṣyati sarvakāmā labhyāh prasādāt kupitaś ca hanyāt // Sdhp.31r.2-3 (Mbh.) < Mbh.III.223.2 (patis tasya hi for patis tuṣyati; prasāde for prasādāt). Cf. note 24.

^{22.} mātaram pitaram vāpi māsmān smara kadācana // patir eva striy[ā] bandhuḥ patir eva striy[ā] dhanam / patir eva striy[ā] dharmaḥ patir eva mahattapaḥ / Sdhp.32r.1-2 (Ag.P.) < ?

^{23.} strīdharmah pūrvam evāyam vivāhe bandhubhih kṛtaḥ / sahadharmacarī bhartur bhavaty agnisamīpataḥ // Sdhp.32r.3-4 (Mbh.) < Mbh.XIII. 134.32 (pūrva evāyam for pūrvam evāyam). Cf. section I, notes 15,16 (Manu II.67).

as her own' (pativratā, pativratabhāginī; see pp.50, 107-15 etc.). Above all, 'the good woman always regards her husband as a god For the husband is god for women; the husband is family; the husband is the goal. There is no goal, no deity like the husband.'24

Umā also touches on what is a new theme for Tryambaka. 'If for some reason a husband tells (his wife to do) something that is (normally) not to be done (akāryam), something that is against dharma (adharmam), or something that causes death (prāṇanāsanam), then—even if he is poor or sick or in trouble or in the midst of enemies, even if he is suffering from a brahmin's curse (e.g. Pāṇdu; see section V, pp.309-10)—she should do it without hesitation, bearing in mind the (special) duties (enjoined) for difficult times (āpaddharmān).'25 Tryambaka returns to this important issue in his conclusion.

The final extended quotation is taken, with few omissions, from Bhīṣma's conversation with Yudhiṣthira on the behaviour of good women in the Anuśāsanaparvan of the Mahābhārata (Sdhp. 33r.2-33v.8 < Mbh.XIII.12.1-3a, 6b-21; see also section III, pp. 247-8, 268). Bhīṣma in turn recalls another conversation: that between Sumanā and Śāṇḍilī, the renowned pativratā, when the two women meet in heaven (devaloka). Asked what meritorious behaviour has brought her there, Śāṇḍilī stresses that 'it was not by wearing the ochre robe (kaṣāya; i.e. of the renunciate), the bark garments (valkala; i.e. of the hermit), the shaven head (muṇḍā; i.e. of certain types of religious mendicants, or the widow), or the matted locks (jaṭilā; i.e. of the ascetic) that [she] became a deity (i.e. entitled to be in devaloka). '26 She simply followed the dictates of her religious duty to her husband (patidharma; Sdhp.33v.7 (Mbh.XIII. 124.21). Tryambaka's repeated insistence that the good wife should

^{24.} devavat satatam sādhvī bhartāram pratipasyati // patir hi devo nārīnām patir bandhuḥ patir gatiḥ / patyā samā gatir nāsti daivatam vā yathā patiḥ // Sdhp.32r.5-6, 32v.8-9 (Mbh.) < Mbh.XIII.134.34b,51 (yā bhartāram prapasyati for bhartāram pratipasyati). Cf. Subh.p.366, satīvarṇanam 14.

^{25.} yady akāryam adharmam vā yadi vā prāṇanāśanam / patir brūyād daridro vā vyādhito vā katham cana // āpanno ripusamstho vā brahmaśāpārdito 'pi va / āpaddharmān anuprekṣya tat kāryam aviśaṅkayā // Sdhp.32v. 9-33r.1 < Mbh.XIII.134.53-4.

^{26.} nāham kāṣāyavasanā nāsmi valkaladhārinī / na ca mundā na jaṭilā bhuktvā devatvam āgatā // Sdhp.33r.6-7 (Mbh.) (Mbh.XIII.124.8 (nāpi for nāsmi).

have nothing to do with female renouncers, mendicants or ascetics is discussed in more detail in section IIC (pp.170-6). The question of whether or not the widow should shave her head is dealt with below (pp.303-4).

The religious duties of the menstruating woman (rajasvalā-dharmāḥ; Sdhp. 33v.8-40r.3)

This is a somewhat loosely structured section that touches on most of the points normally made concerning the menstruating woman. She herself is referred to in a variety of ways that reflect the range of implications usually associated with her condition. For example, she is described as 'full of impurity' (rajasvalā); 'one whose clothes are stained' (malavadvāsas); 'overflowing with menstrual blood' (ārtavābhiplutā); 'bearing flowers' or 'in bloom' (puṣpiṇī, puṣpavatī); 'one who has the duty or condition of women' (strīdharmiṇī); and so on.

The first and most important point that Tryambaka makes is that 'the menstruating woman is impure for three (days and) nights.'²⁷ In a later passage, he produces a famous quotation, attributed to the [Smrti-]samgraha. 'On the first day, she is declared to be (as polluting as) an untouchable; on the second, (as polluting as) a brahmin-killer; on the third, (as polluting as) a washerwoman; on the fourth day, she is purified.'²⁸ The significance of this impurity, and the traditional tracing of its origins to the story of Indra's brahminicide, are discussed in section III. For the symbolic 'menstrual pollution' of rivers and the earth, see Salomon 1984:157-8, 173-5.

In this section, Tryambaka uses a quotation attributed to the $Smrticandrik\bar{a}$ to explain that the menstruating woman loses two kinds of blood, one far more polluting than the other. 'That which occurs to women at the wrong time (i.e. outside the crucial three days described above) men call "blood' (raktam); that which occurs at the

^{27.} atha rajasvalādharmāh // Sdhp.33v.8. tatra vasisthah // trirātram rajasvalā rajasvalāsucir bhavati // Sdhp.33v.8-9 (Vas.) < Vas.V.6; Dh.kośa I.iii. I.iii.p.1977.

^{28.} prathame 'hani caṇḍālī dvitīye brahmaghātakī / tṛtīye rajakī proktā caturthe 'hani sudhyati // Sdhp.36r.2-3 (incl. insert above; Saṃgraha) < Par.Sm.VII.18 (brahmaghātinī for 'ghātakī).

right time (i.e. within those three days) is called "menstrual blood" (rajas); as a result of the latter alone, she becomes impure. For women (who continue to bleed from the fourth) until the twelfth day, the purification (appropriate) for urine is required; a ritual bath is (prescribed for those who bleed from the twelfth) until the eighteenth day; after that, she is (again) impure for three days (i.e. it is assumed that another cycle has begun). 29 Another quotation, attributed to Angiras, provides a more detailed definition. 'The best of wise men know that the menstruation (rajas) of women is of four kinds: that which is due to illness (rogajam); that which is due to (a disturbance of) the emotions (rāgajam); that which is due to (an imbalance of) the humours (dhātujam); and that which occurs at the right time (of the monthly cycle; i.e. during the crucial three days).'30 Both Angiras and Tryambaka conclude that only the fourth type of bleeding makes a woman ritually impure (asuddhā; Sdhp.35v.5) One can only speculate on the reasons behind this careful categorization of the polluting powers of menstrual fluid: the importance of establishing a pregnancy certainly (see below, pp.287-8); a desire to take the initiative out of the hands of woman perhaps; or merely an obsession with classification.

Secondly, there are innumerable prohibitions relating to the menstruating woman (Sdhp.33v.9-34r.4). For example, she should not use collyrium for her eyes (cf. section IIA, pp.96-101), comb her hair (cf. section IIA, pp.96-7), massage her body with oil or ointments (cf. sections IIA, pp.96-7, and IID, pp.236-45, or take a bath (cf. section IIA, pp.82-8). She should not clean her teeth (cf. section IIA, pp.78-82), ot cut her nails. She should not 'touch fire' (nāgniṃ spṛśet, i.e. cook; cf. sections IIA, pp.100-1, and IIC, pp.198-205). She should eat only those foods which are fit for sacrifice (haviṣyam; cf. Dh.kośa III.ii.1180, 1216, 1265, 1270-3, 1287-8 etc.; PVK II.i. p.681) and she should use either her own cupped hands (añjalinā vā pibet; i.e. like a renouncer, cf. pānipātrin, kārapātrin, Yatidh.32.85; Olivelle 1977:37, 164-8) or a

^{29.} tathā candrikāyām // akāle yad bhavet strīņām raktam āhur manīṣiṇaḥ / kāle tu yad rajaḥ proktam tasmāt tatraiva sāśuciḥ // ā dvādaśāhān nārīṇām mūtrava[c] chaucam iṣyate / āṣṭādaśāhā[t] snānam syāt trirātram parato 'suciḥ // Sdhp.35v.6-9 (Sm.C) < ?

^{30.} yadāhāngirāh // rajaś caturvidham jñeyam rogajam rāgajam tathā / dhātujam kālajam ceti yositām tu budhottamaih // Sdhp.35v.3-4 (Ang.) <?

copper or iron vessel (or, according to some authorities, an unbaked earthenware vessel or one made of leaves; see section IIC, pp.217-21). She should certainly not eat food from her husband's plate (patipātre 'nnam; cf. ucchiṣṭa, section IIC, pp.221-7). She should not even look at her husband (pasyed api patim na ca). She should not sleep on a high bed (cf. section IID, pp.239-40). She should not spin thread, plait or cut rope, or dig in the earth. She should not cry, laugh, talk a great deal, hear loud noises, run, roam about, exert herself, sleep in the daytime, sit in a draught; and so on and so forth.

These prohibitions are frequently coupled with the defects accruing to her child if she disobeys. In most instances, the link between action and defect is clear. For example, if she uses collyrium, her child will be blind in one or both eyes; if she combs her hair, he will be bald. If she massages her body with oil, he will have a skin disease (duścarmā); if she takes a bath, he will die by drowning (apsu mārukah). If she cleans her teeth, his teeth will be discoloured; if she cuts her nails, his nails will be diseased. Similarly, if she plaits rope, her child will hang himself (udbandhanamrtah). If she laughs, his palate, teeth, lips and tongue will be discoloured. If she talks a great deal, he will be a chatterbox (pralāpī); if she hears a loud noise, he will be deaf. If she runs, he will be unstable (cañcalah); if she roams about, he will be insane (unmattah). If she sleeps in the daytime, he will be sleepy by nature.

However, some of the links are less obvious. For example, if she drinks out of an earthenware vessel (kharva, śarāva), her child will be a dwarf (kharva, vāmana; a pun). If she eats food from her husband's plate, her child will be insane (unmādī). If she spins (krnatti), or cuts rope, he will be impotent (klībah; or perhaps of indeterminate sex); a possible allusion to spinning or cutting the 'thread' of progeny that a man is duty bound to continue (kulatantu; samtanārtham, Manu IX.96; etc.). If she digs in the earth, he will be bald or his life will be short. If she sits in a draught, he will be insane (unmattah). Most important of all, if a menstruating woman makes love during the crucial three days, her child will be an untouchable (candālah) or cursed (abhisastah; i.e. condemned for committing a mahāpātaka). Hence the detailed prohibitions to ensure that the menstruating woman is neither available nor attractive to her husband at this time (cf. section IIA, pp.88-96 and 96-101).

Thirdly, there are a number of special rulings to deal with different

kinds of coincidences. For example, while there is a prohibition on bathing in general (snānamātranisedhe 'pi) during menstruation. the ritual bath prescribed for a specific occasion (naimittikam snānam; see section IIA, pp.82-3) must still be performed, but in some other way. (The menstruating woman should somehow sprinkle her body with water without getting her clothes wet: Sdhp.35r.4-7.) Similarly, what additional rite of expiation (prāyaścitta) should be performed by a menstruating woman who is further polluted by contact with an untouchable (candāla, śvapāka). an inferior śūdra (antya, antyaja; i.e. the lower-caste or untouchable śūdra), an outcaste (patita, i.e. one guilty of a mahāpātaka), a dog or a crow (the candalas of the animal and bird kingdoms) (The answer depends both on which day the contact occurred and on whether she was eating at the time; Sdhp.36v.2-7.) What should a woman do if she begins to menstruate when she is already in a state of impurity due to a birth or a death in the family? (She should have water poured on her head by a brahmin; Sdhp.36v.7-9.) What should she do if, while menstruating herself, she touches or is touched by another menstruating woman? (The answer depends on the varna of the two women involved, who is responsible for making contact, and whether that contact was intentional or prolonged; Sdhp.36v.9-37r.10.)

Fourthly, there are the rulings for the ritual bath of purification on the fourth day (Sdhp.36r.1-36v.1, 37r.10-37v.7). Towards the end of the morning (samgave; see p.45) on the fourth day, she should cleanse herself with sixty lumps of earth; if she is a widow, with twice that number (cf. section IIA, pp.71-4). Then she should clean her teeth (cf. section IIA, pp.78-82), and take a ritual bath with her clothes on (sacelam; cf. section IIA, pp.82-8). Pure once more, she should gaze at the sun (bhāskaram drstvā), pray for a son (putram prārthya), and attend to her woman's duties (strīdharmam... samācaret). According to a quotation attributed to Atri, 'when she has bathed properly, she should look at her husband's face and no one else's, or (if he is away) she should look at the sun while meditating on her husband in her mind.'31 That evening, she should make sexual advances to her husband (upasarpati; Sdhp.40r.1). A quotation attributed to the Agni-

^{31.} atriḥ / Sdhp.37r.10. susnātā bhartrvadanam īkṣate 'nyasya na kvacit / athavā manasā dhyātvā patiṃ bhānuṃ vilokayet // Sdhp.37v.3-4 (Atri) < Sk.P.III.2.7.27b-c (īkṣatānyasa for īkṣate 'nyasya; manasī for manaṣā).

purāņa is more explict. 'Anointed with unguents of ground turmeric (haridrā) and saffron (kunkuma; cf. section IIA, pp.96-101), wearing bright garments, thinking of her husband's "lotus foot" (patipādābjam; i.e. with the reverence due to one's guru or god; cf. sections IIC, pp.156-68, 221-7, and IID,pp.236-45), gazing at her own toes (i.e. keeping her eyes down), not looking at other men, thinking only of her husband, thinking of him as light itself (bhargam eva), always (keeping herself) pure (i.e. by taking care not to touch anything polluting), beautifully dressed and ornamented (bhūṣitā) and anointed with perfume (cf. section IIA, pp.88-101), and in good spirits (sumanāh), she should go to bed (see section IID, pp.236-45).'32 If bleeding continues after the fourth day, she is considered 'fit to be touched' (sparśayogyā; Sdhp.36r.8) and therefore pure with regard to her husband (suddhā bhartu[h]; Sdhp.36r. 5); that is, she should still make love to him. Until her menstrual flow has ceased altogether, however, she is not held to be 'of pure conduct' (sādhvācārā; Sdhp.36r.6) and therefore she is not 'fit to perform the ritual worship of the gods and so on' (daivādikarmayogy[ā]: Sdhp.36r.7-8).

Finally, there are the rulings concerning the importance of making love at the proper time (rtukāladharma) and the penalties or atonements (prāyaścitta) enjoined for both husband and wife if they fail to take advantage of this opportunity to conceive (Sdhp.37v. 7-38r.5, 39v.10-40r.3; cf. nagnikā, section IIA, pp.86-8). The penalties described are in fact those normally advocated for adultery. Āpastamba provides an example. 'A man who fails in his duty to his wife should put on the skin of a donkey with the hair turned outwards and go to seven houses calling (out to each in turn): "(Give) alms to a man who has failed in his duty to his wife!." And this should be his livelihood for six months.'33 A variety of penalties may be imposed on the wife who refuses to make love; and again these are penalties mainly associated with adultery (cf. section III).

^{32.} āgneyapurāņe 'pi // Sdhp.37v.4. haridrākunkumālepalepitā subhravastrakā // smarontī patipādābjam svapādāngusthavīksaņā / itarāms tu na pasyantī smarantī patim eva sā // bhartāram bhargam eveti dhyāyantī satatam sucih / sumanāh sayanam gacched bhūṣitā gandhacarcitā // iti // Sdhp.37v.5-7 (Ag.P.)<?

^{33. ...} āpastambah // dāravyatikramī kharājinam bahirloma paridhāya dāravyatikramine bhikṣām iti saptāgārāni caret / sā vrittih ṣaṇmāsān // Sdhp. 37v.7-9 (Āp.) < Āp.1.10.28.19.

According to Āpastamba, she should perform the severe twelve-day krechra penance (see Manu XI.211; Vas.23.43; PVK IV.p.132,145) for six months (Sdhp.37v.9-10 < Āp.I.10.28.20). According to the Brahmāṇḍapurāṇa, she should be abandoned (parityājyā; Sdhp. 38r.3-4). According to Manu, 'the king should have her devoured by dogs in a (public) place where many people have gathered (to watch).'34 In her next life, according to an unattributed quotation, she will be reborn as a bitch, a she-wolf, a female jackal or a female hog (Sdhp.39v.10-40r.1; for the retention of gender in transmigration, see sections IIC, p.226, and III, pp.246-7). According to Baudhāyana, her husband should proclaim her publicly to be a foetus-killer (bhrāṇaghnām; cf. section IIC, pp.217-21) and drive her out of his house (Sdhp.38r.4-5 < Baudh.IV.1.22; Dh.kośa I.ii.1019).

Tryambaka interprets this last ruling to mean that she should be sent back to her father. He then devotes considerable space to proving that the good wife never returns to her father's house (Sdhp.38r.5-39v.10). His evidence includes lengthy quotations taken from the Rgvedic marriage hymn (R.V.X.85 and commentary), the Yajurveda (and commentary), the Drāhyāyanaśrautasūtra (and commentary), and the Śakuntalā story from both the Mahābhārata and Kālidāsa. The conclusion is clear. 'People suspect a married woman who spends time with her own relations and, even if she is chaste, (they assume) otherwise; that is why (even) her own relatives insist that she remain near her husband, even if he does not like her.'35 As Kanva explains to Śakuntalā, 'even slavery (dāsyam api) in your husband's house is right (ksamam)' (Sdhp.39v.8 Abhijñānaśakuntalam V.27).

The religious duties of the pregnant woman (garbhinīdharmāḥ; Sdhp.40r.3-42r.1)

First, Tryambaka gives a number of rulings, largely prohibitions,

34. manuh // bhartāram langhayed yā tu jātu strī gunadarpitā / tām śvabhih khādayed rājā samsthāne bahusamsthite // Sdhp.38r.2-3 (Manu) < Manu VIII.371 (strī jāāti ° for jātu strī). Cf. Gaut.XXIII.14; Vis.Sm.V.18.1.

35. ayam arthah kālidāsenābhyuktah // Sdhp.39r.4-5. satīm api jūātikulai-kasamsrayām jano 'nyathā bhartṛmatīm visankate / atah samīpe parinetur isyate tad apriyāpi pramadā svabandhubhih // Sdhp.39v.8-9 (Kālidāsa) < Abhijāānasakuntalam V.17.

relating to the proper behaviour of the pregnant woman. Many of them are given elsewhere in the more general context of the good wife. For example, even if the pregnant woman—who is naturally tired at this time as a result of the weight of the unborn child (garbhabharālasāyāḥ svabhāvataḥ)—abandons all other ornamentation, she should not abandon those things which are associated with the woman whose husband is still alive: that is, haridrā, collyrium and so on (Sdhp.41r.4-7; cf. section IIA, p.96, note 73). Similarly, she should perform the popular naktavrata that involves a morning bath, a pūjā to Pārvatī (the model of the devoted wife; see section I), and eating only at night (Sdhp.40v.2).

Some rulings are more specific to pregnancy. For example, the pregnant woman should avoid such things as riding elephants and horses, climbing hills or onto housetops (kuñjarāśvādiśa:laharmyādirohanam), strenuous physical exertion (vyāyāmam), walking fast (śīghragamanam), riding in a cart (śakatārohanam), bloodletting (raktavimoksam), and so on (Sdhp.40v.3-5). If she obeys these rules, she will have a son who lives for a long time and is very wealthy (putrah sthirāyur vrddhisamyutah); if she does not, she will cause a miscarriage (garbhapatanam avāpnoti; Sdhp.40v.6-7). The ruling that a pregnant woman should avoid sexual intercourse (... vyavāyam ca garbhinī varjayet sadā; Sdhp.41r.3-4) is somewhat at odds with the widespread idea that—due to the boon granted to women by Indra when they agreed to take on part of the guilt of his brahminicide (see section III, pp.250-1)—if a woman wants to make love, her husband should not refuse, right up to the delivery of her child (Yājñ.I.81, Mit.; Tait.Sam.II.5.1.4-5; etc.).

Secondly, Tryambaka deals with the importance of indulging a pregnant woman's cravings (dohadapradānam; Sdhp.41r.9). He quotes Yājñavalkya. 'As a (direct) result of not indulging the craving of a pregnant woman, the foetus acquires some defect (doṣam); that is, some deformity (vairūpyam) or even death. That is why what women desire (when they are pregnant) should be done.'36 Even if she wants something that is bad (ahitam) for her, she should

^{36.} dohadapradānam yājñavalkye // dohadasyāpradānena garbho daṣam avāpnuyāt / vairūpyam maraṇam vāpi tasmāt kāryam priyam striyāh // Sdhp. 41r.9-10 < Yājñ.III.79 (dauhrdasyā° for dohadasyā°; dohadasyā° given as variant reading); Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1083.

be given it: a little is in this case good or at least somewhat good (hitopahitam alpakam, Sdhp.41v.3< Astāngahṛdayam, śarīrasthānam 1.53b; cf. Obeyesekere 1963:340-1). The reasoning behind this—derived here from the medical authority, Vāgbhata—is that the heart is one of the 'soft' organs bequeathed by the mother (for the others, see Jolly 1901:81). 'For (the child's) heart is born of its mother (mātrjam) and is (thus closely) linked with its mother's heart; it is therefore not right to deny the cravings (śraddhāvimānanam) of the pregnant woman.'37 For in indulging the mother, one is in fact indulging the child. The cravings felt by the mother are thus in reality those of the foetus for all that it experienced in its former life (Jolly 1901:77). Medical texts derive dohada from dvaihṛdaya, 'two-hearted', on the grounds that the hearts of mother and foetus are linked in this way.

Two points may be made here. First, this close relationship between the hearts of mother and child supports the idea that the half-breed demon priest inherits his mother's demonic heart (or svabhāva; see section III, p.266). Secondly, the dohada or craving of the pregnant woman is a recurrent motif in South Asian culture and folklore. More important, it can provide a graphic (but culturally acceptable) expression of a woman's hostility towards her husband, her ambivalence towards her child, and her resentment regarding the traditional role of women in society (cf. Bloomfield 1920; Tawney 1924:I, appendix III; Obeyesekere 1963).

Finally, Tryambaka describes the entry of the pregnant woman into the lying-in chamber (sūtikāgāra veśanam; Sdhp.41v.4-42r.1). She should be led into this special room where all that is necessary has been gathered together (saṃbhāraiḥ saṃbhṛtam; Sdhp.41v.9; cf. Jolly 1901:82-3) in or before the ninth month, or even at the moment of giving birth (prasūtisaṃbhave kāle sadyo vāpi; Sdhp.41v.5), at a suitably auspicious time, and with a ceremony to bring good luck (kṛtakautukamaṅgalām; Sdhp.41v.10). Moreover, she should hold in her hand a fruit that has a masculine name (hastastha-

^{37.} bāhate 'pi // mātrjam hy asya hrdayam mātus ca hrdayena tat / sambandham tena garbhinyā neṣṭam śraddhāvimānanam // Sdhp.41v.1-2 (Bāhaṭa) < Vāgbhaṭa's Aṣṭāṅgahrdayam, śārīrasthānam I.52b-53a (śraddhāvidhāraṇam for śraddhāvimānanam; the latter variant is read by Aruṇadatta's commentary). 'Bāhaṭa' is the South Indian version of 'Vāgbhaṭa'.

punnāmaphalām; Sdhp.41v.10) in order to encourage the birth of a son.

The religious duties of the woman whose husband is away (prositabhartṛkādharmāḥ; Sdhp.42r.1-3).

This brief section quotes two well-known but here unascribed rulings, without comment. 'When her husband has gone to another country, the chaste woman (satī) should forego perfumes, garlands, collyrium, (using) the teeth-cleaning stick and (chewing) betel.'38 'The woman whose husband is away should abandon playing, adorning her body, attending gatherings and festivals, laughing, and going to other people's houses.'39 Mit. on Yājñ.I.84 glosses 'playing' (krīdām) as 'with a ball and so on' (kandukādibhih), 'attending festivals' ([u]tsavo) as 'marriages and so on' (vivāhādih), and 'laughing' (hāsyam) as 'with the mouth open' (vijrmbhanam). Such are the self-imposed deprivations implied by Draupadi when she tells Satyabhāmā that she always observes a 'vow' (bhavāmi vratacārinī) when her husband(s) is (are) away (Sdhp.29r.9 < Mbh. III.222.29; see section IV, pp.280-1). The implications of the individual items of beautification and personal hygiene have been discussed earlier in the appropriate sections.40

The injunction relating to dying (literally 'going') with (one's husband) (sahagamanavidhih; Sdhp.42r.3-45r.5)

Of the nine topics discussed in this section on the duties common to all women, this is perhaps the most interesting. For in 1789,

^{38.} gate desāntaram patyau gandhamālyānjanāny api / dantakāstham ca tāmbūlam varjayed vanitā satī // Sdhp.42r.1-2 < Manu, parišista, p.7 (1935 Benares edn.; Smrtiratnāvalī; °āni ca for āny api).

^{39.} krīdām sarīrasamskāram samājotsavadarsanam / hāsyam paragrhe yānam tyajet prositabhartṛkā // iti // Sdhp.42r.2-3 < Yājū.I.84; Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1085. Cf. Sm.C.III.ii.p.592-3.

^{40.} For perfumes, garlands etc., see section IIA, pp.96-101; and for teeth-cleaning, pp.78-82; for chewing betel, see sections IIA, pp.96-101 and IIC, pp.229-33. The issue of attending festivals and public gatherings is raised in sections IIB, pp.132-41 (e.g. note 38) and IV, pp.274-6; visiting the homes of others in section IV, p.275, (note 6). Finally, the reasons a man is permitted to leave home are given in section IIB, pp.132-41.

'suttee' was officially noted by the government of Bengal. The campaign against the custom, led by Rammohan Roy (1772-1833), met with considerable hostility from the orthodox community (see Anantarāma's Sahānumaranaviveka).41 In 1829, Suttee Regulation XVII made the practice illegal. In 1830, eight hundred Hindu conservatives appealed to the Privy Council on the grounds that the Act interfered with Indian culture and religion. In 1832, the prosuttee appeal was rejected. In the Maratha court of Thanjavur in the mid-eighteenth century, however, the orthodox position was still maintained. Tryambaka presents it as follows.

He begins with two resounding quotations that advocate the practice of sahagamana. First, 'at the time of a girl's wedding, the brahmins should recite (these words): "May you be one who accompanies her husband (always,) when he is alive and even when he is dead!""42 Secondly, according to Sankha, 'if, when her husband has died, a woman ascends with (him; samārohe[t]) into the fire, she is glorified in heaven as one whose conduct is equal to that of Arundhatī,'43

Tryambaka next considers the objection (nanu...) that sahagamana is in fact a form of suicide, and therefore prohibited (ātmahatyārūpatvena nisiddhatvāt; Sdhp.42r.6-7). Of the two quotations given to support this objection, the first is the standard pūrvapakṣa against suicide. 'And therefore one should certainly not depart (this life) before its full length (has been lived out).'44 The second is Iś. Up.3, together with the common misinterpretation of the phrase ātmahano janah to mean 'people who kill themselves' instead of

- 41. I am indebted to J. Duncan M. Derrett for drawing my attention to this work.
- 42. atha sahagamanavidhih // Sdhp.42r.3. kanyāvivāhasamaye vācayeyur iti dvijāh/ bhartuh sahacarī bhūyah jīvato 'jīvato 'pi vā/ iti// Sdhp.42r.4-5 < Sk.P.III.2.7.52
- 43. śankho 'pi // mṛte bhartari yā nārī samārohed dhutāśanam / sārundhatīsamācārā svarge loke mahīyate // Sdhp.42r.5-6 (Śankh.) < Mit. on Yājñ.I.86 (svargaloke for svarge loke); Par.M.II.i.p.54 (as Mit.; sankhangirasau); Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1115 (as Mit.; Ang.). See also Sahā. I.1 (Ang.).

44. tathā ca śrutih // tasmād u ha na purāyusah preyāt // iti // Sdhp.42r.7 (śrutih) < Śat.Br.X.2.6.7 (svakāmī preyāt for preyāt); Dh.kośa II.i.p.517 (as Sat.Br.). Cf. Medh. on Manu VI.32; Kull. on Manu VI.31.

'people who kill (i.e. are ignorant of) the (true) Self' (cf. Radhakrishnan 1974:570; Hume 1971:361, note 4; PVK II.ii.p.927, Vāj.S.40.3). Tryambaka argues that this objection is invalid because the prohibition on suicide is a general rule (sāmānyavacana) and is therefore open to modification by supplementary rules giving the exceptions to it (viśeṣa). Just as the general rule that 'one should not desire to kill any living being' is modified by supplementary rules - for example, that in certain rituals an animal should be sacrificed - so the general prohibition on suicide is also modified by supplementary rules. These include rulings related to the religious suicide of the ascetic who kills himself at a sacred place in order to go directly to heaven (cf. Yatidh.17.1-32; Olivelle 1977:42-3, 96-8); the deliberate courting of death in battle by the heroic warrior (cf. Yatidh.17.8; Olivelle 1977:97); and —according to Tryambaka — the self-immolation of the widow on her husband's funeral pyre (Sdhp, 42r.8-42v.8).

Tryambaka's second argument in favour of the practice is that 'dying with one's husband (bhartranumaranam) is recommended for women because it brings great rewards.'45 Although not spelled out, the crucial issue here is whether the ritual act of sahagamana is naimittika (i.e. required by the particular 'occasion'; in this case, by the husband's death) or kāmya (i.e. to be performed only if one desires the rewards accruing to the action; cf. nitya, naimittika and kāmya in the context of ritual baths, section IIA, p.82). If it is naimittika, the widow must join her husband on his pyre; if it is kāmya, she only needs to do so if she wants to enjoy the 'great rewards' promised by the scriptures. Tryambaka evidently admits that sahagamana is a kāmya act and therefore entirely a matter for the individual widow to decide. However, his repeated assertion that it is to be recommended (ślāghyam, praśastah), together with his daunting descriptions of the only alternative open to the widow who remains alive (see below, pp.298-304), makes his own opinion on the question abundantly clear.

He proceeds to quote numerous ślokas describing the 'great rewards' in store for the pious widow who chooses to die. I have selected some of the more memorable examples. 'The husband is to be followed always (sahānuyātavy[aḥ]): like the body by its shadow, like the moon by moonlight, like a thundercloud by

^{45.} mahāphalakatvād api bhartranumaranam strīnām ślāghyam // Sdhp.

lightning.'46 'There is no doubt that the woman who follows (anuvrajanti) her husband gladly from his house to the cremation ground attains with every step the reward(s) of the horse-sacrifice. 47 'Just as the snake-catcher drags the snake from its hole by force, even so the virtuous wife (satī) snatches her husband from the demons of hell and takes him up to heaven.'48 'Yama's messengers recognize a virtuous wife (satīm) from afar and take to flight. Even if her husband has been an evil man, they let go of him at once, exclaiming, "When we see a devoted wife (pativratām) hurtling towards us (to rescue her husband), we messengers (of Death) are less afraid of fire and lightning than we are of her!" '49 'There are 3½ crores of hairs on a person's body: she who dies with (anugacchati) her husband will dwell in heaven for the same length of time.'50 '(Even in the case of) a husband who has entered into hell (itself) and who-seized by the servants of Death and bound with terrible bonds - has arrived at the very place of torment (yātanāsthānam); (even if he is already) standing there, helpless and

46. tathā ca vyāsaḥ // strīnām anugamanaviṣaye // Sdhp.42v.4-5. bhartā sahānuyātavyo dehavac chāyayā sadā / candramā jyotsnayā yadvad vidyutvān vidyutā yathā // Sdhp.42v.5-6 (Vyāsa) < Nirn.438 (sadānuyātavyo for sahānuyātavyo; striyā for sadā). See also Saha.IV.1b (as Nirn.; Sk.P.).

47. anuvrajantī bhartāram grhāt pitrvanam mudā / pade pade 'svame-dhasya phalam prāpnoty asamśayam // Sdhp.42v.6 (Vyāsa) < Sk.P.III.2.7.53; Nirn.438 (anuvrajati for anuvrajantī; grhān nihsaranam for grhāt pitrvanam).

See also Sahā.IV.1b (as Nirn.; Sk.P.).

48. vyālagrāhī yathā vyālam balād uddharate bilāt / evam utkrsya daityebhyah patim svargam nayet satī // Sdhp.42v.6-7 (Vyāsa) < Sk.P.III.2.7.54 (utkramya dūtebhyah for utkrsya daityebhyah; vrajet for nayet); Par.M.II.i. p.57 (evam strī patim uddhrtya tenaiva saha modate). For the first half-śloka only (bilād for balād; balāt for bilāt), see Mit. on Yājñ.I.86 (Ang.); Apar. on Yājñ.I.87 (Vyāsa); Dh.kośa I.ii.pp.1111,1116,1117; Sahā.I.1.

49. yamadūtāḥ palāyante satīm ālokya dūrataḥ / api duṣkṛtakarmāṇaṃ samutsṛjya ca tatpatim // na tathā bibhimo vahner na tathā vidyuto yathā/āpatantīm samālokya vayam dūtāḥ pativratām // Sdhp.42v.7-9 (Vyāsa) < Sk.P.III.2.7.55a (first half-śloka only; tām ālokya pativratām for satīm ālokya

dūratah).

50. parāśaro 'pi// tisraḥ kotyo 'rdhakoṭi ca yāni romāni mānuṣe/ tāval kālam vaset svarge bhartāram yānugacchati // Sdhp.43r.1-2 (Par.) < Par.Sm. IV.32; Mit. on Yājū.I.86 (lomāni for romāni; Śankh., Ang.); Dh.kośa I.ii. p.1115 (lomāni for romāni; tāvanty abdāni sā for tāvat kālam vaset; Ang.). Cf. Apar.p.110.

wretched, quivering (with fear) because of his evil deeds;⁵¹ even if he is a brahmin-killer or the murderer of a friend, or if he is ungrateful for some service done for him—(even then) a woman who refuses to become a widow (avidhavā nārī) can purify him: in dying, she takes him with her.'52 Tryambaka concludes that 'according to established custom as shown in the eloquent statements (given above), this (act of) dying with (one's husband; anumaraṇam)—when put into practice by a devoted wife (pativratayā)—confers great blessings on both (wife and husband).'53

Tryambaka now considers the rewards accruing to the bad wife. 'If (this act of dying with one's husband is) put into practice by a sinful woman, it brings about the destruction of that sin.'54 The quotation that follows is quite clear. 'Women who, due to their wicked minds, have previously (i.e. until then) despised their husbands, and who have always behaved disagreeably towards those husbands, who (though) being of that kind (yet) at the (appropriate) time perform the (ritual act of) dying with their husbands (bhartrānumaraṇam) — whether (they do this) of their own free will, or out of anger, or even out of fear — all of them are purified (of sin).'55 This is the scriptural justification for forcing women to burn themselves. Whatever their reason for doing so, whatever the past

51. vyāsaḥ // yadi praviṣṭo narakam baddhah pāśaih sudāruṇaiḥ /sam-prāpto yātanāsthānam gṛhīto yamakinkaraih / tiṣṭhate vivaśo dīno vepamānaḥ svakarmabhiḥ // Sdhp.43r.4-5 (Vyāsa) < Apar. on Yājñ.I.87 (veṣṭhamānaḥ for vepamānaḥ; Vyāsa); Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1111 (as Apar.); Par.M.II.i.p.57 (as Apar.) Cf. Sahā.I.7 (dīno 'ṇḍa bhujyamānaḥ for dīno vepamānaḥ).

52. brahmaghno vā krtaghno vā mitraghno vā bhavet patih/ punāty avidhavā nārī tam ādāya mṛtā tu yā // Sdhp.43r.5-6 (Vyāsa) < Mit. on Yājā.I.86; Par.M.II.i.p.57; Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1111 (brahmaghne vā krtaghne vā mitraghne yac ca duṣkṛtam/ bhartuḥ punāty sā nārī tam ādāya mṛtā tu yā; Vyāsa). Cf. Apar.I.87; Mit. on Yājā.I.72; Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1116 (Ang.).

53. idam cānumaranam pativratayānusthitam saduktarītyā ubhayoh śreyohetuh// Sdhp.43r.6-7. Cf. Par.M.II.i.p.57-8 (cānugamanam for cānumaranam; dampatyor ubhayoh for ubhayoh).

54. pāpīyasyānusthitam cet pāpakṣayahetuḥ // Sdhp.43r.7. Cf. Par.M.II.i.

p.58 (°hetur bhavati for hetuh).
55. tathā ca saṃgrahe // bhārate // Sdhp.43r.7. avamatya ca yā[h] pūrvaṃ patiṃ duṣṭena cetasā / vartante yāś ca satataṃ bhartṃāṃ pratikūlagāḥ // bhartrānumaraṇaṃ kāle yāḥ kurvanti tathāvidhāḥ / kāmāt krodhād bhayād

deeds of either husband or wife; the sacrifice purifies both of them. As a result of this (ruling),' Tryambaka concludes, 'when sahagamana is performed by a woman who has done wrong—that is, what her husband did not like (cf. section V)—throughout her lifetime, (then) it is said to have the quality of a prāyaścitta.'56 In this sense, it is the ultimate, and only effective, prāyaścitta for the bad wife.

As Tryambaka admits, however, this conclusion conflicts with the special rulings relating to the *kali* age (Sdhp.43v.1-3; cf. *kalivarjya*, PVK III. p.926-68). One of these is that the rite of atonement that culminates in death (*maraṇāntikaprāyaścitta*) is prohibited in the *kali* age. The quotation is unambiguous. 'These duties (i.e. those listed in the previous unquoted passages) are to be avoided in the *kali* age, say learned men; as is the prescribing to brahmins of any rite of atonement (*prāyaścitta*) that culminates in death.'57 Tryambaka merely sidesteps the problem, remarking that whether or not the bad wife should perform *sahagamana* to wipe out her sins is best left to great men to decide (*kartavyam na kartavyam iti mahadbhir vivecanīyam*; Sdhp.43v.3).

Tryambaka's weakness as a mīmāmsaka is evident. For there are two crucial issues here: whether or not sahagamana is really a prāyaścitta for the bad wife; and, if so, whether this particular maranāntikaprāyaścitta is in fact prohibited in the kali age. Tryambaka argues neither well. Instead, he embarks on a lengthy (and poorly structured) explanation of why it is important for a wife to behave properly during her and her husband's lifetime (Sdhp.43v. 3-44v.3). If there is no maranāntikaprāyaścitta for the errant wife, then she cannot escape the torments awaiting her in the next world. For—according to a variety of quotations—even if she has bathed in all the sacred places, the bad wife will go to the hell of dung and

vāpi sarvāḥ pūtā bhavanty uta // Sdhp.43r.7.-9 (Mbh.) < Sm.M.I.p.163 (pratikūlatāh for °gāh; bhayān mohāt for bhayād vāpi; Vyāsaśātātapaḥ); Par.M.II. i.p.58 (as Sm.M. except tu for ca; bhavanti tāḥ for bhavanty uta; Mbh.); Mbh.XIII appendix 1 no.15, 4660-3, 4665-6. Cf. Sahā.1.2 (as Par.M. except ca for tu).

^{56.} anena jīva[nada]šāyām bhartrvipriyam pāpam kṛtavatyāḥ sahagamanam prāyaścittatvenoktam // Sdhp.43r.9-10 (following the emendation of PT).

^{57.} kalau yuge tv imān dharmān varj[y]ān āhur manīṣiṇaḥ/ prāyaścitta-vidhānaṃ ca viprāṇāṃ maraṇāntikam // Sdhp.43v.1-2 < Sm.A.p.2, ślokas 25b, 21b.

urine (vinmūtre narake), or burning oil (taptatailanarakam); she will be a widow, or a bitch, or a sow in her next life; she will be infested with worms in this one; and so on. Since statements such as these make no reference to any other prāyaścitta that can wipe out the effects of a wife's bad behaviour (prāyaścittāntarābhāvāc ca sarvathā; Sdhp.44r.10-44v.1), Tryambaka suggests that there is none (that is, he implies, none other than sahagamana). The wife's only hope is to worship and placate her husband at every turn. The inadequacy of Tryambaka's reasoning on this point becomes clear when one compares it with, for example, that in the Mitākṣarā on Yājñ.III.226. Tryambaka's intention, however, is transparent. He is evidently suggesting that, despite the rulings regarding the kaliage, sahagamana is in fact the safest course of action for the not-so-perfect wife.

Tryambaka raises one final question. 'Now the objection may be made (nanu) that this (practice of) dying with one's husband (anugamanam) is applicable to ksatriya women and so on (i.e. to the lower varnas), but prohibited to brahmin women.'58 Several quotations are produced in favour of this view. For example, 'as a result of Brahmā's instruction, following one's husband when he has died (mrtānugamanam) is not appropriate) for brahmin women; but, for the other varnas, this is held to be the supreme duty for women.'59 Or, 'the brahmin woman who does not die with her husband, (even though she is) distracted by grief, obtains the goal of renunciation (pravrajyā; glossed by Tryambaka as brahmacaryam; i.e. vidhavādharma, see below); (whereas) by dying, she becomes one who has committed suicide (ātmaghātinī; i.e. she incurs the sin thereof).'60 According to Tryambaka, however, such statements in fact prohibit brahmin women from ascending

^{58.} nanu idam anugamanam kṣatriyānyādīnām bhavatu / brāhmanyās tu niṣiddham // Sdhp.44v.3-4.

^{59.} tathā ca paithīnasiḥ // mṛtānugamanam nāsti brāhmaṇyā brahma-sāsanāt/itareṣām tu varṇāṇām strīdharmo 'yam para[h] smṛtaḥ // Sdhp.44v.4-5 (Paithīnasi; PT gives dharmo 'yam paramaḥ smṛtaḥ) < Apar.p.112 (Paithīnasi); Mit. on Yājā.1.86 (itareṣu tu varṇeṣu tapaḥ paramaṃ smṛtaḥ); Dh.kośa I.ii. p.1115 (as Mit.: Paithīnasi). Cf. Sahā.III.1.

^{60.} vyāghrapādah na mriyeta samam bhartrā brāhmanī šokamohitā / pravrajyāgatim āpnoti maranād ātmaghātinī // Sdhp.44v.9-45r.1 (Vyāghrapāda) < Apar.p.112 (Vyāghrapāda); Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1117.

a separate pyre (pṛṭhakcityārohaṇaparatvāt; Sdhp.45r.2-3). The implication here is that the chief or brahmin wife, the patnī, should join her husband on his pyre (anvārohaṇa) while the junior wives of lower varṇa should burn on separate ones (anumaraṇa). As the quotation from Ušanas explains, 'a brahmin woman should not go (i.e. die) by ascending (samāruhya) a separate pyre, but for other women this is the ancient duty for wives.'61

Tryambaka's conclusion is obvious. 'The religious duty (or practice) of dying with one's husband is commended (praśastah) for women,'62 whether brahmins or not, whether good or bad.

The religious duties of the widow (vidhavādharmāḥ; Sdhp.45r. 5-48v.6)

Judging by his previous section, Tryambaka believes that the best course of action open to the widow is that of dying with her husband. The way in which he opens this section reinforces that view.

'If for some reason, by some stroke of fate (daivayogāt), she does not follow her husband (anuyāti), then her virtue (śīlam) must be protected; for if her virtue is lost, she falls down (to hell).'63 More important perhaps, her loss of virtue (śīlam) causes her husband to fall from heaven (svargāt patih patati; i.e. into hell), and her parents and brothers too (Sdhp.45r.7-8; Āśv. in the Pārijāta). The 'stroke of fate' implies that the wife in question is pregnant, menstruating or caring for a small infant when her husband dies (see Par.M.II.i.p.58-9; Sm.M.I.p.162; Sahā.I.8,etc.; cf.PVK II.i.p.633). Of these, the menstruating woman may burn herself after her ritual bath on the fourth day (cf. pp.286-7).

Tryambaka then describes the conduct that will ensure that the

62. evam anugamanadharmah strīnām prašastah // Sdhp.45r.5.

^{61.} tathā ca ušanā // prthakcitim samāruhya na viprā gantum arhati / anyā-sām caiva nārīnām strīdharmo 'yam sanātanah // iti // Sdhp.45r.3-4 (Ušanas) < Par.M.II.i.p.56 (parah smrtah for sanātanah); Sm.M.I.p.162 (as Par.M.; Ušanas); Apar.p.112 (as Par.M.); Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1113 (Ušanas). Cf. Mit. on Yājñ.I.86; Sahā.I.8 (as Par.M.).

^{63.} pārijāt[e] āśvalāyanaḥ// anuyāti na bhartāram daivayogāt kathamcana/ tathāpi śīlam samrakṣyam śīlabhangāt pataty adhaḥ// Sdhp.45r.6-7 (Āśv. in the Pārijāta) < ?

widow's virtue is safe. For the rest of her days, she should live the subdued and restricted life of the celibate student (ksāntā niyatā brahmacārinī; Sdhp.45r.9, Manu (Manu V.158) as opposed to the life of the married woman with all its outward signs of happiness and ornamentation (cf. section IIA, pp.88-101). She should willingly mortify her body (kāmam tu kṣaped deham), living on flowers, roots and fruits (Sdhp.45v.10, Manu (Manu V.157); or, alternatively, on fruits, vegetables and barley (Sdhp.45v.3, Asv.). She should eat only once a day, and in addition she should perform regular severe fasts (Sdhp.45r.1-3, Āśv. (Sm.M.I.p.160, etc.). She should wear undyed (vrktam) garments, no bodice (kañcukam), no perfumes (gandhadravya) or unguents (udvartanam; Sdhp.46r. 6-8, Asv.; cf. section IIA, pp.88-101). If she binds her hair on top of her head (kabarībandha), she causes her husband to be bound in the other world (bhartrbandhāya jāyate, Sdhp.46r.5, Āśv.; cf. section IIA, pp.96-101). She should sleep on the ground (bhūsayanam kāryam), never on a 'high bed' (paryanka; Sdhp.45v.4-5, Āśv. < Sm.M.I.p.160, etc.; cf. section IID, pp.236-45). She should not even mention the name of another man (Sdhp. 45v. 10-11, Manu (Manu V.157), nor have any sort of contact with him (Tryambaka's gloss; Sdhp.45v.11-46r.1).

In fact, her lifestyle is repeatedly compared with that of the ascetic or Vedic student (for similar associations in south India today, see Fuller and Logan 1985:89ff.). For example, 'the ascetic (or renouncer; yati), the celibate student (brahmacārī) and the widow should avoid (chewing) betel (cf. sections IIA, pp.96-101, and IIC, pp.229-33, anointing (their bodies with oils or unguents; cf. section IIA, pp.96-101), and eating off copper or brass vessels (cf. section IIC, pp.217-21; Yatidh.57.79-92; Olivelle 1977:37, 168).'64 In other examples, the parallel is made by specifically calling the widow's way of life (vidhavāvrata) 'renunciation' (e.g. pravrajyā; see above, note 60) or, in the widest sense, 'the celibate life' (e.g. brahmacārinī, Sdhp.45r.9, Manu (Manu V.158; brahmacaryam, Sdhp.46r.4, Āp.; etc.). But the widow may never leave

^{64.} saṃvartaḥ // tāmbūlābhyañjanaṃ caiva kāṃsyapātre ca bhojanaṃ / yatiś ca brahmacārī ca vidhavā ca vivarjayet // iti // Sdhp.46v.1-2 (Saṃvarta) (Sm.C.II.p.602 (Pracetas); Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1117 (taṃbūlābhyañjane for °nam; Pracetas)

home as a true renunciate. Tryambaka explains. 'Forsaking sons, brothers and other (male relatives) after her husband (dies), and living independently, incurs condemnation.'65 For a woman may never act independently (see above, p.276, note 9); as a widow, her dependence is simply transferred from husband to sons. Indeed, 'the woman (i.e. widow) who is (truly) devoted to her husband should not do anything without (first) asking her sons.'66

Devotion to one's husband, even after his death, thus remains the key point of the widow's life. If she has no son (putrābhāve; Tryambaka's gloss), she should make funeral offerings (tarpaṇam... kāryam) to her husband daily, and to his father and grandfather (Sdhp. 45v.5-6, Āśv.). 'She may worship Viṣṇu (but only) if she thinks (all the time) of her husband, not otherwise. She should meditate on her husband alone, always; that is, (on her husband) in the auspicious guise of (the god) Viṣṇu.'67 'For she (i.e. the widow) who takes refuge in the religious duty of the virtuous wife (satī-dharmam) should always worship her husband, bringing him to mind by means of a portrait or a clay model.'68

Not surprisingly, Tryambaka makes no mention of or allowance for the remarriage of widows. However, he does raise the question of niyoga, a practice much discussed in commentarial and digest writing. The point at issue is whether or not the widow of a man who dies without a son may, after her husband's death, have sexual intercourse with another man 'appointed' (niyukta) to produce that son for him. The problem is caused once again by a conflict of rulings. On the one hand, a widow should not even mention the name of another man (see above), let alone have intercourse with

^{65.} bhartranantaranı putrabhrātrādīn parityajya svātantryenāvasthāne nindāpi // Sdhp.46r.9. Cf.Sdhp.46r.10~46v.1 (Yājñ.) < Yājñ.1.86.

^{66.} aprstvā tu sutān kimein na kuryād bhartṛtatparā // Sdhp.46r.8-9 (Āśv.)<?

^{67.} āśvalāyanaḥ // Sdhp.45v.1. viṣṇos tu pūjanaṃ kāryaṃ patibuddhyā na cānyathā / patim eva sadā dhyāyed viṣṇurūpadharam śivam // Sdhp.45v.7-8 (Āśv.) < Sm.M.I.p.161 (param for śivam; Vyāsa); Sk.P.III.2.7.70 (supūjanaṃ for tu pūjanaṃ; harim for śivam).

^{68.} harivamše vidhavādharmān prakrtya // Sdhp.45v.8. patim samkalpayitvā [tu] citrastham vāpi mrnmayam / tasya pūjām sadā kuryāt satīdharmam upāšritā // Sdhp.45v.9-10 (following PT, I have inserted tu to fit the metre; Hariv.) < ? Not in Hariv. crit. edn. index.

him. On the other hand, a woman is at fault if she does not bear a son; and a man without a son is barred from heaven.

Tryambaka presents the pūrvapaksa argument in favour of niyoga first. A blanket prohibition on sexual intercourse with a man other than one's husband is inappropriate (anupapannam) 'because even though blame is attached to sexual intercourse with another man for the sake of pleasure, it is necessary for the purpose of (producing) a son.'69 The evidence for this is derived from the story of Jaratkaru in the Mahabharata. Threatened with the extinction of their line (samtanapraksayāt), and the dire consequence that they will all fall into hell, Jaratkaru's ancestors entreat him to produce a son (Sdhp.47[1]r.2-3; cf. Mbh.I.13.9-34). For 'there is no heaven for one who has no son.'70

The next step in the argument in favour of niyoga is the ruling that 'in the absence of a natural (aurasa) son, it is necessary that a ksetraja son should be acquired.'71 In this context, the 'field' (ksetra) is the wife and the 'owner of the field' (ksetrin) is her husband. The son 'born of his field' (ksetraja) is the son born to a man's wife by another man on his behalf; whether the husband in question is dead or incapacitated (e.g. by impotence, disease or a curse). The sower or 'owner of the seed' (bījin) is the man 'appointed' (niyogin) for this task. For the traditional list of the kinds of sons deemed acceptable for the two crucial purposes of making śrāddha offerings to the ancestors (pindadāne) and dividing the inheritance (amsagrahane), Tryambaka quotes at length from Yājñavalkya (Sdhp.47[1]r.5.5-9 (Yājñ.II.128-32). According to this quotation, the ksetraja comes third in order of importance; that is, after the son born to a man by his own wife (i.e. married according to the proper religious ritual; auraso dharmapatnījah), and the son of a putrikā daughter (putrikāsutah, Sdhp.47[1]r.5-6; for a discussion of the putrikā, see section IIB, pp.146-7). Tryambaka draws further evidence from the story of Parasurama in the Mahabharata. When Parasurama killed all the male kṣatriyas, their widows asked brahmins to produce sons with them on behalf of their dead hus-

^{69.} bhogārtham parapurusangasya ninditatve 'pi putrārtham tasyāvašya-

katvāt // Sdhp.47(1)r.1-2. 70. nāputrasya hi loko 'sti // iti śrutyā ... // Sdhp.47(1)r.2 (śruti) < Sm.C. III.ii.p.595 (yat tu śrutāv uktam nāputrasya loko 'stīti).

^{71.} aurasābhāve kṣetrajasyāvašyam sampādanīyatvāt // Sdhp.47(1)r.3-4.

bands (Sdhp.47[1]r.9-13 (Mbh.I.98.3b-5). Finally, Tryambaka cites the well-known examples of Kuntī, Ambikā, Ambālikā and so on, all of whom had sons by the practice of *niyoga* (Sdhp.47[1]r. 13-14; cf. section V, pp.309-10).

According to Tryambaka, however, the pūrvapaksa position is untenable. Only two kinds of son are acceptable in the kali age: the aurasa and the adopted son (dattaka, datta; Sdhp.47[1]r.14-47[1] v.2). This in turn raises the question of whether, if a man dies without a son, his widow may adopt on his behalf. According to Tryambaka, she may, but only if her husband gives his consent to adoption before he dies (Sdhp.47[1]v.2-5). For, according to Baudhayana, 'a woman may not give or take a son except with the consent of her husband.'72 If he dies without giving his consent, she may not adopt; but neither may she resort to the practice of nivoga. Instead, she must devote herself totally to the celibate life already described (brahmacaryavrata, vidhavāvrata). Tryambaka quotes Manu. 'Many thousands of men who have remained celibate (brahmacārīnām) from their boyhood, and who are (therefore) without sons, have (nonetheless) gone to heaven without (first) continuing their family line. (Similarly,) when her husband dies, the virtuous woman (sādhvī strī) who has taken up the celibate life (brahmacaryavrate) goes to heaven even if she has no son, just like those male celibates (brahmacārinah).'73

In section V, however, the question of *niyoga* is approached from another angle altogether, and with the opposite conclusion: if a man wants his wife to practise *niyoga* then what is strictly speaking wrong becomes right (see section V, pp.309-10).

Tryambaka also discusses the interesting question of the im-

72. tathā ca taccheṣe bodhāyanah // na tu strī putram dadyāt pratigrhnīyād vānyatrabhyanujñānād bhartuḥ // iti // Sdhp.47 (1)v.4-5 (Baudhāyanagrhya-śeṣasūtra) < Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1384 (Baudhāyanagrhya-śeṣasūtra; °ānujñānād for °ābhyanujñānād) and p.1273 (as p.1384 except tu omitted; Vas.); Vas.15.5 (as Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1273).

73. tathā ca manuḥ // Sdhp.47(1)v.7. anekāni sahasrāni kaumārabrahma-cārīnām / divam gatāny aputrānām akrtvā kulasamtatim // mrte bhartari sādhvī strī brahmacaryavrate sthitā / svargam gacchaty aputrāpi yathā te brahmacāriṇaḥ // Sdhp.47(1)v.8-10 (Manu) < Manu V.159-60 (kumāra for kaumāra; viprānām for aputrānām; brahmacarye vyavasthitā for brahmacaryavrate sthitā); Sm.C.III.iii.p.595 (Manu; as Manu except kaumāra for kumāra); Dh.kośa I.ii.p.1062-3 (as Manu; Manu).

purity and inauspiciousness traditionally ascribed to widows. The examples he quotes are typical. 'Just as the body, bereft of life, in that moment becomes impure, so the woman bereft of her husband is always impure, even if she has bathed properly. Of all inauspicious things, the widow is the most inauspicious; there can never be any success after seeing a widow (cf. section IIA, pp.54-7). The wise man should avoid even her blessing (tadāśiṣam api)—excepting only that of his mother—for it is devoid of all auspiciousness, like the poison of a snake (āśīviṣopamām).'74

According to Tryambaka, however, such remarks apply only to the widow who does not behave as she ought (ācārahīnāviṣayam; Sdhp.47[2]r.4-5). For even if she becomes a widow, the pativratā—'who is devoted to (good) conduct' (caryāparā), 'fully committed to her religious duty' (dharmasamayukta), and 'who follows (the proper path of) widowhood' (vaidhavyam palayet) — earns a three-fold reward: she is both happy and auspicious (śubhā) in this life; she obtains the pleasures of heaven (svargabhogān), or indeed the same heaven as her husband (patilokam); and she marries that same husband again in her next life (Sdhp.47[2]r.5-7). Theoretically at least, if she behaves as she should (see above), the dread inauspiciousness with which the scriptures threaten her are cancelled out. But if she cannot do this, she would presumably be well-advised to die with her husband.

Tryambaka finally raises the question of whether or not the widow should shave her head. In south India today, widows are in fact traditionally tonsured after the funeral (cf. Fuller and Logan 1985:95) but this is a late development calculated to bring the widow in line with other 'renouncers' (cf. Yatidh.21.39,104-5; Olivelle 1977:38,104-6). Tryambaka argues that '(rulings that prescribe) shaving the head (siraso vapanam) apply to brahmin women; (those prescribing) keeping the hair (long apply) to women of other castes.'75 The quotation is taken from the Mahābhārata where

^{74.} vyāsaḥ // jīvahīno yathā dehaḥ kṣaṇād aśucitam vrajet / bhartṛhīnā tathā yoṣit susnātāpy aśuciḥ sadā || amangalebhyaḥ sarvebhyo vidhavā hy atyamangalam / vidhavādarśanāt siddhih kāpi jātu na jāyate // vihāya mātaram caikām sarvamangalavarjitām / tadāśiṣam api prājāas tyajed āśīviṣopamām // iti // Sdhp.47[2]r.1-4 (Vyāsa) < Sk.P.III.2.7.49-51 (dehī for dehaḥ; syād for hy atyº; kvāpi for kāpi; sarvā mangalavarjitāḥ for sarvamangalavarjitām).

^{75.} śiraso vapanam brāhmanīvisayam / itarajātīyastrīnām keśadhāranam eva // Sdhp.47(2)r.8.

Dhṛtarāṣṭra's widowed daughters-in-law (i.e. kṣatriya women) are described as having dishevelled hair (asīmantaśiroruhā[h], lit. 'without a parting'; Sdhp.47[2]r.8-10 (Mbh.XV.32.15).

In contexts other than widowhood (e.g. for certain prāyaścitta rituals when performed by unmarried girls or women whose husbands are alive), the phrase 'shaving the head' (śiraso mundanam) is taken to mean simply cutting two fingers' breadth (aṅgulidvayam) off the ends of the hair (Sdhp.47[2]v.1-3; cf. Bhardwaj 1983:154). In fact, as Tryambaka explains, the four main prohibitions relating to the performance by women of certain aspects (or component elements; aṅga) of vratas include a prohibition on shaving the head (keśavapanam). The other three concern sleeping or staying far from home (dūre śayanāsanam); staying in the cow-pen at night, or following cows about in dangerous places during the day; and wearing deerskins (ajinam vās[aḥ]; Sdhp.47[2]v.6-8).

Tryambaka concludes that three kinds of women merit the name of pativratā: the wife who dies before her husband (bhartuh pūrvaṃ mṛtā) and patiently waits for him to join her; the wife who follows her husband onto the funeral pyre (bhartrā sahānugatā), exemplified by Mādrī; and the wife who after her husband's death lives an ascetic and celibate life for the rest of her days (yāvajjīvaṃ brahmacaryādinā yuktā), exemplified by Kuntī. The first kind of wife is the auspicious ideal. But if the husband dies first, inauspiciousness and misfortune may be offset by either of the two options open to his widow. While the second alternative is deemed safer than the third—given the nature of women and the difficulties of leading a truly ascetic life—all three earn the ultimate reward of reaching the same heaven as their husbands (patisālokyam; Sdhp.48r.9-48v.6).

V. Tryambaka's Conclusion: Obedient Service to one's Husband is the Primary Religious Duty (of a wife)

(patiśuśrūṣaṇaṃ mukhyo dharmah; Sdhp.48v. 7–88r. 1).

Tryambaka returns to the point at which he began. 'Obedient service to one's husband (bhartṛśuśrūṣaṇam, Sdhp.1v.2; patiśuśrūṣaṇam, Sdhp.48v.7) is the primary religious duty enjoined by sacred tradition for women' (see section I, introductory verse 1, p.29, note 2). In this section, he defines 'obedient service to one's husband' in three ways. First, a wife should serve her husband 'without regard for her own life' (prāṇānām avigaṇanayā). Secondly, she should accept whatever her husband does 'even the sale of herself' (ātma-vikraya'). Thirdly, she should obey his will 'even when it conflicts with other religious duties' (itaradharmopamardena). Most of the rest of the treatise is taken up with some short and some extremely long examples of these three aspects of patišuśrūṣaṇam. I shall deal briefly with the most important ones.

As suggested in my introduction, this unwieldy section was probably intended for the ears of the young daughters-in-law of the household (cf. pp.9-10). This would explain the long quotations from well-known stories and the marked lack of any real argument. It was presumably hoped that such lengthy retellings of favourite and traditional tales would inspire impressionable young women

to conform to the highest ideals of strīdharma.

Without regard for her own life (prāṇānām avigaṇanayā; Sdhp.48v.8-55r.8)

When Sītā sees Rāma and Laksmana being carried off by a powerful demon, she begs the demon to release them and take her instead

1. patišušrūsanam tu prānānām avigananayā kartavyatvāt[/] bhartrkrtātmavikrayasyāngīkartavyatvāt[/] itaradharmopamardena ca kartavyatvāt[/] patišušrūsanam mukhyo dharmah // Sdhp.48v.7-8 with insert. (Sdhp.48v.8-49r. 1; Sdhp.48v.9-10 < Rām.III.4.3b).

In the story of the brahmin whose life is forfeit to the crane-demon, Baka, the brahmin's wife begs to be allowed to go in his place (Sdhp.49r.1-3). As she explains, 'this is the supreme and everlasting duty of women in this world: (the wife) should pursue what is good for her husband even (at the cost of) abandoning her life.'2

The story of the female pigeon caught by a cruel and wicked bird-catcher is told at surprising length (Sdhp.49r.3-55r.8; Sdhp.49r.5-55r.8 < Mbh.XII.141.1-145.18, with few omissions, some variants).

It includes several ślokas on the virtues of the pativratā. For example, for a man who has fallen on bad times (kṛcchragatasya), there is no friend (mitram), no medicine (bheṣajam), no relation (bandhuḥ) and no goal (or refuge; gatiḥ) like a wife (Sdhp.51r.3-4 < Mbh.XII.142.9b-10a, variant).

After a fierce storm in the forest, the bird-catcher puts the female pigeon in a cage, and then by chance takes refuge at the foot of the tree in which the pigeons live (śaranam yāmi yāny asmin daivatāni; Sdhp.50v.2-3 < Mbh.XII.141.26b). Despite her predicament, the female pigeon entreats her husband to pursue the householder's religious duty of offering hospitality to the guest (i.e. the birdcatcher who has come to their tree). The pigeon is inspired by his wife's words. He brings fire and fuel to keep the man warm and then, since he has no store of food to offer, he enters the fire himself in order to provide the guest with a meal. Impressed, the bird-catcher resolves to abandon his wicked ways, become an ascetic, and embark upon the great journey unto death (mahāprasthāna; i.e. a maranāntikaprāyaścitta, cf. section IV, pp.295-7). The pigeon's wife is released from her cage. At once, she declares the futility of remaining alive without her husband and throws herself into the same fire. A heavenly vehicle (vimana) takes both her and her husband to heaven. Eventually, the bird-catcher follows their example: he deliberately enters a forest fire, dies, and ascends to heaven.

In the Mahābhārata, the story is told to Yudhisthira by Bhīsma to

^{2.} etad dhi paramam nāryāḥ kāryam loke sanātanam / prānān api parityajya yad bhartrhitam ācaret // Sdhp.49r.2-3 < Mbh.I.146.4.

demonstrate the householder's supreme duty to offer hospitality to anyone who asks for it (cf. section IIC, pp.183–210; and, incidentally, to describe the heavenly rewards awaiting the devoted wife who dies on her husband's funeral pyre (cf. section IV, pp.293–5). Tryambaka uses it to illustrate the first subpoint of his conclusion: that the good wife should serve her husband without concern for her own safety.

Accepting (even) her husband's sale of her (bhartrkṛtātma-vikrayāngīkāraḥ; Sdhp.55r.8, sodhapatra ³ < Mārk.P.VIII. 51b-53, 55b, 57, 59-60, 63-6; with variants)

The inserted passage is an extract from the story of Hariścandra as told in the Mārkandeyapurāna. When King Hariścandra inadvertently crosses a brahmin ascetic, the ascetic demands not only his kingdom and property but, over and above that, a sacrificial fee. In order to pay the latter, Hariścandra auctions his wife as a slave in the public market. An old brahmin buys her and drags her off by the hair (keśeṣv athādāya nṛpapatnīm akarṣata). Instead of complaining, the queen begs the old man to buy her young son as well so that she can continue to take care of him.

In the context of the Mārkandeyapurāna, this story demonstrates that a man should put his religious duty to brahmins even above his affection for his wife and child. An extremely popular Buddhist

^{3.} In MS T₁, the story of the pigeons and the bird-catcher ends with an omission mark and the word sodhapatra in the margin (... iti// adhyāyaḥ// // Sdhp.55r.8). The text itself continues with the example of the third aspect of palisuśrūsanam (itaradharmopamardenāpi . . // Sdhp.55r.8). The śodhapatra cited is now missing but it is clear from MS T₂ that it was inserted between folios 55 and 56. For the scribe of T_2 copies T_1 as it stands (... iti // On reaching adhyāyah // śodhapatra // // itaradharmopamardenāpi . . . //). On reaching the end of T₁ folio 55v, he copies the sodhapatra without a break: pādyam ācamanīyam vai dadau bhartus tadāsanam || bhartrkrtātmavikrayāngīkāro . . . || T₁ 55v.10/T₂ 42v.11). At the end of the Hariscandra story (... sahai-kashar kastham abandhayat // iti //), he drops back into the pigeon story in the middle of a line: syu[h] sarvadevatāh...// (cf. T_1 54r.2). He then tells both the rest of that story and the entire Hariscandra episode (T₂ 44r.7-44v.5) again. The Mysore MS (M) makes no such mistake: after the pigeon story, it tells the story of Hariscandra, thus incorporating the sodhapatra of T_1 as intend. intended. Following MS M and PT, I have assumed the same.

version of this idea may be found in the story of Prince Vessantara who gives away all he has, including his wife, Maddī, and their two children. We are told that Maddī accepted her treatment without resentment or question, saying that her lord and master could give her away, sell or even kill her if he chose (cf. Cone and Gombrich 1977:75, § 570). Tryambaka's point is much the same: even in such extreme circumstances, the ideal wife thinks only of her duty to her husband and son.

Even if it conflicts with other duties (itaradharmopamardenāpi; Sdhp.55r.8-66v.3)

Tryambaka's main example tells the story of the ascetic Kauśika and the brahmin women (Sdhp.55r.11-58r.2 < Mbh.III.197.1-44; with variants, and some additional ślokas to be found in the footnotes of the critical edition).

While Kauśika is sitting at the foot of a tree reciting the Vedas, a female crane (or, more probably, egret; balākā) in the branches above inadvertently excretes on him. Kauśika is so angry that his thoughts alone cause the bird to drop dead. Filled with remorse, Kauśika then goes to a brahmin household to beg for food. The woman of the house welcomes him and is about to give him alms when her husband appears. She at once abandons Kauśika (brāhmanam vyapahāya tam) and attends to her husband, washing his feet, bringing him a seat, offering him food and drink, and so on. By the time she remembers to bring Kauśika his food, the ascetic is furious.

First, she placates him, explaining that her husband is her greatest god (bhartā me daivatam mahat). When Kauśika persists in his rage that she should worship her husband before the brahmin guest, she informs him briskly that she is no mere crane (nāham balākā; part of a śloka given only as a variant in the Mbh. crit. edn.), unaware of the importance of brahmins. But she has chosen the religious path of devoted service to her husband (patiśuśrūṣayā dharmaḥ). As a result, she regards her husband as 'the supreme god among all gods', whose law she must fulfil without question. It is through the merit she has gained thereby (śuśrūṣāyāḥ phalam paśya) that she knows all about the incident with the crane. She proceeds to reprove the

^{4.} daivateşv api sarveşu bhartā me daivatam param/aviseşena tasyāham kuryām dharmam dvijottama//Sdhp.57r.2-3<Mbh.III.197.29.

ascetic for failing to control his anger as a true brahmin should. Concluding that he does not really understand what religious duty means (na... dharmam vetsīti me maṭiḥ), she sends him to a hunter (vyādha) in Mithila for further instruction. Suitably chastened, Kauśika obeys.

The story demonstrates Tryambaka's point that, if two duties

conflict, service to one's husband comes first.

In order to stress that no other religious obligation may supersede the wife's primary duty towards her husband, Tryambaka also gives a number of separate quotations taken from a variety of sources (epic, purāṇa and dharmaśāstra; Sdhp.58r.2-60r.3). Most of these reiterate or support points raised elsewhere.

For example, 'there is no separate religious duty, vow or fast' (pṛthagdharmo na vratam nāpy upoṣaṇam) for a woman other than her devotion to her husband (Sdhp.55r.8-9, 58v.2-3, 58v.5-6; for a discussion of this issue, see sections I (pp.29-43) and IIB (pp.107-15). The husband is her god and her guru (bhartā devo gurur bhartā), religious duty, place of pilgrimage and vow all in one (dharmatīrthavratāni ca); hence she should abandon all eise and cleave only to him (Sdhp.55r.9-10). Just as śūdras should serve the higher varnas, so women should serve their own husbands; and they should never engage in japa recitation, austerities, oblations, religious donations, vows nor sacrificial ritual as long as their husbands live (Sdhp.58r. 3-5; see section IV, note 8). The auspicious epithets 'she who is devoted to religious duty' (dharmaparamā) and 'she who participates in her (husband's) religious duty (dharmabhāginī) are applied to the ideal wife who 'regards her husband as a god' (devavat . . .prapaśyati; Sdhp.59r.4-5); and so on.

Tryambaka concludes that, through devoted service to her husband, the good wife attains the merit of every religious act that he performs (tenaiva bhartrkṛtasarvadharmaphalāvaptiḥ; Sdhp.

59v.2ff.).

Tryambaka in fact goes even further: if her husband requires it, a woman should do even what is normally considered wrong (tadā-jñayā akāryam api kartavyam). This point is also made earlier in a passage attributed to Vijñāneśvara (Sdhp.60r.1). Tryambaka's evidence is drawn from two well-known stories in the Mahābhārata. First, he quotes at length from the conversation between Pāṇḍu and

Kuntī on the subject of *niyoga* (Sdhp.60r.4–61v.6 < Mbh.I.111. 30b-6; 112.3–5, 6b-c, 11–12a, 13–17, 19–28, 30–1; with variants).

While hunting in the forest, Pāṇḍu shoots a deer that turns out to be an ascetic. Since he has been killed in the act of mating, the ascetic curses Pāṇḍu that he too will die in the sexual act. Now unable to father children himself, Pāṇḍu asks Kuntī to find someone to act for him by the ancient custom of niyoga (see section IV, pp.300-2).

Tryambaka presents Pāṇḍu's arguments in favour of the practice but omits Kuntī's against it. In order to persuade her to his point of view, Pāṇḍu tells her of several virtuous women who have produced sons in this way: Śāradaṇḍāyinī (Sdhp.60r.8–60v.2), Madayantī (Sdhp.61r.6–7) and his own mother (Sdhp.61r.8). He also describes how Śvetaketu made it a sin on a par with foetus-murder (bhrūṇa-hatyākṛtaṃ pāpam) for a woman either to sleep with any man other than her husband or to refuse to conceive a child when appointed to do so by her husband (patyā niyuktā; Sdhp.61r.2–5). The important point, however, is not that niyoga may be within the law (in fact, in section IV, Trymbaka rules that it is not), but that the husband desires it. Twice Tryambaka repeats Pāṇḍu's crucial statement that 'those who know the law know that whatever a husband tells his wife (to do), whether it is lawful or even unlawful, she should do it.'5

Tryambaka's second illustration demonstrates that when a wife obeys her husband—even if that means doing something that is normally considered wrong (akāryakaræṇe 'pi)—not only is no sin at all incurred (na kevalaṃ doṣābhāvaḥ) but, on the contrary, the highest heaven is attained (kiṃ tūttamalokaprāptiś ca; Sdhp.61v.6-7, with insert). The story of Sudarśana is told here in full (Sdhp.61v.7-66v.1 < Mbh. XIII.2.1-95; with few omissions, some variants).

In the context of the Mahābhārata, as Tryambaka explains, the story is told by Bhīṣma when Yudhiṣṭhira asks him if any house-holder has ever conquered Death merely by practising his religious

^{5.} bhartā bhāryām rājaputri dharmyam vādharmyam eva vā / yad brūyāt tat tathā kāryam iti dharmavido viduh//Sdhp.60r.4-5; 61v.1-2 < Mbh.I. 113.27.

duty (dharmam āśritya). The lengthy preamble to the story explains how the beautiful Princess Sudarśanā, born into a noble and royal family, marries Agni and gives birth to Sudarśana. When Sudarśana marries Oghavatī, he takes a vow that he will conquer Death simply by being a householder (grhasthaś cāvajeṣyāmi mrtyum; Sdhp.63v.7< Mbh.XIII.2.40). He tells his wife that there is no more important religious duty for the householder than offering hospitality to guests (Sdhp.63v.10-64r.1; cf. section IIC, pp.183-210). Therefore, whether or not he is there himself, she should never refuse a guest anything (atitheḥ pratikūlam te na kartavyam kathamcana), even if it means offering herself (apy ātmanaḥ pradānena; Sdhp.63v. 8-10< Mbh.XIII.2.41-2).

One day, while Sudarśana is out collecting firewood, a brahmin comes to Oghavatī and asks for hospitality. She greets him in the usual way, then asks what he wants. Despite her attempts to dissuade him, the brahmin wants only herself (tvayā mamārthah . . . // pradānenātmano . . . kartum arhasi me priyam; Sdhp.64r.8-10 < Mbh.XIII.2.52-3). Remembering her husband's instructions, Oghavatī agrees. Meanwhile Sudarśana returns from the forest (and calls out to his wife; omitted). Since she is still in the brahmin's arms (lit. 'touched' by them; karābhyām tena viprena spṛṣṭā), she does not reply: considering herself polluted (literally 'left-over'), she is ashamed (ucchiṣṭā[s]mīti manvānā lajjitā; Sdhp.64v.4-5 < Mbh.XIII.2.60; for a discussion of ucchişta in the context of leftover' food, see section IIC, pp.221-7). The brahmin calls out to Sudarśana to explain. While Death waits poised with his iron club, Sudarśana throws aside anger and jealousy, bids the brahmin welcome, and calls the gods to witness the truth of his vow to offer everything he has to the guest (... tena satyena ...; Sdhp.64v. 7-65r.9 < Mbh.XIII.2.63-74; cf. Brown 1978). The air resounds with divine confirmations; Death is conquered; and the brahmin turns out to be god Dharma in disguise. Even Oghavatī's chastity is restored by Dharma's assurance that she has been perfectly protected by the combination of Sudarśana's virtues and the virtues of a woman who has truly taken the vow of her husband (raksitā lvadgunair esā pativratagunais tathā; Sdhp.65v.4-6<Mbh.XIII. 2.80-1). Her reward, as we should have guessed from her name, is that half of her will become immortalized as a sacred river (traditionally of her will become immortalized as a sacred river (traditionally of her will become immortalized as a sacred river (traditionally of her will become immortalized as a sacred river (traditionally of her will become immortalized as a sacred river (traditionally of her will become immortalized as a sacred river (traditionally of her will become immortalized as a sacred river). tionally the supreme reward for virtuous women), while the other half will attain with her husband all the heavenly worlds normally

acquired by austerities (Sdhp.65v.6-10 < Mbh.XIII.2.82-5).

In the context of the *Mahābhārata*, the story demonstrates the importance for the householder of honouring the guest (cf. section IIC, pp.183-210). For Tryambaka, it illustrates the lengths to which the good wife should go in her determination to carry out not her own desire but her husband's command (tadājñayā tu kartavyam akāryam api necchayā; Sdhp.66v.1-2).

The emphasis on wifely obedience, so graphically illustrated in the last two stories quoted, evidently suggested a potential problem to Tryambaka (Sdhp. 66v.3-67[1]v.10). As he himself explains, he had earlier (pūrvam) declared that the foremost religious duty for women was 'service to one's husband' (patišuśrūṣaṇa; see notel). In the story of Sudarśana, however, 'the most powerful thing is said to be obedience to the (husband's) command' (ājñākaraṇasya prābalyaṃ pratipādyate; Sdhp.66v.4). Is there a contradiction (virodha) here?

Tryambaka explains at some length that there is not. For 'service' comprises 'every action that gives pleasure to one's husband' (tatprītyutpādanavyāpārah sarvo 'pi śuśrūsaiva). Since obedience also gives him pleasure (ājñākaranam api prītyutpādanatvāt), it is included in the general term 'service' (śuśrūsāntargatam eva; Sdhp. 66v.9-10). Tryambaka argues that the writers of dharmasastra (śāstrakāra) use the word śuśrūsā in this sense to cover all actions that give pleasure to someone to whom one owes respect (sarvam api gurujanaprītikaram karma; Sdhp.67[1]r.1-2). With reference to the son's relationship with his mother (cf. Ap.1.10.28.9), the sacrificer is referred to as his mother's son in order to give her pleasure; and that is why Haradatta calls it śuśrūsā (Sdhp.67[1]r.9-67[1]v.1, with insert; cf. Har. on Ap.1.10.28.9-10). Similarly, the 'service' owed by the student to his teacher includes both obeying his commands and administering to his physical needs. Traditionally, however, only three things are specified as the religious duty of the student: service to the teacher, begging for alms, and lighting the sacred fire (ācāryaśuśrūṣā bhikṣācaraṇam agnīndhanam; Sdhp.67[1]v.4-6). Since 'obedience' (ājñākaraṇa) is included in 'service', it is not mentioned separately. Why then does Tryambaka discuss it separately? He does so merely to draw attention to a part of the whole, in accordance with the traditional ruling for pleonastic expressions (gobalīvardhananyāyena; Sdhp.67[1]v.9-10; cf. Medh. on Manu VIII.28). Tryambaka's analogy between the student's behaviour towards his teacher and that of the wife towards her husband reinforces earlier comments to this effect (see sections I, pp.34-9; IIC, pp.168-3, 221-7, etc.).

To prove his point, Tryambaka relates the story of Svāhā and Arundhatī (Sdhp.67[2]r. 9-69r.4; Sdhp.67(2)v. 1-69r. 2 Mbh.III. 213.40-214.4a, 5-14; with variants). It is often said that a woman who completely (akhilam) fulfils her religious duty towards her husband will be glorified in heaven as an Arundhatī among women (arundhatīva nārīnām svargaloke mahīyate, Sdhp. 67[2]r.9-10; e.g. section IV, p.43, note 43). Tryambaka explains that this is because Arundhatī 'served' her husband with great fervour (patišuśrūṣanātiśayena).

The story, as told by Tryambaka, runs as follows. During a a sacrifice, Agni saw the wives of the seven sages and was overwhelmed by lust (kāmavaśam yayau). Realizing this, Agni's wife Svāhā resolved to take the form of each of the seven wives in turn in order to make love with Agni herself. With six of the wives she was successful, but she was unable to assume the 'divine form' of Arundhatī 'because of the splendour of her austerities and (the supernatural power arising from) her devoted service to her husband' (tasyās tapaḥprabhāvena bhartṛśuśaṇena ca; Sdhp.69r.1-2 < Mbh.III.214.14). Van Buitenen's translation of śuśrūsaṇa as 'faithfulness' is clearly inadequate here. For the 'fervent service' envisaged by Tryambaka assumes his own broad definition of śuśrūsaṇa; that is, it includes 'every action that brings pleasure to one's husband.'

Reminding us that women have no means of atonement (literally, 'austerity'; tapas) other than devotedly serving their husbands (cf. sectionIV, pp.295-7), Tryambaka relates in full the story of Sāvitrī, the most renowned and best-loved pativratā of all (Sdhp.69r.5-86v. 4; Sdhp.69r.6-86v.3 < Mbh.III.277.1-283.16, with variants, and additional ślokas to be found in the footnotes of the critical edition).

In the context of the Mahābhārata, Mārkandeya tells the story to Yudhisthira when the latter asks him if there has ever been a wife as devoted as Draupadī. At the end of the story, Mārkandeya reassures Yudhisthira that Draupadī, like Sāvitrī, will save her husband. The story itself is so well known that the briefest summary is sufficient here.

Sāvitrī is born to King Aśvapati of the Madra people, by the grace of the goddess Sāvitrī, after he has offered oblations with the

sāvitrī formula regularly for eighteen years. When she grows up, since no man asks to marry her, Aśvapati sends her on a pilgrimage to find a husband. She chooses Satyavat, who lives with his mother and blind father in exile in the forest. Although Savitrī learns that he is doomed to die within a year, she marries him anyway and joins the exiled family. As the day of his death approaches, Savitrī undertakes the severe tapas of standing day and night for three days. On the fourth day, she accompanies her husband into the forest. When Satyavat collapses and Yama comes to take his soul away, Sāvitrī follows, answering Yama with such meek wisdom that he gives her three wishes (always excluding Satyavat's life). She asks first, that her father-in-law will regain his sight; secondly, that he will regain his kingdom; and thirdly, that her own father will have a hundred sons. Given a fourth wish, she asks that she and Satyavat will also have a hundred sons. The fifth wish is given without qualification: Satvavat is freed.

It is interesting to note that the story of Savitri seems to condone several things that Tryambaka has explicitly and repeatedly condemned in his treatise. For example, Savitri is evidently not married before puberty since she is adult enough to embark on a pilgrimage alone (cf. the discussion of nagnikā, section IIA, pp.86-8). According to Tryambaka, the pilgrimage itself is prohibited (see sections IIB, pp.132-41, and IV, p.275, note 7). So, one assumes, is the stubbornness with which she refuses to accept her father's initial decision that she should not marry Satyavat (see section IV, p.276, note 9). She undertakes a three-day 'vow' (vrata) that involves severe austerities (tapas) when both vows and austerities are forbidden to her (cf. section IV, pp.275-6, notes 7-8). Instead of submitting to her father-in-law (cf. section IIC, pp.156-7), she ignores his advice to stop her vow. She even answers back to Death, refusing (albeit humbly) to give in to his decree. Yet, by virtue of her devotion to her husband, Sāvitrī is praised throughout India even today as the perfect pativratā. Tryambaka would presumably argue that this merely demonstrates that devotion to one's husband supersedes all other obligations (see above).

Tryambaka's summary (Sdhp.86v.4-88r.1)

'The husband is thus to be propitiated (samtoṣanīyaḥ, comprising a variety of meanings: giving pleasure, making happy, pacifying,

appeasing, worshipping, etc.) (by the wife as follows): by observing the rules of purification; by attending to the fire ritual; by paying homage to guests; by taking care of household duties; by keeping close watch over the household (accounts), both income and expenditure; by attending to her husband's bodily comfort; by serving food to her husband's dependants, etc.; by eating the sanctified remains (prasāda) of (the food offered to) him herself; by lovemaking and so on at night; by avoiding both those things which are forbidden to her and those which her husband does not like; by putting into practice both those things which are prescribed and those which her husband likes; by adorning herself (pratikarmanā; or perhaps "keeping everything tidy"); by driving away her husband's fatigue; by putting the religious rulings relating to the body into practice whenever they are appropriate, according to the law; by following her husband (into the fire when he dies); (or, alternatively,) after her husband('s death), by observing (the appropriate) restrictions such as celibacy (brahmacaryādi") for as long as she lives; by obedient (or devoted) service to her husband; and by doing what he says. Propitiating him in this way is said to constitute true 'service' to one's husband.'6

Two points may be noted here. First, despite the rulings that prohibit sahagamana in the kali age (see section IV, pp.295-7), Tryambaka has felt it appropriate to include the practice here. Similarly, despite his own evident approval of sahagamana (see section IV, pp.293-5), he has found it necessary to offer the alternative of widowhood as well (see section IV, p.304).

Secondly, Tryambaka continues—even in so brief a final summary—to give greater weight to the husband's opinions and demands than to any independent formulation of the law by dharma-sastra. For example, the wife is required to avoid both 'those things

^{6.} evam saucācārair agnisusrūṣayātithipūjanena gṛhakṛtyavicāṇenāyavyayakuṭumbasaṃrakṣaṇavicāreṇa bhartuḥ sarīrasusrūṣayā bhartur āśritādīnāṃ cānnapradānena svayaṃ tatprasādagrahaṇena rātrau ratyādinā svaniṣidhānāṃ bhartur apriyasya ca varjanena vihitānām bhartur yat priyaṃ tasya cānuṣṭhānena pratikarmaṇā bhartu[h] śramāpanodanena tattatkāle prāptānāṃ śarīradharmāṇāṃ yathāvidhy anuṣṭhānena bhartranugamanena bhartur anantaraṃ yāvajjīvabrahmacaryādiniyamaparipālanena patisusrūṣayā tadvacanakaraṇena ca patih saṃtoṣanīyaḥ // evaṃ saṃtoṣaṇam eva patisusrūṣaṇam ity ucyate // Sdhp.86v.4–87r.2.

that are forbidden to her' and 'those which her husband does not like'. Similarly, she should do both 'those things that are prescribed' and 'those which her husband likes'. It is clear from the tone used and the examples given throughout section V that, in each case, the latter requirement is the stronger. Thus she should follow the detailed rules of *dharmasāstra* unless and until her husband commands her otherwise. As soon as there is any conflict, however, she should simply do as he requires. It is fitting, therefore, that Tryambaka ends his summary with what are for him the two most important rulings for the ideal wife: she should offer her husband 'obedient and devoted service' (with a marked stress on 'obedience', according to Tryambaka's own definition; see above, pp.310–12; and she should do what he says. For this is indeed true 'service'.

This summary is followed by a number of well-known ślokas in hyperbolic praise of the wife who manages to behave as she should. For example, such a woman obtains fame in this world and the same heaven as her husband in the next (patiloka), and 'there is no higher goal than that' (cānuttamām gatim; Sdhp.87r.6). She 'ascends to heaven via the staircase of service to her husband' (sā bhartṛśuśrūsāsopānasvargatim gatā; Sdhp.87v.3). Seated in an aerial chariot' (vimānasthā; cf. above, p.306), she is praised by the gods (Sdhp.87v.4). Wherever her foot touches the ground, the earth is purified (Sdhp.87v.4-5). Though afraid of her (bibhyat), the sun, moon, wind and waters deliberately touch her in order to purify themselves (Sdhp.87v.5-6). For her touch is as cleansing and auspicious as a dip in the sacred Ganges (gangāvagāha; Sdhp.87v.7-8). 'As a result of the merit obtained by the devoted wife, three sets of three (ancestors) enjoy the pleasures of heaven: three in her father's line, three in her mother's, and three in her husband's too.'7

Concluding verses and colophon (Sdhp.88r.1-8)

'In this way, having (first) shuffled (lit. 'churned'; vilody[a]) the various pronouncements from the smṛtis and the purāṇas together, and (from them) collected the religious duties relating to women—some of them supplied here and there with reasoned pros and cons

^{7.} skānde // Sdhp.87v.4. pitrvamšyā mātrvamšyāh pativamšyās trayas trayah pativratāyāh punyena svargasaukhyāni bhuñjate // Sdhp.87v.9-88r.1 (Skānda) < Sk.P.III.2.7.58.

(vyavasthā) — the wise Tryambakayajvan has, at his mother's command (mātrājñayā), recounted them once again in their proper order in this work. By listening to them, may all women (learn to) apply their minds always to (their) religious duty!'8

These religious rulings relating to women, which I have heard one by one in śruti[, smṛti] and purāṇa, I have gathered together from here and there to create (this work) in order to make things easier for the doe-eyed ones (mṛgadṛśām; i.e. women). This work of mine is strung together like a necklace out of brilliant pearls accepted (only) after they have been examined from all sides. May it create supreme delight for the mother of the worlds (Pārvatī)! 9

(Colophon:) 'This Guide to the Religious Duties of Women (strī-dharmapaddhatiḥ) was composed by Tryambakayajvan out of affection for his teacher Yajñeśa, and in order to please Nṛṣiṃha. May it be (taken as) an offering to Lord Kṛṣṇa!'10

Several points may be noted here. Tryambaka's allusion to 'his mother's command' in the first concluding verse recalls a parallel reference in his introductory verses (see section I, introductory verse 3, p.32, note 6). Similarly, his dedication to the goddess Pārvatī in the second concluding verse recalls the more detailed references to her in those same opening verses (see section I, introductory verses 1 and 2, pp.29–32, notes 2 and 4). Thirdly, as indicated in my introduction, Yajñeśa is also the guru of the author of the Dharmākūta; a fact that suggests that Tryambaka and the pandit-minister Tryambakarāyamakhin are indeed the same individual (see pp.10–13). Finally, the reference to Nṛṣiṃha may be an allusion to Tryambaka's elder brother who was renowned as a minister and patron of scholars in his own right (see pp.16–19).

8. ittham tryambakayajvanā smṛtipurānoktīr vilodyākhilā[h] | dharmā[h] strīviṣayāh punah katipaye tattadvyavasthānvitāh || saṃgṛhyātra kṛtau kramena kathitā mātrājñayā dhīmatā | tān ākārṇya sadā striyas ca sakalā dharme matun tanvatām || 1 || Sdhp.88r.1-4.

9. dharmāḥ strīviṣayā[ḥ] śruti[smṛti] purāṇeṣu śrutā ye pṛthak / tān saṃ-gṛhya tatas tato mṛgadṛṣāṃ saukaryahetoḥ kṛtā // seyaṃ matkṛtir u[j]jvalair maṇigaṇair viṣvak parīkṣyāhṛtaiḥ / māleva grathitā tanotu jagatāṃ mātuḥ

pramodam param // 2 // Sdhp.88r.4-7.

10. guruyañesakrpayā śrīma[t]tryambakayajvanā / prīyaye śrīnṛsimhasya kṛtā strīdharmapaddhatih // 3 // cha // cha // śrīkṛṣṇārpaṇam astu // cha // Sdhp.88r.7-8. Cf. p. 12, note 4.

Conclusion

T

One might reasonably expect that a text, or indeed a book, on the religious role of women would give considerable space to a discussion of the various aspects of the ascetic or monastic life: what sects were considered acceptable for women; the reason for opting for a life of renunciation; when and how a woman might do this; ceremonies of initiation; the signs and symbols of a woman's new status; the expectations, duties and privileges that go with it; and so on. This is perhaps the most glaring omission in Tryambaka's treatise, and therefore also in this book. For Tryambaka does not allow women the option of renunciation at all.

This is not to say that the option did not exist. We have only to look at the epics for frequent references to female ascetics. The work of anthropologists and historians provides ample evidence both of current trends in female asceticism and of their antecedents. Research topics include: women ascetics in traditional and modern Hinduism (Ojha 1981, 1984; King 1984); women saints of history and legend (Alston 1980; Hardy 1980; Abbott 1929; Ramanujan 1979: 129ff., 1982); female ascetics today in Benares (Denton) and Nepal (Caplan 1973); Jaina nuns and laywomen in Rajasthan (Reynell 1985); and a variety of studies on Buddhist laywomen and nuns (Horner 1975; Paul 1979; Flak 1980; Nissan 1984; etc.). Even the Yatidharmaprakāša, a treatise on renunciation from within the discipline of dharmašāstra, allows (albeit without enthusiam) that women are entitled to become renouncers (Yatidh. 61.39-41; Mit.on Yājā.III.58; Olivelle 1977:33-4, 175).

As Olivelle points out, in order to disentangle this complex question of the renunciation of women, it is essential to distinguish between three separate issues: the legitimacy of the practice in terms of dharmaśāstra; its legality in the eyes of the law; and its historicity (1984:113-15). Obviously, the Strīdharmapaddhati does not do this. Tryambaka's concern is solely with the legitimacy of the practice in the eyes of dharma. For both arguments and evidence are drawn from dharmaśāstra rather than from life. It is thus not so

much his rejection of female renunciation that is of interest to us today as the reasoning behind it.

For any mention—however rare and perfunctory—of women renouncers, or female renunciation in general, is redolent with negative associations, together with the insistence that the good Hindu wife should have nothing to do with them or it. For example. Tryambaka informs us that the orthodox wife should never associate with 'female renouncers' (pravrajitā) or 'female religious mendicants' (śramanā), bracketing them with other 'bad influences' such as courtesans, women gamblers, women who meet lovers in secret, intellectual women (haitukī), and so on (see section IIC, pp.171-2). In the section on things to be avoided (IV, pp.274-6), renunciation (pravrajyā) is one of the six things that cause women and śūdras to fall into hell. In a quotation from the Mahābhārata, Śandilī stresses that she earned her place in heaven by being a good wife and not by wearing the ochre robes of the renunciate, the bark garments of the hermit, the matted locks of the ascetic, or by shaving her head as some renouncers do (section IV, pp.282-3, note 26). In the story of Astāvakra and the old female ascetic to whom the young man is sent for instruction, the emphasis rests not on her asceticism nor on her spiritual achievements, but on the fact that—even in old age, even after years of renunciation—she has not managed to subdue the rampant sexuality of her innate female nature (see section III, pp.268, 271).

The last example provides the clue to Tryambaka's attitude. First, his references to female renunciation make it clear that he was fully aware of the possibility of women following such a path. Indeed, there were almost certainly more women renouncers in his day than there are today; and no doubt they earned as much genuine respect from the majority of Hindus then as their counterparts do today (cf. Denton: ch.4). For Tryambaka, however, the point is not whether women could become renouncers, but whether—according to dharmaśāstra—they should. The answer is clearly that they should not. In part, this is due to the same set of values applied routinely by dharmaśāstra to men; that is, the conviction that, of all the āśramas open to the male, that of the householder is best (see p.44-5). In part, however, the reasoning is peculiar to the case of women. For it rests heavily on Tryambaka's understanding

of female nature (strīsvabhāva).

As I explained in section III, Tryambaka assumes the orthodox

view of svadharma: good conduct produces auspicious births, evil conduct inferior births; and good conduct is defined as that anpropriate to one's birth and station in this life. Birth as a woman is itself a mark of bad conduct in a previous life; the assiduous performance of the conduct appropriate to women (strīdharma) the only way to erase it. Since women are denied access to Vedic education, they cannot purify themselves with mantras or offer sacrifice in their own right (see sections I, pp.34-9, and IIB, pp.107-15). According to the rigid orthodoxy professed by such as Tryambaka. they cannot perform any religious act independently of their husbands; they cannot even worship any god other than their husbands. Their only hope for salvation, and thus their only worthwhile goal, is the pursuit of strīdharma. The two poles of a woman's existence are thus represented by two radically opposed concepts: the essentially wicked nature of women as evidenced by their female birth (strīsvabhāva); and the role model of the virtuous and selfeffacing wife as the only sure path to salvation (strīdharma).

This radical distinction between '(essential) woman' and '(ideal) wife' is reflected in the traditional twofold classification of female deities: the 'terrifying' or 'fierce' (ugrā) goddesses such as Durgā, Kālī or Cāmundā; and the 'gentle' or 'pleasing' (śāntā, saumyā) ones such as Pārvatī, Satī, Laksmī or Rādhā. It is no surprise that the former group are usually depicted as wild, destructive females associated with rampant appetite and sexuality, and the blood of battlefield, sacrifice and menstruation (cf. Kinsley 1982:146ff.; Bennett 1983:262-72; Carstairs 1973:158-9). In contrast, the latter group consists of ideal goddess-wives whose powers of chastity, fertility and prosperity - derived from their husbands and thus subordinate to them - are in turn the fundamental source or śakti of their husbands' powers within the scheme of dharma (cf. Dimmitt 1982:210-23; Bennett 1983:272ff.). As one would expect, Pārvatī-whom Tryambaka invokes at the beginning and end of this treatise—is one of these.

In the human realm as in the divine, the untamed female nature—with all the negative associations of female sexuality—is antisocial, elemental and dangerous. For Tryambaka, as for dharmaśāstra in general, that necessary 'taming' can only be achieved in the controlled state of marriage. As the story of Asṭāvakra demonstrates, the alternative path of ascetic renunciation can never fully subdue the essential sexuality of women. For in the imagination of the

orthodox male, 'renunciation' means primarily the renunciation of sexual pleasures and family life, both of which are symbolised by women. Thus while male renouncers may successfully renounce women, female renouncers can never fully renounce themselves. In the inevitable conflict between the sexuality inherent in their nature and the demands of the ascetic life, women renouncers remain essentially 'female', and therefore 'untamed'. The conclusion is obvious: only the pursuit of *strīdharma* can keep this dangerous female nature under control and thus bring the individual to a better birth—perhaps even as a twice-born man (though crossing gender is hard; see section III, pp.246-7)—and, ultimately, to salvation.

II

What then are the main points of this single religious path considered by Tryambaka to be safe for women to pursue?

First, women are forbidden to perform all manner of religious rituals and observances. Thus the six things that cause women to fall into hell include the recitation of sacred texts (japa), the performance of austerities (tapas), going on pilgrimages, renunciation, the chanting of mantras, and the worship of deities (including temple worship, another striking omission in Tryambaka's treatise). Other rulings add to this list: offerings into the fire (homa), religious donations (dāna), and any religious 'vow' (vrata) or ritual (makha;

section IV, pp.274-6, notes 7, 8).

Such rulings derive partly from the exclusion of women from Vedic education and the right to independent ritual in general (see sections I, pp.34–9, and IIB, pp.107–8); and partly from the conviction that the most important duty of the orthodox wife is to assist her husband in his religious obligations rather than to pursue any religious commitment of her own (see pp.50, 108–15). Hence the repeated descriptions of the good wife as 'one who shares in her husband's religious duties' (sahadharmacārī, dharmacārinī, dharmabhāginī, pativratā, pativratābhāginī, and so on; e.g. section IV, pp.281–2). Thus she should meditate with her husband on his chosen deity (see section IIA, pp.52–4). She should assist her husband at the fire ritual (see section IIB, pp.107–15, 129–41), at the worship of their household images (see section IIC, pp.178–80), and at the vaiśvadeva ritual (see section IIC, pp.180–3). She should prepare the food and serve the guest on her husband's behalf

in the important ceremonies of hospitality (see section IIC, pp.198-205); and so on. Such a view of the religious role of the orthodox wife replaces all independent actions with a variety of obligations arising from her position as ritual assistant to her husband.

Secondly, it is repeatedly stressed that the duties of the wife—whether those of every day (sections IIA-IID) or those occasioned by specific moments in her life (section IV, pp.283-304) are in fact the signs of her religious path, that of devotion to her husband. This devotion is described in two ways: serving and obeying one's husband as one's guru; and worshipping him as one's only god. No other description could carry a greater weight of religious commitment and spiritual authority in the Hindu context than these.

The parallel between the orthodox Hindu wife's ministrations to her husband and the Vedic student's attentions to his guru is not stressed by Tryambaka. But it emerges piecemeal from his treatise. In section I, for example, Tryambaka explains that the rulings he is about to expound apply only to married women because, for women, 'marriage has taken the place of initiation' (section I, p.35, note 15). He then quotes Manu's famous saying that the marriage ceremony is the female equivalent of initiation, serving one's husband in the home equal to living with and serving one's guru, and household duties equivalent to worshipping the sacred fire (section 1, p.35 note 16; cf. pp.50,102, etc.). It is not surprising, therefore, that many of the rulings regarding the wife's services towards her husband (such as attending to his morning toilet, rubbing his body with oil, helping him with his bath, and so on) are strongly reminiscent of the required behaviour of the student towards his teacher (see section IIC, pp.163-8). Touching the husband's feet before a meal (see section IIC, pp.221-2), and before going to bed (see section IID, p.237) recall the respectful salutations the student should offer his guru (see section IIC, pp.157-60). Similarly, Tryambaka's insistence that the orthodox wife should eat the remains of her husband's meal evokes another marked parallel with the reverence shown by the student to his teacher (see section IIC, pp.221-7). Finally, in Tryambaka's own conclusion to the treatise, he discusses the full meaning and significance of the term 'service' (śuśrūṣā) by analogy with the 'service' owed by the student to his teacher: that is, it includes both obeying his commands and administering to his physical

needs, thereby comprising 'every action that gives pleasure, to one's husband-guru (see above, p.312).

In practice, of course, the orthodox wife does not behave like the Vedic student unless her husband is away. For example, the student should not enjoy the pleasures of cleaning his teeth either during his studentship or afterwards whenever he is in the presence of his teacher (see section IIA, pp.80-1). In the case of the wife, however, the prohibition on teeth-cleaning applies only when her husband-guru is absent (see section IV, p.291). Similarly, the rules on dress for the married woman bear no comparison with those applicable to Vedic studentship (see section IIA, pp.88-96). In fact, in discussions relating to āśrama, women are classed with Vedic students simply because studentship is the least advanced of the four stages of the samuccaya system (see section IIA, pp.82-3). Nonetheless, the uplifting analogy, complete with its associations of religious commitment, remains.

The requirement that the orthodox wife should treat her husband as her only god receives somewhat greater stress. For example, the invocation to Parvati in the opening verses carries with it the powerful image of the wife whose husband really is a god, and whose selfeffacing devotions bring her the ultimate reward of becoming half of him (see section I, introductory verse 1). Within the treatise itself, numerous quotations either liken the husband to a god or describe him directly as the wife's only or highest god. Thus, whether he is good or bad, he is the good wife's 'supreme deity' (section IV, p.274, note 2). 'There is no deity like him . . . through his grace all desires are fulfilled' (section IV, p.281, note 21). 'The good woman always regards her husband as a god' (section IV, p.282, note 24). Throughout her married life, her entire appearance, from the tilaka on her forehead to the rings on her toes, signal to the world that her husband is her god and that he is alive (see section IIA, p.96-101). When she eats the remains of the meal she has served him, she should receive it reverently as the sanctified mahāprasāda of her god (see section IIC, p.221-7). Instead of seeking the blessings of other gods by making pilgrimages or worshipping in temples, she should drink the 'foot water' of her own husband (see section IIB, p.132-41). After his death, she may worship Visnu but only if she keeps the image of her husband in her mind, worshipping him in the guise of the god, bringing him to mind by means of a portrait or a clay model (see section IV, p.300, notes 67, 68). For the husband is the 'supreme god among all gods', whose law she must fulfil without question (see section V, p.308, note 4).

Thirdly, this replacement of all independent religious activity on the part of the wife with devoted service to her husband-guru-god has an important, and perhaps unexpected, consequence. The ideal wife should obey her husband's command even if what he asks her to do is normally considered unlawful (see section V, pp.309-12). For strīdharma supersedes even right and wrong.

Tryambaka's examples in fact reveal a conflict within the notion of *strīdharma* itself. Having devoted his entire treatise to explaining in detail precisely how the orthodox wife should behave according to the contemporary understanding of *dharmaśāstra* rulings, Tryambaka proceeds to undermine his own creation. All these rulings apply if, and only if, they accord with the individual husband's wishes.

Thus Tryambaka argues against the practice of *niyoga* in section IV (pp.300-2), yet insists that Kuntī should accede to her husband's request that she perform this act simply because he makes it (see section V, pp.309-10). Similarly, the ideal wife should have no contact with men other than her own husband (see section IIC, pp.170-6), let alone make love to them; yet Oghavatī is praised for making love to a brahmin guest when her husband commands her to do so. Indeed, the god Dharma himself declares Oghavatī's chastity restored and her reputation intact due to the power of 'a woman who has truly taken the vow of her husband' (see section V, pp. 310-12).

But this is not as incongruous as it seems. For the classic answer when someone is asked why he is doing something apparently unorthodox is always: 'My god or my guru told me to.' Thus Mīrābāī flouts the conventions of an orthodox family, caste and society on the grounds of devotion to her lord Kṛṣṇa (cf. Alston 1980). Mahādevī breaks every rule of strīdharma, including the prohibition on nakedness, in her single-minded search for her god (Ramanujan 1979:129). Similarly today, the Maharishi Mahesh Yogi, frequently reproached by orthodox Hindus for teaching the Vedas to non-Hindus abroad, explains that his guru instructed him to do so. The story of Uttanka (alluded to by Tryambaka in section IIC, pp. 210-14), provides an epic example. The conflict of duties described is resolved by Uttanka's decision that his teacher's orders did not

include 'wrong-doing'. The implication is clear: if they had, it would have been right to obey. Through the power of guruvacana, the unorthodox becomes orthodox. Since the ideal Hindu wife is required to treat her husband as both guru and god, it is hardly surprising that she too may invoke guruvacana, or the wishes of her 'god', to justify breaking or bending the traditional rules of strīdharma. For her too, the apparently unorthodox, even forbidden, action becomes both orthodox and right.

III

One last important question needs to be tackled. What bearing does this rather bizarre treatise have on the lives and experiences of actual women in India, whether in the ancient past, the eighteenth century, or today? The question becomes more manageable if we break it down into a number of sub-questions and -answers.

First, what is the relationship between text and social reality in more general terms; that is, between the doctrinal (what they say) and the historical (what was actually the case)? The transmission of religious knowledge in India is essentially an oral tradition. What has been recorded—whether basic text, commentary or digest—is thus already the result of highly selective and to some extent arbitrary process. Yet these recordings are the very texts on which we base our discussions of Indian religion and culture, and the place of women within them. The task is clearly fraught with danger.

In more specific terms, how authoritative or representative are the different kinds of texts on which Tryambaka has drawn? How, for example, do we judge the historicity of the past conjured up by the Vedic hymns? I have attempted to face this question in my commentary whenever Tryambaka has cited Vedic material; for example, when he alludes to the famous Vedic marriage hymn as evidence for the innate purity of women (section III, pp.252-4).

The texts of *dharmaśāstra*, on the other hand, are overtly prescriptive, their pronouncements couched in the characteristic optative mood. From them we learn the duties of men and women according to the orthodox understanding of transcendental law, as represented by that particular compiler or commentator. But how do texts like these relate to social fact?

The work of modern anthropologists is particularly enlightening

in this respect. A.S. Jameson, for example, in her study of the pilgrimage priests (pāṇḍā, gaṅgāguru) of Hardwar, refers repeatedly to the gap between what her subjects claim they do (i.e. in accorddance with orthodox ideals and precepts) and how they in fact behave. Thus they claim to serve only the twice-born; but many in fact have śūdra, tribal or even untouchable jajmāns. They claim not to recite Vedic mantras for śūdras (as Manu specifically prohibits them from doing); yet they are recorded as doing so. They claim not to take donations for ashes; but, as Jameson points out, they could not survive economically if they did not (1976:59,328-52). This gap between textual theory and actual practice is frequently highlighted by anthropological research (e.g. Gombrich 1971). It seems probable that, in both ancient India and eighteenth-century Thanjavur, the strict outlines prescribed by religious ideals were similarly blurred in and by real life.

The relationship between epic literature and social reality is perhaps even more difficult to ascertain. The great Indian epics provide Tryambaka with a profusion of didactic material interlaced with myth and imagination. Are we justified in trying to disentangle

sociological evidence from it as well?

Postel-Coster discusses the similar principle of using novels as anthropological material, taking the Indonesian case as her example. She sees the modern novel as a continuation of the myth in traditional societies, but admits that neither novel nor myth draws a picture of social reality in a documentary sense. Literary truth is of a different order: reflections of general ideologies, of the value systems of a particular social class (Postel-Coster 1977:135-50). We should therefore not allow the juxtaposition of mutually exclusive points of view to confuse us unduly. What we have is not so much a conflict of values (although in one sense, of course, we have that too) as a series of different levels of perception: at one end of the scale, statements of the ideal; at the other, all the nuances, variations and shortcomings created when the ideal is carried into daily life. On top of all this, we find the ambivalence inherent in ideals, the positive switching suddenly into its opposite, like a coin flipping over to show the other side.

It is perhaps also worth pointing out that, in India, myth is not so far removed from reality as some outsiders might think. For Indians live their myths. Festivals, ceremonies and dramas are taken straight out of the epics and purānas and replayed year by year

in villages all over India. In every household, mothers and grandmothers tell and retell these stories to their children until they are embedded in their subconscious minds, emerging to shape their responses to the crises of everyday. Thus when the writer to Manushi exclaims that we must refuse to be Sitas' (Kishwar and Vanita 1984: 299; see my introduction, p.2), she and those for whom she speaks are resisting not only aspects of Indian culture but, in a very real sense, parts of themselves.

The second sub-question is a more specific restatement of the first. What is the relationship between prescriptive literature written or compiled by a brahmin male élite and the actual experience of women?

Even today, there are orthodox brahmin specialists who - convinced of the rightness of tradition - converse in Sanskrit, pore over the old texts, and take only negative account of other castes and traditions. This distinction between the classical recorded tradition and the largely unrecorded oral traditions is important. An exclusive concern with the former does not rule out the possibility of alternative frameworks for those other segments of society (local gods, tree worship, shamanistic practices, and so on); it merely ignores the problem.

But this religious élite responsible for the texts at our disposal was defined not only by caste and tradition, but also to a very large

extent by gender.

In the field of social anthropology, Edwin Ardener's theory of 'muted groups' is now well known (1975; the theory is perhaps best set out in Shirley Ardener's introduction, 1975:vii—xxii). To summarize it briefly, the dominant modes of expression in any society have been generated by the dominant structure. Only the dominant mode is 'heard'. Any subdominant group either learns to express its views in terms of the dominant mode or remains inarticulate, 'muted'. When the polarity is that of gender, the female group is usually the muted one. But, until very recently, most anthropological investigation failed to take this crucial dichotomy into account. At the level of observation in fieldwork (e.g. in terms of marriages, economic activities, rites and so on), the behaviour of women has been exhaustively plotted. But at the second level of the discussion of observed behaviour, there is a real imbalance. Statements about both men and women are made exclusively by men. This is precisely the position we find in the study of Indian religious texts. Almost the entire religious and ideological edifice constructed in the Sanskrit texts of Hindu orthodoxy has been written or recorded by men. The religious arena is dominated by men; the rules of religious language itself encoded and expounded by them. The religious role allotted to women is defined in terms of their relationship not to God but to men. For women are given what it is considered fitting for them to do; and, as Hirschon points out, there is a close correlation between what it is thought fitting for someone to do and what he or she is considered capable of doing (1978:73).

This is not to assume that women would necessarily have described or prescribed a radically different world view. Indeed, it is highly likely, then as now, that the dominant view was partly or fully internalized by the majority of women. Moreover, we should not be disappointed if this proves to be the case for, as Shirley Ardener points out, it is the small deviations from the norm which may be crucial (1975:xix; cf. Hiebert 1985:98). The traditional male perception of a woman's role must therefore be seen in relation both to what is found in real life and to what can be gathered from listening to women's views. Thus the Wisers describe how the women often laugh 'behind their scarves' at the air of authority assumed by a man; yet 'outwardly they approve, and demand submission from his wife' (1971:79-81). In the Manipur valley, women make 'a formal expression of deference to male authority'; yet 'female defiance of male dominance is a profound feature of their culture' (Chaki-Sirkar 1984: 222). Similarly, Bhuribai claims to be inferior to her husband, on a par with the shoes on his feet; yet she also sees herself as the model of feminine virtue in her own village, virtue incarnate, supporting not only her own husband, family and caste, but the whole of creation as well (Jacobson 1978:134-5).

The chief criterion of a world view, religious or otherwise, is that it is a self-defining system. In a society defined by men, therefore, some features of the corresponding muted group (i.e. women) will not fit that definition. The difference (if any) might lie not in the description but in the evaluation, pointing to positive functions in what the dominant structure sees as negative or inferior. For, on psychological grounds alone, it is hardly likely that half the population of India actually regarded (or regard) themselves in the negative terms outlined by the other half. It is far more probable that they either resisted altogether the interpretations foisted on them (like some of

the contributors of *Manushi*; cf. Kishwar and Vanita 1984); or created their own positive construct (like Bhuribai; cf. Jacobson 1978). For Indian women rarely want to be men; nor, as a general rule, do they seek the 'freedoms' of Western women.

For a coherent understanding of the religious role of Indian women, therefore, we need several approaches at once. First and foremost, the religious texts relating to women must be closely analysed to reveal the implicit structures and unarticulated tensions. It is hoped that this presentation of Tryambakayajvan's Strīdharmapaddhati is a useful contribution to this category of research. Secondly, historical and anthropological studies must provide the missing dimension of experiential reality to our growing knowledge of the texts. It is to the latter that we must look for the elusive 'woman's voice' describing and evaluating her own experience. We do not find it in a text such as this.

What we do find is the viewpoint of an eighteenth-century pandit trained in the study of Sanskrit texts, and steeped in both orthodox tradition and the customs and conventions of his own social group. It is clear that his is in some sense a reactionary voice for it calls on his intended audience of high-caste women at the Maratha court of Thanjavur to resist all the changes implied by a Tamil environment, Muslim overlords, and the encroachment of European influence (see my introduction, pp.3-4). It is equally clear that, while he is evidently familiar with the rulings of dharmasāstra and the traditional tales of the epics and purānas, he is no real mīmāmsaka, no true philosopher. Rather, he is a pillar of the orthodox establishment, sure of his own mind and the rightness of tradition. Commissioned to compile for the high-caste women of his day all the rulings relating to their religious path as orthodox wives, he has produced this bizarre but intriguing document. His views on women, elaborated at great length and in absorbing detail, are fascinating both in themselves and in their relevance to India today. They deserve to form part of the emerging picture of the religious role of Indian women.

the first area over the for property and the first and people in the and the article to a solution out at a temp of the article and

APPENDIX

The Text; Collation of Manuscripts and Stemma Codicum

The following MSS were available for comparison:

T₁ — The Tanjore Maharaja Serfoji's Sarasvati Mahal Library, Thanjavur

TD Vol.XVIII (1934), p.8708-9, cat.no.18966; Burnell (1880) p.139a, no.315; Oppert Vol.II (1885), p.471, no.8107; CC Vol.I (1891), p.241; NCC Vol.VIII (1974), p.284.

Paper MS; devanāgarī script; 94 folios numbered 1-88; 9 inches by 5 inches; 10 lines to a page; 28-32 akṣaras to a line; complete.

This MS is in good condition although folios 2 and 88 are torn at the edges. It is clearly written with bold strokes forming square upright characters. Two hand-drawn lines on each side of each page form margins; except in folios 1 and 2 where each margin consists of two pairs of lines, and in the inserted folios 26(1) and 26(2) which have no margins. The word strī is written in devanāgarī in the top left-hand margin of the verso of most folios; the word dharma in the top right-hand margin of the verso of some of the earlier folios; and the pious ejaculation rāma in the bottom right-hand margin of some folios (e.g. 2v,3r,4r). There are frequent corrections: the smaller ones, in the margin, of a syllable, word or phrase, are usually in the first hand (e.g. 2r,3r,4r,30r); the longer ones written at the top or bottom of a folio and marked at the beginning and end with a number, are often in a more spidery second hand (e.g. 6v,15v,17r,25v); while some other longer ones are probably in a third hand (e.g. 39r,39v,48v,67r).

In addition, there are three lengthy insertions into the original text. Between folios 26 and 27, three extra folios are to be found: 26(1), 26(2), and 26(3); all three to be inserted at 26v.9. Folio 26(1)r is totally illegible, but has evidently been rewritten in the same hand on one side of a displaced and unnumbered folio. This replacement folio and 26(1)v are written in the spidery second hand: 26(1)r (replacement) has 13 lines to the page, 32-8 akṣaras to a line; 26(1)v has 9½ lines to the page, 30-40 akṣaras to a line. Folios 26(2) and 26(3) seem to be in the first hand but are neater and more evenly spaced: 9, 9, 8 and 6 lines to a page; 26-34 akṣaras to a line. The other two major insertions involve one folio each. Between folios 46 and 47, there is an extra folio 47(1) written in the second hand: 14 and 11 lines to the page; 25-38 akṣaras to a line; to be inserted at folio 46v.3, before the bracketed deletion. Finally, between folios 66 and 67 (the latter has the number 68 added in the second

hand), there is an extra folio 67(1) written in the same second hand:10 (+11) insertion) and 9½ lines to the page; 28-32 aksaras to a line; to be inserted at 66v.10, before the bracketed deletion. These extra folios account for the inconsistency of 94 folios numbering 1-88 as described. (For an additional folio insert outside the passages chosen for comparison, see section V, note 3).

Incipit, folio lv.1-2: //śrīganādhipataye namah // //śrīsarasvatyai namah// //śrīgurubhyo namah// //mukhyo dharmasmrtisu vihito bhartrśiśrūsanam hi ...

Explicit, folio 88r. 7-8: guruyajñeśakrpayā śrīmatryambakayajvanā// prītaye nrsimhasya krtā strīdharmapaddhatih|/3|| cha|| cha|| śrīkrsnārpanam¹ astu|| cha (Next line, in another hand:) dh 100

T₂ — The Tanjore Maharaja Serfoji's Sarasvati Mahal Library, Thanjavur

TD Vol.XVIII, pp.8708-9, cat.no.18967; Burnell p.139a, no.316; NCC unpublished files.

Paper MS; devanāgarī script; 65 folios numbered consecutively; 15 inches by 7 inches; 12-13 lines to a page; 38-42 aksaras to a line; complete.

This MS is in good condition and in one hand throughout. The script is small, even and compact; and there are few corrections, either in the margin (e.g. 19v) or otherwise (e.g. the bracketed deletions on folio 20r.8-10). The top left-hand corner of the verso of each folio contains either the word strīdharma (e.g. 5v,6v,8v), or the word strī (with or without dharma in the right-hand corner; e.g. 2v,3v,4v,7v), or nothing (e.g. 13v,26v,27v); the verso of folio ly has strīdha in the top left-hand corner, rma in the top righthand one. There are no margins.

Incipit, folio 1v.1-2: śrīgaṇādhipataye namaḥ śrīsarasvatyai namaḥ śrīgurubhyo namah mukhyo dharmasmrtisu vihito bhartrsisrusanam hi . . .

Explicit, folio 65v.7-8: guruyajneśakrpayā śrīmatryambakayajvanā prītaye śrīnrsimhasya kṛtā strīdharmapaddhatih|/3// //cha// cha// śrīkṛṣṇ(?)ārpanam2 astu // (Another hand:) dh.170

T₃ — The Tanjore Maharaja Serfoji's Sarasvati Mahal Library, Thanjavur

TD Vol.XVIII, p.8708-9, cat.no.18968, MS no.16374; NCC files.

^{1. °}kṛṣṇa°, i.e. ṣṇ for w ; cf. kṛṣṇasya, T_1 88.2; prabhaviṣṇaḥ, T_1 26(2)r.4.

^{2.} Unclear, but probably as in T_1 (see note1); cf. krsnasya, T_2 22r.6; prabhavisnavah, T, 20r.12.

Paper MS; devanāgarī script; 60 folios numbered consecutively; 15 inches by 7 inches; 12 lines to a page; 40-6 akṣaras to a line; complete.

This MS is in good condition and in one hand throughout, possibly the same as in T_2 . The script is small, even and compact, with few corrections (e.g. 2v,18r,18v). The word $str\bar{\iota}dharma$ is written in $devan\bar{a}gar\bar{\iota}$ in the top left-hand corner of the verso of each folio; the word $str\bar{\iota}$ in the top left-hand corner of 60r; and the ejaculation $r\bar{a}ma$ in the bottom right-hand margin of (usually the verso of) some folios (e.g. 4v,8v,9v). There are no margins.

Incipit, folio 1v.1: śrīgaṇādhipataye namaḥ// //śrīsarasvatyai namaḥ// //śrīgurubhyo namaḥ// mukhyo dharmasmṛtiṣu vihito bhartṛśiśrūṣaṇaṃ hi ... Explicit, folio 60r.11-12: guruyajñeśakṛpayā śrīmatryaṃbakayajvanā// prītaye śrīnṛsiṃhasya kṛtā strīdharmapaddhatiḥ//3// dh 170 (unclear) śrīkṛṣṇ(?)ārpaṇam³ astu// cha// (Another hand, unclear:) dh 1490//

M — The Mysore Government Oriental Library, Mysore

MSC Vol.III (1955), p.704, serial no.9474, MS no.A 163; listed in the NCC files incorrectly as Strīdharmasangraha.

Paper MS; devanāgarī script; 38 folios numbered consecutively; 33 inches by 19½ inches; 33 lines to a page; 22-4 akṣaras to a line; complete.

This MS is in excellent condition and in one hand throughout. The script is extremely neat and small, with very few corrections (e.g. 1r.3, 1v.24). It is presented on vertical pages in book format, suggesting a more recent origin than those in Thanjavur, but the pages are numbered as folios (i.e. 1r,1v,2r, 2v etc.). Each recto has a devanāgarī numeral written in the top centre, and the equivalent roman numeral stamped in the top right-hand corner. On some folios, strīdharma is written beneath the devanāgarī numeral in the top centre (e.g. 13r,17r etc.). There are no margins.

Incipit, folio 1r.1: (Top centre, in place of the devanāgarī numeral:) //śrī//
strīdharma// (line 1:) śrīgaņeśāya namaḥ// mukhyo dharmasmṛtiṣu vihito
bhartṛśiśrūṣaṇaṃ hi...

Explicit, folio 38v.14-16: guruyajñeśakṛpayā śrīmatryambakayajvanā # prītaye śrīnṛsimhasya kṛtā strīdharmapaddhatiḥ ||3|| śrīkṛṣṇārpaṇam⁴ astu// śrīrāmacaṃdrāya namaḥ|| cha|| cha|| cha|| cha|| cha

TO - In my possession

This is a hand-written copy of T₁ made in 1981 at my request and used in the

^{3.} Unclear, but probably as in T₁ (see note.1) cf. kṛṣṇaṣya, T₃ 20r.5; cf. the anomalous an for sn in prabhaviṣṇayah, T₃ 1sv.3 (cf. M 18v.3, note 4).

^{4.} for sn; cf. krsnasya, M 12v.31; prabhavisnavah, M 18v.3.

initial stages of my research. It was copied by Srimati P.S. Lalīthā, Sanskrit copyist, and checked by Srimati S. Rājalakṣmī Sanskrit panditā, both of the Tanjore Maharaja Serfoji's Sarasvati Mahal Library, Thanjavur. (For a description of this copy, together with incipit and explicit, see Leslie 1983(2): appendix A.)

I was unable to locate the MS entitled Strīdharmasangraha that is listed in the NCC files as part of a collection to be found in the Fort, Vizianagaram Estate, Andhra Pradesh. It is described as a paper MS, damaged, and in Telugu script. The NCC entry is based on a typed list available to the compilers.

A printed text (PT) entitled Tryambakarāyamakhinibaddhā strīnām āvasyikā dharmapaddhatih, complete with Tamil translation, was also available. 275 pages; 8 inches by 4½ inches; 12–14 lines of Sanskrit and, below these, 12–18 lines of Tamil translation; modern typesetting with indentations for verse, quotation and paragraphs; opening invocation omitted, otherwise complete.

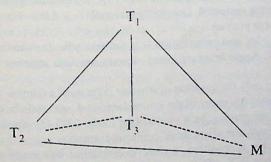
I found two copies: one in the Kuppuswami Sastri Research Institute, Madras (accession no. 5881; undated but received between 1949 and 1956; part of the collection donated by M. Subramaniam Iyer of 'Amrtavilas'; front and back covers missing); the other in the Vedadharmaparipālanasabhā, Kumbakonam (no accession number or date; complete). Neither copy bore any information regarding editor, translator, publisher, printer, place or date. However, His Holiness Candraśekharendrasarasvatī informed me in December 1981 that it was edited and translated into Tamil in approximately 1917–20 by Pañcapageśaśāstrī of the Kañci Kāmakoṭi Maṭh, the younger brother of Gaṇapatiśāstrī, the well-known editor of the Trivandrum Sanskrit Series. Unfortunately, Pañcapageśaśāstrī's son, N. Ramani Sastri, has been unable to substantiate this. At all events, the edition is a useful one, well printed, and with comparatively few errors. It has formed the basis of my collation of the above MSS.

Before embarking on an analysis of the text, it was necessary to establish a stemma codicum setting out the relationship between the four extant MSS available to me: T_1 , T_2 , T_3 and M. Selecting the same three passages from each MS, I compared each in turn with PT; that is, the opening section (PT 1-10), the closing section (PT 271-5), and a central portion chosen because in T_1 (25v-27v) it involves two hands, a lengthy insertion into the text, and an unnumbered misplaced folio (PT 73.3-84.10). The precise details of the collation process, including examples of the errors and variants noted are to be found in appendix A of any doctoral thesis (see Leslie 1983(2):352-67). A much abbreviated version is presented here.

A comparison of the collations of PT with T1 and T2 respectively reveal that T2 is an apograph of T1. Apart from a large number of shared errors and variants, several errors are both unique to T₂ and explicable only by reference to T₁. Conclusive proof is provided by T₂ 20r.8, where the scribe—after copying an entire inserted folio - reverts to the place of the original insert (T, 26v.9) and copies the remaining two lines. Realizing his mistake, he then cancels those lines by bracketing them, copies the other two folios yet to be inserted, and then returns to those two lines once more.

A similar examination of the errors and variants of T₁ and T₃ reveal that the latter is also an apograph of the former. Again, apart from numerous shared errors and variants, several are both unique to T, and explicable only in terms of T₁. In addition, few errors or variants shared by T₂ and T₃ are not also shared by one of the other MSS. Contamination is therefore slight.

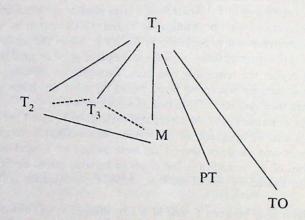
The relationship between T₁ and M is only marginally less obvious. Once again, there are numerous shared errors and variants, some of which are also shared by T2 or T3 or both. However, some are exclusive to M and can be seen to originate in T₁. M is thus also an apograph of T₁. In addition, several errors and variants are shared by T2 and M but not by any of the other MSS. Somewhat fewer errors and variants are shared by T3 and M but not by the other MSS. The stemma is therefore as follows:



TO and PT remain.

An examination of TO confirms that T₁ was the only extant manuscript consulted.

PT is evidently the work of an editor rather than the usual copyist for the majority of obvious errors present in T₁ have been corrected. Of the variants and remaining errors, none are shared with M alone, none with T₃ alone, none with T₂ alone, some with T₁ in common with other MSS, and a few with T₁ alone. There are, however, a large number of variants not shared by any of the extant MSS. Since these seem to be largely intentional rather than due to scribal error, there is no need to posit a lost exemplar between T₁ and PT. I have therefore assumed a simple stemma as follows:



Since this is a closed recension consisting entirely of apographa, I have dispensed with T_2 , T_3 , M and TO except in cases where T_1 is illegible or unintelligible. I have therefore used T_1 as my basic text, while noting the variant readings of PT.

Orthographic peculiarities (e.g. md, mt etc. for nd, nt etc.; ch for cch, vanhir for vahnir) and unimportant slips (e.g. $\dot{s}\dot{i}\dot{s}r\bar{u}sanam$, gomasya, $v\dot{i}\dot{s}epi$) have been silently corrected. Conventional sandhi (e.g. $\dot{k}\bar{i}rtir$, kartavya etc. for $k\bar{i}rttir$, kartavya etc.; $a\dot{h} + s$ for $a\dot{s}$; $a\dot{s} + c$ for $a\dot{h} + c$; $i\dot{h} + sa$ for is + sa; $\ddot{n} + c$ for m + c), and punctuation (e.g. $yatnato'p\bar{i}ha$ for $yatnatop\bar{i}ha$) have been restored. Angle brackets excise; square brackets supplete.

There remains only the question of whether T_1 is itself a copy or the author's autograph. Since too many of the errors noted in T_1 can only be explained as the results of misreading by a copyist (see Leslie 1983 (2): appendix A), we must posit at least one, if not more, previous exemplars.

To clarify this supposition, a close examination was made of the three major insertions in T_1 . They are as follows:

A: T₁ 26v.9 (three folios) > PT 77.7-84.5;

B: $T_1 = 46v.3 / 48r.1$ (one folio) > PT 143.4-147.4;

C: T_1 66v.10/67 (1)r.9 (one folio) > PT 208.6-210.3.

The second and third folios of A are probably in the first hand (see above). The writing styles of B, C, and the first folio of A, although not identical, are sufficiently similar to suggest the same second hand, but perhaps on different occasions or with a different instrument.

We already know that T_1 is a copy. Were the insertions also copied from an exemplar? Were they perhaps the result of a second (e.g. comparer's) reading, specifically intended to correct mistakes and reinstate lost passages? Or were they original interpolations added to T_1 ?

There are several reasons to assume that the insertions too were copied, not composed. First, given the scribal traditions of India, it is highly unlikely that any scribe would presume to make such radical alterations to a religious, and therefore sacred, text. Secondly, insert A is begun by the second scribe and completed by the first; hardly likely if original work were involved. Thirdly, several errors in these interpolated passages are clearly the result of misreading rather than slips of writing.

Assuming then that both T_1 and the insertions were copied, were they copied from the same exemplar? If they were, then the disruption of the numbering sequence suggests that these passages were somehow lost in the initial transcription and reinstated later. But an examination of the insertions themselves shows that this is unlikely. First, the passages are improbably long. Secondly, none of the 'omissions' are the result of saut du même au même as is the case in many smaller insertions (e.g. T_1 25v.8).

I suggest therefore that we are dealing with one of two things. Either this transcription is the result of copying from an exemplar that kept its interpolated folios at the end where they would not have been seen until later. Or, as seems more likely, it is the result of copying from (a copy of?) the author's first draft and, on discovering (a copy of?) a second draft, of making the appropriate alterations later. If the latter is the case, then the alterations constitute original emendations to the text, not merely the scribe's usual correction of mistakes. Equally, if this is the case, then T₁ should make sense without the emendations. A brief examination of the interpolated passages demonstrates that this is in fact so.

In the case of A, three entire folios are inserted into the middle of one line. Without the insert, the argument on *strīdhana* makes sense. The insertion merely develops the argument further, in some instances using material already quoted to make another point. None of the first version is deleted.

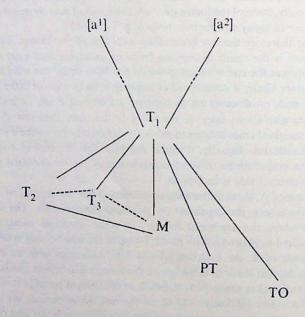
In the case of B, the insertion of one folio coincides with an extensive deletion in the first version. If we ignore the former and restore the latter, the argument still makes sense. In fact, much of the deleted passage is reinserted (i.e. T_1 46v.5-10 > PT 146.6-147.4); of the rest, some phrases are dropped altogether, while some are reproduced but in a different order and considerably enlarged (i.e. T_1 46v.3-47(1)v.7 > PT 143.3-146.6). This new portion is a complete rewriting of the old. It covers the same ground (prohibitions relating to the widow, specifically sexual intercourse with another man according to the practice of nivoga), but includes two new pūrvapakṣa objections and refutations (T_1 47r.1ff, 47v.5ff.; PT 143.3ff., 146.5ff.).

In the case of C, the insertion again coincides with an extensive deletion in the first version. If we ignore the former and restore the latter, the argument concerning a wife's obedience to her husband (specifically when she is required to do something that in normal circumstances she would not be allowed to do) continues to make sense. The deletion (i.e. T₁ 66v-67/68)

begins with a small example of saut du même au même: from ata eva sarvam api (PT 208.6) to ata eva sudarśanopākhyāne (PT 209.3). Of the rest, some is dropped altogether, and some is reinserted but in a different form. An added complication is that a large portion of insert C is itself deleted (i.e. T₁ 67v.2-10) and very little of this is to be found in either the first (i.e. pre-insert) version or in the refurbished insert C.

(The same is true of the additional insert described in section V, p.307, note 3. Without it, the treatise moves coherently from the story of the pigeons and the bird-catcher to that of Kauśika and the brahmin woman. The insertion—now in fact missing from T_1 —provides the entire story of Hariścandra.)

I conclude that the stemma codicum is in fact something more like this:



Abbreviations

adhikarana adhi. Adipurāna Ād.P. Adityapurāna Adit.P. Agnipurāna Ag.P. Aitareyāranyaka Ait Ār. Aitareyabrāhmana Ait Br. Amarakośa Amar.

Ānandāśrama edition Ān. Angirah(smrti) Ang. Anguttaranikāva Ang. Nik.

Āpastamba (dharmasūtra) Ap.

Aparārka's commentary on Yājñavalkyasmrti Apar.

Apastambagrhyasūtra Ap.gr. Apastambasmrti Ap.Sm. Apastambaśrautasūtra Āp.śr. Arthas. Arthasangraha Aśv. Āśvalāvana

Áśv.gr. Aśvalāyanagrhyasūtra Āśvalāyanaśrautasūtra Aśv.śr

Atri Atri(smrti)

A.V Atharvavedasamhitā

Bālambhaṭṭī, commentary on Yājñavalkyasmṛti Ral

Baudh. Baudhāyana (dharmasūtra) Baudh.gr. Baudhāyanagrhyasūtra Baudh.śr. Baudhāyanaśrautasūtra Bhāg.P. Bhāgavatapurāna Bibl.Ind

Bibliotheca Indica edition Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute BORI

Br.P. Brahmapurāna Br.Sam. Brhatsamhitā Br.Up.

Brhadaranyakopanisad

Car Carakasamhitā

Catalogus Catalogorum (see Aufrecht) CC Chowkhamba Sanskrit Series edition Chss

Daksa Daksa(smrti)

Devannabhatta, author of Smrticandrikā Dev.

Dharmāk. Dharmākūta Dh.kośa Dharmakośa Strīdharmapaddhati

Gaut. Gautama (dharmasūtra)

Gītā Bhagavadgītā
Gobh. Gobhila

340

Gobh.gr. Gobhilagṛhyasūtra Gobh.Sm. Gobhilasmṛti

GOR Gaekwad Oriental Series

Gov. on Baudh. Govindasvāmin's commentary on Baudhāyana-

dharmasūtra

Gov. on Manu Govindarāja's commentary on Manusmṛti

Har. Commentary by Haradatta

Hariv. Harivamsa

Hir.gr. Hiranyakesigrhyasūtra
Hir.śr. Hiranyakesisrautasūtra
HOS Harvard Oriental Series

Īś.Up. Īśopanisad

JAOS Journal of the American Oriental Society

Jai. Jaiminīyasūtra

Jīv. Dharmašāstrasangraha edited by Jīvānanda

Kād. Kādambarī
Kām. Kāmasūtra
Kāś. Kāśikāvṛtti
Kāṭh.Saṃ. Kāṭhakasaṃhitā
Kaṭh.Up. Kaṭhopaniṣad
Kāty. Kātyāyana
Kāty.Sm. Kātyāyanasmṛti

 Kāty.śr.
 Kātyāyanaśrautasūtra

 Kaus.Br.
 Kausītakibrāhmaņa

 Kaut.
 Kautilya's Arthaśāstra

 Kull.
 Kullūka's commentary on Manusmrti

Kum.Sl. Kumārilabhatta's Ślokavārtika
Kum.Ta. Kumārilabhatta's *Tantravārtika*Kum.Tu. Kumārilabhatta's *Tuptīkā*

Kürm.P. Kürmapurāņa

KSS Kashi Sanskrit Series edition

LaghuŚat. Laghuśātātapa(smṛti)
Ling.P. Lingapurāṇa

LSJ Personal communication from Tarkatīrtha

Lakshmanshastri Joshi

M MS of Strīdharmapaddhati from Mysore (see

appendix)

Mait. Maitrāyanīsamhitā

Mānavagrhyasūtra Mān.gr. Mānavasrautasūtra Mān.śr. Manu(smrti) Manu

Mārkandeva Märk. Mārkandeyapurāna Mārk.P.

Maskarin's commentary on Gautamadharmasūtra Mask.

Matsvapurāna Matsy.P. Mahabharata Mbh.

Medhātithi's commentary on Manusmrti Medh.

Mitāksarā Mit.

Mysore Supplemental Catalogue MSC

manuscript(s) MS(S)

Monier-William's Sanskrit-English Dictionary MW

Nand. on Manu Nandana's commentary on Manusmrti Nandapandita's commentary on Visnusmrti Nand. on Vis.Sm.

Nārāyana's commentary on Aśvalāyanagrhyasūtra Nār.

Nirn. Nirnayasindhu

New Catalogus Catalogorum (see Raghavan and NCC

> Kunjunni Raja) Nirnayasāgara edition

Pad.P Padmapurāna Pān. Pānini's Astādhvāvī

Par. Parāśara

N.S.

Pār.gr. Pāraskaragrhyasūtra Par.M. Parāsaramādhavīva Par.Sm. Parāsarasmrti

Pat. Patañjali's Mahābhāsya

Printed text of Strīdharmapaddhati (see appendix) PT

PTS Pali Text Society edition PVK

P. V. Kane's History of Dharmasastra

Rāghavānanda's commentary on Manusmṛti Rāgh.

Rām Rāmāvana

Rāmacandra's commentary on Manusmṛti Rāmac.

R.V. Rgvedasamhitā

Sab. Śabarabhāsya Sahā. Sahānumaranaviveka

Sankh. Śankha (smrti) Sankh.gr. Śānkhāyanagrhyasūtra

Śāńkh.śr. Śānkhāyanaśrautasūtra

Sarvajnanārāyaņa's commentary on Manusmṛti Sarv.

Sāt Śātātapa

Sat.Br Satapathabrāhmaņa Strīdharmapaddhati

Sāy. Commentary by Sāyaṇa

SBE Sacred Books of the East edition
SBH Sacred Books of the Hindus edition

Sdhp. Strīdharmapaddhati

Śiv.P.ŚivapurāṇaSk.P.SkandapurāṇaSm.A.SmṛtyarthasāraSm.C.SmṛticandrikāSm.M.SmṛtimuktāphalaŚr.kośaŚrautakośa

SS Smṛtīṇām samuccayaḥ

sū. sūtra

342

Subh. Subhasitaratnabhandagaram

Suś. Suśrutasūtra

T₁, T₂, T₃ MSS of Strīdharmapaddhati from Thanjavur (see appendix)

Tait.Ār. Taittirīyāranyaka
Tait.Br. Taittirīyabrāhmaṇa
Tait.Sam. Taittirīyasamhitā
Tait.Up. Taittirīyopanisad

TD Thanjavur Descriptive Catalogue (see Sastri)
TMSSM Tanjare Maharaja Serfaji's Sarasyati Mahaledi

TMSSM Tanjore Maharaja Serfoji's Sarasvati Mahal edition Trik. Trikāndamandana

Ujj. Ujjvalā

Vaikh. Vaikhānasasmārtasūtra

Vait. Vaitānasūtra Vām.P. Vāmanapurāņa Var.P. Varāhapurāņa

Vas. Vasistha(dharmasūtra)

Vāy.P. Vāyupurāṇa
Vim. Vimānavatthu
Vīr.Ā. Vīramitroday

Vīr.A. Vīramitrodaya āhnikaprakāśa
Vīr.P. Vīramitrodaya pūjāprakāśa
Vīr.S. Vīramitrodaya saṃskāraprakāśa

Viş.P. Vişnupurāna Viş.Sm. Vişnusmṛti

VSM Vaidika Samśodhana Mandala edition

Yājñ. Yājñavalkya(smṛti) Yatidh. Yatidharmaprakāśa

ZDMG Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft

Bibliography

Texts and translations

(* Denotes the primary edition, cited in bibliographic notes unless otherwise indicated.)

Abhijñānasakuntalam

Sanskrit text with English tr. and critical notes in C. R. Devadhar, Works of Kālidāsa, vol. 1 (Dramas), Delhi etc. (1966), reprint 1977.

Agnipurāna

Sanskrit text ed. B. Upādhyāya, KSS no. 174, Varanasi 1966. English tr. M.N. Dutt, 2 vols., ChSS no. 54, Varanasi 1967.

Aitarevāranvaka

Sanskrit text and English tr. A.B. Keith, Anecdota Oxoniensia, Oxford 1909.

Aitareyabrāhmana

Sanskrit text with Sayana commentary, ed. Kāśinātha Śastry Āgāśe, 2 vols., An.no.32, Pune 1896.*

Sanskrit text and English tr. M. Haug, 2 vols., Bombay 1863. English tr. A.B. Keith, HOS no.25, Cambridge, Mass. 1920.

Amarakośa of Amarasimha

Sanskrit text and French tr. A. Loiseleur-Deslongchamps, 2 parts in l vol., Paris 1839.

Angirahsmrti

See Smṛtīnām samuccayah.

Anguttaranikāva

Pali text ed. E. Hardy, 5 vols., PTS, London 1899.

Apararka

See Yājñavalk.yasmrti (An.).

Apastambadharmasūtra

Sanskrit text with extracts from Haradatta's commentary, the Ujjvalā,

ed. G. Bühler, Bombay 1932.

Sanskrit text with Haradattamiśra's commentary, the Ujjvalā, ed. A. Chinnasvami Sastri and A. Ramanatha Sastri, KSS no. 93, Benares 1932.

English tr. G. Bühler (1879), SBE reprint, Delhi 1975.

Āpastambagrhyasūtra

Sanskrit text with extracts from the commentaries of Haradatta and Sudarśanācārya, ed. M. Winternitz, Vienna 1887.* Sanskrit text with two commentaries, the Anākula of Haradatta Miśra and the *Tātparyadarśana* of Sudarśanācārya, ed. A. Chinnasvami Sastri, KSS no.59, Benares 1928.

English tr. H. Oldenberg (1892), SBE reprint, Delhi 1967.

Äpastambasmṛti

See Smṛtīnām samuccayah.

Āpastambasrautasūtra

Sanskrit text with Rudradatta's commentary, ed. R. Garbe, 3 vols., Calcutta 1882, 1885, 1903.

German tr. W. Caland, 2 vols., (1921) Amsterdam 1924.

Arthasangrahah of Laugākși Bhāskara

Sanskrit text with Rāmeśvara's commentary, ed. Nārāyana Rāma Ācārya, N.S., Bombay 1950.

Arthasāstra of Kautilya

Sanskrit text crit. ed. R.P. Kangle, Bombay 1960.

English tr. R.P. Kangle, Bombay 1963.

Astādhyāyī of Pāṇini

Sanskrit text edited, tr. and explained with reference to the commentaries, by S.C. Vasu (1891), 2 vols., reprint Delhi etc. 1977.*

Sanskrit text with the Kāšikāvrtti ed. D. Shastri and K.P. Shukla, 6 vols., Varanasi 1965-7.

Astāngahrdaya of Vāgbhata

Sanskrit text with the commentary of Arunadatta, ed. A.M. Kunte, 2 vols., Bombay 1880.

Āśvalāyanagṛhyasūtra

Sanskrit text with Nārāyaṇa commentary, ed. Gaṇeśaśāstrī Gokhale, Ān.no.105, Pune 1978.

English tr. H. Oldenberg (1886), SBE reprint, Delhi 1967.

Āśvalāyanaśrautasūtra

Sanskrit text with commentary of Gargya Narayana, ed. R. Vidyaratna, Bibl.Ind., Calcutta 1874.*

Agnihotracandrikā: Sanskrit text of Āśv.śr. with bhāṣya of Devatvāta and vṛṭṭi of Gārgya Nārāyaṇa, Ān.no.87, Pune 1921.

English tr. H. Ranade, part 1, Poona 1981.

Atrismṛti

See Strīnām samuccayah

Atharvavedasamhitā

Sanskrit text ed. S.D. Satvalekar, Bombay 1957.

English tr. W.D. Whitney, 2 vols., HOS, Cambridge, Mass. 1905. English tr. M. Bloomfield (1897), reprint Delhi 1964.

Bālambhattī

See Yājñavalkyasmrti.

Baudhäyanadharmasütra

Sanskrit text ed. E. Hultzsch, ZDMG VIII.4, Leipzig 1884.*

Sanskrit text with Govindasvāmin's commentary, ed. Chinnasvami Sastri, KSS no. 104, Benares 1934.

English tr. G. Bühler (1882), SBE reprint, Delhi 1965.

Baudhāyanagrhyaparibhāsāsūtra See Baudhāyanagrhyasūtra.

Baudhāyanagṛhyapariśiṣṭasūtra

Sanskrit text and English tr. in Selections from the Baudhāyanagṛhyaparisistasūtra by P.N.U. Harting, Amersfoort 1922.

Baudhāyanagṛhyaśeṣasūtra See Baudhāyanagṛhyasūtra.

Baudhāyanagṛhyasūtra

Sanskrit text including Baudhāyanagrhyaparibhāṣāsūtra and Baudhāyanagrhyaśeṣasūtra, ed. R. Shama Sastri, Mysore Sanskrit Series 32/55, Mysore 1920.

Baudhāyaņaśrautasūtra
Sanskrit text ed. W. Caland, 3 vols., Bibl.Ind., Calcutta 1904-24.

Bhagavadgītā

Sanskrit text ed. S.K. Belvalkar, reprint from BORI crit. edn. of the Mahābhārata, Poona 1968.

Bhāgavatapurāņa

Sanskrit text and French tr. E. Burnouf, 5 vols., vol.V by M. Hauvette-Besnault and Le R.P. Roussel, Paris 1840-98.

Bhojanasūtra

See Pāraskaragrhyasūtra, parišistam.

Brahmapurāņa

Sanskrit text, An.no.28, Pune 1895.

Brhadaranyakopanisad

Sanskrit text crit. ed. V.P. Limaye and R.D. Vadekar, in Eighteen Principal Upanișads, vol.I, VSM, Pune 1958.*

Sanskrit text with commentaries of Śankara and Anandagiri, Kasi 1936.

Brhatsamhitā of Varāhamihira

Sanskrit text and English tr. V. Subrahmanya Sastri and V.M. Ramakrishna Bhat, 2 vols., Bangalore 1947.*

Sanskrit text ed. H. Kern, Bibl.Ind., Calcutta 1865.

Sanskrit text with commentary of Utpala, ed. S. Dvivedī, 2 vols., Benares 1895, 1897.

Buddhacarita of Aśvaghosa

Sanskrit text and English tr. E.B. Cowell (1894), reprint Delhi 1977.

Carakasamhitā of Agnivesa
Sanskrit text and English tr. with a critical exposition based on Cakrapānidatta's commentary, vol.I, R.K. Sharma, ChSS, Varanasi 1976.

Caturvargacintāmaņi of Hemādri

Sanskrit text ed. Y. Bhattācārya and K. Tarkaratne, 2 vols., Bibl.Ind., Calcutta 1879.

Daksasmrti

See Smrtinam samuccayah.

Dharmakosa

Encyclopaedia of religious law (dharmaśāstra), ed. Lakshmanshastri Joshi, Prājāapāṭhaśālāmaṇḍala, Vai. Vol.I: Vyavahārakāṇḍa, 3 parts, 1937–41; Vol.II: Upaniṣatkāṇḍa, 4 parts, 1950–3; Vol.III: Saṃskārakāṇḍa, 3 parts, 1959–81.

Dharmākūta of Tryambakarāyamakhin

Sanskrit commentary on the Rāmāyaṇa in six vols. Vol.I: Bālakāṇḍa, Shri Vani Vilas, Srirangam, 1916; Vol.II: Ayodhyākāṇḍa, 2 parts, Shri Vani Vilas, Srirangam, 1924, 1926; Vol.III: Āraṇyakāṇḍa, ed. K.S. Subrahmanya Sastry, TMSSM, Thanjavur, 1955; Vol.IV: Kiṣkindhā-kāṇḍa, ed. K. Vāsudeva Śastrī, TMSSM; Vol.V: Sundarakāṇḍa, ed. T. Chandrasekharan, TMSSM, Madras 1951; Vol.VI: Yuddhakāṇḍa, ed. P.V. Varadarāja Śarmā, TMSSM, Thanjavur 1964.

Dharmaśāstrasamgraha

Collection of twenty-six *smṛtis* ed. Jīvānanda Vidyāsāgara Bhattācārya (Jīv.), 2 vols., Calcutta 1876.

Gautamadharmasūtra

Sanskrit text, Gautamapranītadharmasūtrāni, with Haradatta's commentary, Ān.no.61, Pune 1966.*

Sanskrit text with Haradatta's commentary, ed. U.C. Pandey, KSS no.172, Varanasi. 1966.

Sanskrit text with Maskarin's commentary, ed. L. Srinivasacharya, Mysore 1917.

Sanskrit text, Śrīgautamadharmaśāstram, ed. A.F. Stenzler, London 1876.

English tr. G. Bühler (1879), SBE reprint, Delhi 1975.

Gobhilagrhyasūtra

Sanskrit text ed. Candra Kānta Tarkālaņkāra, 2 vols. in 1, Bibl.Ind., 2nd edn., Calcutta 1908.

English tr. H. Oldenberg (1892), SBE reprint, Delhi 1967.

Gobhilasmṛti

See Smṛtīnām samuccayah.

Grhyasangraha of Gobhilaputra

Appendix to the Gobhilagrhyasūtra, Sanskrit text ed. C. Tarkālankāra, Bibl.Ind., 2nd edn., Calcutta 1910.

Harivamsa

Sanskrit text as in crit. edn. of Mahābhārata by V.S. Sukthankar et al., BORI, Poona 1976.

Hiranyak esigrhyasutra

Sanskrit text with extracts from Matrdatta's commentary, ed. J. Kirste. Vienna 1889.

English tr. H. Oldenberg (1892), SBE reprint, Delhi 1967.

Hiranyakesisrautasūtra

Sanskrit text with commentaries of Gopinatha and Mahadeva, ed. K.S. Agase, An.no.53, 9 parts, Pune 1909-30.

Isopanisad

Sanskrit text crit. ed. V.P. Limaye and R.D. Vadekar, in Eighteen Principal Upanisads, vol.I, VSM, Pune 1958.

English tr. S. Radhakrishnan in The Principal Upanisads (1953). London 1974.

English tr. R.E. Hume in The Thirteen Principal Upanishads, 2nd edn. (1931), London 1971.

Jaiminīvasūtra

Sanskrit text with Sabara's commentary, ed. M. Nyāyaratna as The Mīmāmsā Darśana, 2 vols., Bibl.Ind., Calcutta 1889.*

Sanskrit text and English tr. M.L. Sandal, SBH reprint, New York 1974. English tr. of Jaiminīyasūtra with Sabara's commentary, in Shabarabhāsya by G. Jha, 3 vols., GOS, Baroda 1933, 1934, 1936.

Jayākhyasamhitā

Sanskrit text crit. ed. E. Krishnamacharya, GOS no.54, Baroda 1931.

Kādambarī of Bānabhatta

Sanskrit text with the commentaries of Bhanucandra and Siddhacandra, ed. K.P. Parab, N.S., Bombay 1890. English tr. C.M. Ridding, London 1896.

Kāmasūtra of Vātsyāyana

Sanskrit text with the commentary of Yasodhara, ed. G.D. Shastri, KSS no.29 Benares 1929.

English tr. S.C. Upadhyaya, Bombay 1961.

English tr. with extracts from Kokaśāstra, Anangaranga etc., by I. Sinha, London 1980.

Kāśikāvrtti of Vāmana Jāyāditya

Sanskrit text with the commentaries of Jinendrabuddhipāda and Haradattamiśra ed. D. Shastri and K.P. Shukla, 6 vols., Varanasi 1965-7.

Kāthakasamhitā

Sanskrit text ed. L. von Schroeder, 3 vols., Leipzig 1900-10.

Kathopanisad

Sanskrit text crit. ed. V.P. Limaye and R.D. Vadekar, in Eighteen Principal Upanisads, vol.I, VSM, Pune 1958.

Kātyāyanasmrti

See Dharmaśāstrasamgraha (Jīv.).

Kātyāyanasrautasūtra

Sanskrit text with extracts from the commentaries of Karka and Yājñikadeva, ed. A. Weber (1859), ChSS no.104, Varanasi 1972.

English tr. H.G. Ranade, Poona 1978.

Kausītakibrāhmana (also called Śānkhāyanabrāhmana)

Sanskrit text with the commentary of Udaya, crit. ed. E.R. Sreekrishna Sarma, 3 vols., Wiesbaden 1968-76.

English tr. A.B. Keith, HOS no.25, Cambridge, Mass. 1920.

Kumārasambhava of Kālidāsa

Sanskrit text crit. ed. Sūryakanta, Delhi 1962.

English tr. by R.T.H. Griffith, 2nd edn., London 1879.

Kūrmapurāna

Sanskrit text crit. edn. and English tr. A.S. Gupta, Kashiraj Trust, Varanasi 1972.

Laghusātātapasmrti

See Smṛtīṇām samuccayah.

Laghvāsvalāyanasmṛti

See Smṛtiṇām samuccayah.

Lingapurāņa

Sanskrit text ed. P. Tarkaratna et al., Calcutta 1890.

Mahābhārata

Sanskrit text crit. ed. V.S. Sukthankar et al., 19 vols., BORI, Poona 1933-9; 6 vols. of *Pratīka*-index,1967-72.*

Sanskrit text as constituted in the crit. edn., 4 vols., Poona 1971–5.* English tr. (incomplete) J.A.B. van Buitenen, 3 vols., Chicago and London: vol.I (1973), Phoenix edn. 1980; vol.II (1975), Phoenix edn. 1981; vol.III, 1978.

English tr. (K.M. Ganguli) ed. P.C. Roy, 12 vols., Calcutta 1883-96.

Mahābhāsya of Patañjali

Sanskrit text ed. L.F. Kielhorn, 3rd edn. by K.V. Abhyankar, 3 vols., BORI, Poona 1962-72.*

Sanskrit text and English tr. K.C. Chatterji, Calcutta 1957.

Mahābhāsya pradīpa vyākhyānāni: Sanskrit text ed. M.S. Narasimhacharya, with the commentaries of Kaiyata and Nāgeša, and French tr. P. Filliozat, adhyāya 1, Pondichéry 1973.

Maitrāyanīsamhitā

Sanskrit text ed. L. von Schroeder, Leipzig 1881.

Mānasollāsa of Someśvara (also called Abhilāşitārthacintāmaņi)

Sanskrit text ed. G.K. Shrigondekar, 3 vols., GOS nos. 28,84,138; Baroda 1925, 1939, 1961.

Mānavagrhyasūtra

Sanskrit text with the commentary of Astavakra, ed. R.H. Sastri, GOS no.35, Baroda 1926.

English tr. M.J. Dresden, Groningen 1941.

Mānavasrautasūtra

Sanskrit text ed. F. Knauer, St. Petersbourg 1900.

Manusmrti

Sanskrit text with the commentaries of Medhātithi, Sarvajāanārāyana, Kullūka, Rāghavānanda, Nandana, Rāmacandra and Govindarāja, ed. V.N. Mandlik, Bombay 1886.*

Sanskrit text with Kullūka's commentary, N.S., 2 edns., Pune 1929, 1946. Sanskrit text with Kullūka's commentary, with introduction, parisista and index by Gopala Sastri Nene, ChSS, Benares 1935. English tr. G. Bühler (1886), SBE reprint, Delhi 1979.

Mārkandevapurāna

Sanskrit text ed. K.M. Banerjea, Calcutta 1862. English tr. F.E. Pargiter, Calcutta 1904.

Matsvapurāna

Sanskrit text, An.no.54, Poona 1907. English tr. B.C. Majumdar, Delhi 1972.

Mīmāmsākośa

Dictionary of mīmāmsā technical terms, ed. Svāmī Kevalānandasarasvatī, 7 vols., Prājñapāthaśālāmandala, Vai 1952-66.

Mitāksarā of Vijānesvara See Yājñavalkyasmrti.

Mudrārāksasa of Viśākhadatta

Sanskrit text with Dhundhirāja's commentary and English tr. M.R. Kale, 4th revised edn., Bombay 1927.

Mudritakumudacandraprakarana of Yasascandra

Sanskrit text, Jainayaśovijayagranthamālā 8, Benares 1906.

Nirnayasindhu of Kamalākarabhatta

Sanskrit text ed. Nārāyaṇa Rāma Ācārya, N.S. 5th edn., Bombay 1949.

Nyāyakośa

Dictionary of technical terms of Indian philosophy, ed. B. Jhalakikar, revised V. Abhyankar, Poona 1928.

Padmapurāna

Sanskrit text ed. V.N. Mandlik, 4 vols., An., Pune 1893-4.

- Parāšaramādhavīva

Sanskrit text of the Parāšarasmṛti with the commentary of Mādhavācārya, ed. V.S. Islāmapurkar, vols. I and II, 4 parts, Bombay 1893-1906.* Sanskrit text of the Parāsarasmṛti with the commentary of Mādhavācārya, ed. Candrakānta Tarkālankāra (1893-9), Bibl.Ind., reprint Calcutta 1973-4.

Parāśarasmrti

See Parāśaramādhavīya.

Pāraskaragrhyasūtra

Sanskrit text with the five commentaries of Karkopādhyāya, Jayarāma, Harihara, Gadadhāra; and appendixes Vāpyādipratiṣṭakandikā, Śaucasūtra, Snānasūtra, Śrāddhasūtra, and Bhojanasūtra, with commentaries; ed. M.G. Bakre, Bombay 1917.

English tr. H. Oldenberg (1886), SBE reprint, Delhi 1967.

Rāmāyana of Vālmīki

Sanskrit text ed. S. Kuppuswāmi Śāstrigal et al., 2nd edn., Madras 1958.* Sanskrit text crit. ed. G.H. Bhatt et al., 7 vols., Baroda 1960-75. English tr. H.P. Shastri (1953-9), 3 vols., London 1962, 1969 (2nd edn.), 1976 (3rd edn.).

Rgvedasamhitā

Sanskrit text with the commentary of Sāyaṇācārya, VSM, 2nd crit. edn., 5 vols., Puṇe 1972- .*

Sanskrit text with the commentary of Sāyanācārya, ed. F. Max Müller, 2nd edn., 6 vols., London 1890-2.

English tr. R.T.H. Griffith (1889), 2nd rev. edn., Delhi 1976.

Śabarabhāṣya

See Jaiminīyasūtra.

Sahānumaraņaviveka of Anantarāma

Sanskrit text ed. J.D.M. Derrett, 'Anantarāma's defence of suttee (c. 1818–1820)' in *Our Heritage*, Calcutta Sanskrit College Research Series no. CXIX, 150th Anniversary Volume 1980.

Śāhendravilāsa of Śrīdhara Venkateśa (Ayyāvāl)

Sanskrit text ed. with historical introduction by V. Raghavan, Tiruchi 1952.

Sankhasmrti

See Smṛtīṇām samuccayah.

Sānkhāyanabrāhmana

See Kausītakibrāhmaņa.

Śānkhāyanagrhyasūtra

Sanskrit text crit. ed. S.R. Sehgal, Delhi 1960.

English tr. H. Oldenberg (1886), SBE reprint, Delhi 1967.

Śānkhāyanaśrautasūtra

Sanskrit text with the commentaries of Varadattasuta Ānartīya and Govinda, crit. edn. A. Hillebrandt, 4 vols., Bibl.Ind., Calcutta 1888–99.

Saptaśataka of Hāla (also called Gāthāsaptaśatī)

Sanskrit text with English tr. R. Basak, Calcutta 1971.

Satapathabrāhmana

Sanskrit text with extracts from the commentaries of Sayana, Harisvāmin and Dvivedaganga, ed. A. Weber, Berlin 1855.

English tr. J. Eggeling (1882-1900), 5 vols., SBE reprint, Delhi 1972-8.

Sivapurāna

Sanskrit text with Hindi tr. by Rāma Sarmā, Bareli 1966. English tr. J.L. Shastri and A. Kunst, 4 vols., Delhi 1970.

Skandapurāna

Sanskrit text in 7 vols., folio edn., Venkateśvara Press, Bombay 1909-11.

Ślokavārtika of Kumārilabhatta

Sanskrit gloss on Śabara's commentary on Jaiminīyasūtra I, ed. G. Jha, Bibl.Ind. no.138, Calcutta 1900.

Smrticandrikā of Devannabhatta

Sanskrit text ed. L. Śrīnivāsācārya; vol.I, samskāra; vol.II, āhnika; vol.III, parts i and ii, vyavahāra; Mysore 1914-16.* English tr. J.R. Gharpure, 3 vols. (āhnika; vyavahāra, parts ii and iii), Bombay 1946, 1950, 1952.

Smrtimuk:āphala of Vaidyanāthadīksita

Sanskrit text ed. J.R. Gharpure; vol.I, varnāśramadharma; vol.II, āhnika; Bombay 1937-8.

Smrtīnām samuccayah

Collection of twenty-six prose smrtis, An.no.48, Pune 1929.

Smrtvarthasāra of Śrīdhara

Sanskrit text, An. no.70, Pune 1912.

Srautakośa

Encyclopaedia of Vedic sacrificial ritual, ed. C.G. Kashikar, R.N. Dandekar et al., VSM, Poona: vol.I, parts i and ii, 1958; vol.II, parts i and ii, 1962, 1973.

Subhāsitaratnabhāndāgāram

Collection of verses selected by K.P. Paraba (1880), 5th revised edn. by W.L.S. Pansikar, Bombay 1911.

Susrutasamhitā

Sanskrit text with Hindi commentary by K. Ambikādatta, 2 vols., KSS no.156, Benares 1954, 1959.

English tr. by K.K. Bhishagratna, 3 vols., ChSS, 2nd edn., Varanasi 1963.

Taittirīyāranyakam

Sanskrit text with Sayana's commentary, ed. Baba Sastri Phadke, 2 vols., An.no.36, Pune 1897-8.

Taittirīyabrāhmana

Sanskrit text with Sāyaṇa's commentary, ed. N.B. Godbole, 3 vols., An.no.37, Pune 1898.

Taittirīyasamhitā

Sanskrit text with Sāyaṇa's commentary, 9 vols., An.no.42, Pune 1900-8.

English tr. A.B. Keith, 2 vols., HOS nos. 18-19, Cambridge, Mass. 1914.

Taittiriyopanisad

Sanskrit text crit. ed. V.P. Limaye and R.D. Vadekar, in Eighteen Principal Upanisads, vol.1, VSM, Pune 1958.

Tantravārtika of Kumārilabhatta

Sanskrit gloss on Sabara's commentary on Jaiminīyasūtra II-III, ed. Gangādhara Sāstrī, 2 vols., Benares 1903.

English tr. G. Jha, 2 vols., Bibl.Ind. no.161, Calcutta 1924.

Trikändamandana of Bhāskara Misra

Sanskrit text with an anonymous commentary, ed. Candrakānta Tar-kālaṅkāra Bhaṭṭācārya, 3 fascs. in 1 vol., Bibl.Ind., Calcutta 1898-1903.

Tupţīkā of Kumārilabhatta

Sanskrit gloss on Śabara's commentary on *Jaiminīyasūtra* IV onwards, ed. Gangādhara Śāstrī, 4 fascs., ChSS, Benares 1903-4.

Ujjvalā of Haradattamiśra

See Äpastambadharmasūtra.

Vaikhānasasmārtasūtra

Sanskrit text crit. ed. W. Caland, Bibl.Ind. no.205, Calcutta 1927. English tr. by W. Caland, Bibl.Ind. no.207, Calcutta 1929.

Vaitānasūtra

Sanskrit text crit. ed. with German tr. R. Garbe, London 1878.

Vāmanapurāņa

Sanskrit text crit. ed. with English tr. A.S. Gupta, Kashiraj Trust, Varanasi 1968.

Varāhapurāņa

Sanskrit text ed. Hrsikesa Śāstrī, Bibl.Ind., Calcutta 1893.

Vasisthadharmasütra

Sanskrit text ed. A.A. Führer, Poona 1930.

English tr. G. Bühler (1882), SBE reprint, Delhi 1965.

Vāyupurāņa

Sanskrit text, An.no.49, Pune 1905.

Vimānavatthu

Pali text ed. E.R. Gooneratne; see Khuddhanikāya, Suttapitaka, PTS, London 1886.

Vīramitrodaya of Mitramiśra

Sanskrit text ed. P.N. Sarma, ChSS 30/31/40, Benares: samskāra-prakāśa 1906, 1913; āhnikaprakāśa 1913; pūjāprakāśa 1913.

Visnupurāna

Sanskrit text with the commentary of Śrīdharasvāmin, ed. Jīvānanda Vidyāsāgara, Calcutta 1882.

English tr. H.H. Wilson, ed. F. Hall, 6 vols., London 1864-70.

Visnusmrti

Sanskrit text with extracts from the commentary of Nandapandita, ed. J. Jolly (1881), ChSS no.95, Varanasi 1962.*

Sanskrit text with Nandapandita's commentary, ed. V. Krishnamacharya, 2 vols., Adyar 1964.

English tr. J.-Jolly (1880), SBE reprint, Delhi 1977.

Vrddhahārītasmṛti

See Smrtīnām samuccayah.

Yatidharmaprakāśa of Vāsudevāśrama

Sanskrit text crit. ed. with introduction, annotated translation and appendices, P. Olivelle, 2 parts, Vienna 1976, 1977.

Yājñavalkyasmṛti

Sanskrit text with the *Mitākṣarā* commentary, 5th edn. by N.R. Acharya, N.S., Bombay 1949.*

Sanskrit text with Aparārka's commentary, 2 vols., Ān.no.46, Poona 1903-4

English tr. (ācāra only) with the Mitākṣarā commentary and Bālam-bhaṭṭī gloss, by S.C. Vidyārṇava (1918), SBE vol.21, reprint New York 1974.

English tr. of Yājñ. with the Mitākṣarā and the Vīramitrodaya of Mitramiśra, by J.R. Gharpure, 2 parts, Bombay 1936-7.

Secondary literature

Abbott, J.E. (tr.) Bahiṇā Bāī: a Translation of her Autobiography and Verses (The Poet-Saints of Maharashtra, no.5), Poona 1929.

Alston, A.J. (tr.) The Devotional Poems of Mīrābāī, Delhi 1980.

Altekar, A.S. The Position of Women in Hindu Civilisation from Prehistoric Times to the Present Day (2nd edn. 1959), Delhi 1978.

Aufrecht, T. (ed.) Catalogus Catalogorum: an Alphabetical Register of Sanskrit Works and Authors (CC) 3 vols., Leipzig 1891-1903.

Ardener, E. 'Belief and the problem of women', in *Perceiving Women*, ed. S. Ardener, London 1975.

Ardener, S. (ed.) Perceiving Women, London 1975.

Bahadur, K.P. The Rasikapriya of Keshavadasa, Delhi 1972.

Bennett, L. Dangerous Wives and Sacred Sisters: Social and Symbolic Roles of High-Caste Women in Nepal, New York 1983.

- Bhandarkar, R.G. 'History of child-marriage', ZDMG, vol. 47, Leipzig 1893, pp. 143-56.
- Bhardwaj, S.M. Hindu Places of Pilgrimage in India: a Study in Cultural Geography (1973), Berkeley 1983.
- Bloomfield, M. 'The *dohada* or craving of pregnant women', JAOS, vol.lx, part 1, 1920, pp.1-24.
- —— (tr.) Hymns of the Atharva Veda, together with Extracts from the Ritual Books and the Commentaries (1897), reprint Delhi 1964(1).
- A Vedic Concordance (1906), reprint Delhi 1964(2).
- Bodewitz, H.W. Jaiminīya Brāhmaṇa I, 1-65, Translation and Commentary; with a Study, Agnihotra and Prāṇāgnihotra, Leiden 1973.
- The Daily Evening and Morning Offering (Agnihotra) according to the Brāhmaṇas, Leiden 1976.
- Böhtlingk, O. and Roth, R. Sanskrit Wörterbuch, 7 vols., St. Petersburg 1855-75.
- Brockington, J.L. 'Guarded by grass: a Rāmāyaṇa motif and some Western parallels', *Indologica Taurinensia*, forthcoming.
- Brown, W. Norman, 'Duty as truth in ancient India', in *India and Indology:* Selected Articles by W. Norman Brown, ed. R. Rocher, Delhi 1978.
- Bühler, G. (ed.) Āpastambīyadharmasūtram: Āpastamba's Aphorisms on the Sacred Laws of the Hindus edited with Extracts from Haradatta's Commentary; the Ujjvalā, 3rd edn., Bombay 1932.
- (tr.) The Sacred Laws of the Aryas: as Taught in the Schools of Apastamba, Gautama, Vasishtha and Baudhāyana; vol.I, Apastamba and Gautama (1879), SBE reprint, Delhi 1975; vol.II, Vasishtha and Baudhāyana (1882), SBE reprint, Delhi 1965.
- (tr.) The Laws of Manu, translated with Extracts from Seven Commentaries (1886), SBE reprint, Delhi 1979.
- Bühneman, G. Budha-Kauśika's Rāmarakṣāstotra: a Contribution to the Study of Sanskrit Devotional Poetry, Vienna 1983.
- Burnell, A.C. A Classified Index to the Sanskrit MSS in the Palace at Tanjore, London 1880.
- Caplan, P. 'Ascetics in Western Nepal', The Eastern Anthropologist (26), 1973, pp.173-82.
- Carstairs, G.M. The Twice-Born: a Study of a Community of High-Caste Hindus, Bombay 1971.
- Chaki-Sircar, M. Feminism in a Traditional Society: Women of the Manipur Valley, Delhi 1984.
- Colebrooke, H.T. 'Description of a species of ox named gayal', Asiatick Researches: or Transactions of the Society instituted in Bengal for En-

- quiring into the History and Antiquities, the Arts, Sciences, & Literature of Asia, vol. VIII, Calcutta 1805, pp.486-501.
- Cone, M. and Gombrich, R.F. The Perfect Generosity of Prince Vessantara: a Buddhist Epic, Oxford 1977.
- Das, R.M. Women in Manu and His Seven Commentators, Varanasi 1962.
- David, Rev. C. Drawings of the Costumes of the Southern Peninsula of India by a Native of Tanjore. Explanation of the Several Figures, their Cast, Language etc. by the Revd. Christian David, Colombo 1815. [Box 15; The Wellcome Institute for the History of Medicine, warehouse],
- Denton, Lynn Teskey 'Purity and power: dimensions of female asceticism in the Hindu tradition', D. Phil. thesis, Univ. of Oxford, 1988.
- Derrett, J.D.M. Dharmasastra and Juridical Literature, part of vol.IV in A History of Indian Literature, ed. Jan Gonda, Wiesbaden 1973(1).
- —History of Indian Law (Dharmaśāstra), Handbuch der Orientalistik, Zweite Abteilung, III Band, 1 Abschnitt, Leiden/Köln 1973(2).
- "What the dharmasāstra has to say about dowry', in Studies in Dharmasāstra, ed. R.W. Lariviere, Calcutta 1984.
- Devahuti, D. Harsha: a Political Study, Oxford 1970.
- Dimmitt, C. 'Sītā: mother goddess and śakti', in The Divine Consort: Rādhā and the Goddesses of India, ed. J.S. Hawley and D.M. Wulff, Berkeley 1982, pp.210-23.
- Dumont, P.-É. L'Agnihotra: Description de l'Agnihotra dans le Rituel Védique d'après les Śrautasūtras, Baltimore 1939.
- The horse-sacrifice in the Taittirīya-Brāhmaṇa: the eighth and ninth prapāṭhakas of the third kāṇḍa of the Taittirīya-Brāhmaṇa with translation', Proceedings of the American Philosophical Society, vol.92, no.6, Philadelphia 1948.
- Dutt, U.C. The Materia Medica of the Hindus with a Glossary of Indian Plants by George King, revised (2nd edn.) with additions by K.B.L. Sen, K.A. Sen and K.P.K. Sen, Calcutta 1922.
- Eggeling, J. (tr.) The Satapatha Brāhmana according to the Text of the Mādhyandina School (1882–1900), SBE reprint, Delhi: vol.I, 1972; vol.II, 1978; vol.III, 1979; vol.IV, 1978; vol.V, 1978.
- Falk, N.A. 'The case of the vanishing nun: the fruits of ambivalence in Indian Buddhism', in *Unspoken Worlds: Women's Religious Lives in Non-Western Cultures*, ed. N.A. Falk and R.M. Gross, San Francisco 1980.
- Finot, L. Les Lapidaires Indiens, Paris 1896.
- Fuller, C.J. and Logan, P. 'The Navarātri festival in Madurai', Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies, vol.XLVIII, part 1, 1985, pp.79-110.

- Gaur, A. Women in India, London 1980.
- Gharpure, J.R. (tr.) Yājñavalkyasmrti with the Mitākṣarā of Vijñāneśvara and the Vīramitrodaya of Mitramišra, 2 parts, Bombay 1936-7.
- Gode, P.K. 'Raghunātha, a protégé of Queen Dīpābāī of Tanjore and his works: between A.D. 1675 and 1712', Studies in Indian Literary History, vol.II, Bombay 1954.
- 'Studies in the history of dietetics—references to "avarānna" in the Dharmasūtras of Baudhāyana and Āpastamba and the Grhyasūtra of Āpastamba (between B.C. 500 and A.D. 500)', Studies in Indian Literary History, vol.III, Poona 1956, pp.153-60.
- 'Some notes on the history of soap-nuts, soap and washermen in India—between B.C. 300 and A.D. 1900', Studies in Indian Cultural History, vol.III, BORI, Poona 1969, pp.150-67.
- Gombrich, R.F. Precept and Practice: Traditional Buddhism in the Rural Highlands of Ceylon, Oxford 1971.
- Gonda, J. Visnuism and Śivaism: a Comparison, London 1970.
- Vedic Ritual: the Non-Solemn Rites', Handbuch der Orientalistik, Abt.2, Band 4, Abschn. 1, Leiden-Köln 1980.
- Gopalan, S. Bhomsale Vamisa Caritra, Being the Marathi Historical Inscription in the Big Temple, Tanjore, Marathi text translated into English by S. Gopalan, into Tamil by V. Śrīnivāsacārī, TMSSM no.46, Thanjavur 1980.
- Goswami, R.R.B. Descriptive Catalogue of Marathi Manuscripts and Books in the Tanjore Maharaja Serfoji's Sarasvati Mahal Library, 3 vols., Tanjore 1929, 1932, 1938.
- Hardy, F. 'The diary of an unknown Indian girl', Religion, 1980, vol.X.
- Heesterman, J.C. The Ancient Indian Royal Consecration: the Rājasūya Described according to the Yajus Texts and Annotated, The Hague 1957.
- Hemingway, F.R. Madras District Gazetteers: Tanjore, vol.I, Madras 1906.
- Hiebert, J. Hamper 'Sanskrit poetry by three Vijayanagara queens', Vijayanagara—City and Empire: New Currents of Research, ed. A.L. Dallapiccola in collaboration with S.Z. Lallemant, Wiesbaden 1985.
- Hirschon, R. 'Open body/closed space: the transformation of female sexuality', in *Defining Females*, ed. S. Ardener, London 1978.
- Hobson, S. Family Web: a Story of India, London 1978.
- Horner, I.B. Women under Primitive Buddhism: Laywomen and Almswomen (1930), Delhi 1975.
- Hume, R.E. (tr.) The Thirteen Principal Upanishads (1921), 2nd revised edn. 1931, London 1971.

- The Image of Man: the Indian Perception of the Universe through 2000 Years of Painting and Sculpture, Arts Council of Great Britain, London 1982.
- Ions, V. Indian Mythology, London 1968.
- Jacobson, D. 'The chaste wife', American Studies in the Anthropology of India, ed. S. Vatuk, Delhi 1978.
- Jaini, P.S. The Jaina Path of Purification, Berkeley 1979.
- Jameson, A.S. 'Gangāguru: the Public and Private Life of a Brāhman Community of North India', D.Phil. thesis, Univ. of Oxford, 1976.
- Jha, G. (tr.) Shabarabhāsya, 3 vols., Baroda 1933, 1934, 1936.
- Jīvānanda Vidyāsāgara Bhatṭācārya (ed.) Dharmašāstrasamgraha, a collection of twenty-six smṛtis in 2 vols., Calcutta 1876.
- Jolly, J. Medicin, Strassburg 1901.
- Kane, P.V. History of Dharmašāstra (Ancient and Mediaeval Religious and Civil Law in India), 2nd edn., 5 vols., Poona 1968-77.
- Kashikar, C.G. and Parpola, A. 'Srauta traditions in recent times', in Agni: the Vedic Ritual of the Fire Altar, vol.II, pp.232-9; see Staal 1983.
- Keith, A.B. (tr.) The Veda of the Black Yajus School entitled Taittirīya Sanhitā, HOS vols.18-19, Cambridge, Mass. 1914.
- King, U. 'The effect of social change on religious self-understanding: women ascetics in modern Hinduism', Changing South Asia: Religion and Society, ed. K. Ballhatchet and D. Taylor, London 1984.
- Kinsley, D. 'Blood and death out of place: reflections on the goddess Kāli', The Divine Consort: Rādhā and the Goddesses of India, ed. J.S. Hawley and D.M. Wulff, Berkeley 1982, pp.144-52.
- Kishwar, M. and Vanita, R. (eds.) In Search of Answers: Indian Women's Voices from Manushi, London 1984.
- Krishnamachariar, M. History of Classical Sanskrit Literature, Madras 1937.
- Lal, S.K. Female Divinities in Hindu Mythology and Ritual, Pune 1980.
- Leslie, I.J. 'The religious role of women in ancient India', M. Phil. thesis, Univ. of Oxford, 1980.
- Essence and existence: women and religion in ancient Indian texts', Women's Religious Experience, ed. P. Holden, London 1983(1).
- The religious role of women in ancient India: a discussion of the Strīdharmapaddhati of Tryāmbakayajvān, D. Phil. thesis, Univ. of Oxford, 1983(2).
- The power in the home: ambivalent images of the goddess Jyestha, paper presented to the Second International Conference on South Asian Religious Art Studies (SARAS), Lucknow, 17-21 September 1984.

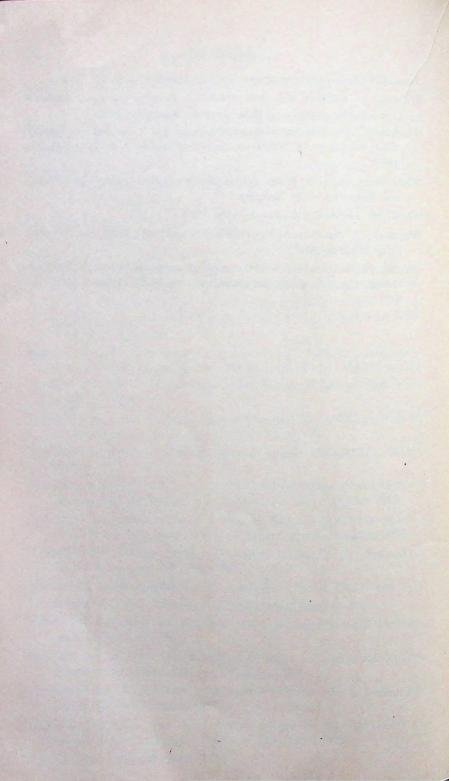
- --- 'Strīsvabhāva: the inherent nature of women', in Oxford University Papers on India, vol.1, part 1, Delhi 1986.
- Losty, J.P. Krishna, A Hindu Vision of God: Scenes from the Life of Krishna Illustrated in Orissan and other Eastern Indian Manuscripts in the British Library, London 1980.
- Malamoud, C. 'On the rhetoric and semantics of puruṣārtha', in Way of Life: King, Householder, Renouncer, ed. T.N. Madan, Delhi 1982.
- Mandlik, V.N. (ed.) Mānava-Dharma-Śāstra [Institutes of Manu] with the Commentaries of Medhātithi, Sarvajñanārāyaṇa, Kullūka, Rāghavānanda, Nandana and Rāmachandra; and a Supplement of the Commentary of Govindarāja, Bombay 1886.
- McCrindle, J.W. Ancient India as Described in Classical Literature (1901), reprint Amsterdam 1971.
- Menski, W.F. 'Role and ritual in the Hindu marriage', D.Phil. thesis, Univ. of London, 1984.
- Meulenbeld, G.J. The Mādhavanidāna and its Chief Commentary, Chapters 1-10; Introduction, Translation and Notes, Leiden 1974.
- Monier-Williams, Sir M. A Sanskrit-English Dictionary, Etymologically and Philologically Arranged with Special Reference to Cognate Indo-European Languages (1889), Oxford 1976.
- Morinis, E.A. Pilgrimage in the Hindu Tradition: a Case Study of West Bengal, Delhi 1984.
- Mysore Supplemental Catalogue (MSC): A [3rd] Supplemental Catalogue of Manuscripts Secured for the Oriental Research Institute, Mysore, during 1941-54, Mysore Oriental Research Institute, 1955.
- Nagaswamy, R. Masterpieces of Early South Indian Bronzes, New Delhi 1983.
- Nissan, E. 'Recovering practice: Buddhist nuns in Sri Lanka', South Asia Research, vol.4, no.1, May 1984.
- Obeyesekere, G. 'Pregnancy-cravings (dola-duka) in relation to social structure and personality in a Sinhalese village', American Anthropologist, vol.65, no.2, April 1963.
- O'Flaherty, W.D. The Origins of Evil in Hindu Mythology, Berkeley 1976.
- Ojha, C. 'Feminine asceticism in Hinduism: its tradition and present condition', Man in India, vol.61, no.3, 1981, pp.254-85.
- ----- 'Condition féminine et renoncement au monde dans l'Hindouisme: les communautés monastiques de femmes à Benares', Bulletin de l'Ecole Française d'extrême-Orient, Tome LXXIII, 1984, pp. 197-222.
- Okely, J. 'Gypsy women: models in conflict', in *Perceiving Women*, ed. S. Ardener, London 1975.

- Olivelle, P. 'The notion of āśrama in the Dharmasūtras', in Wiener Zeitschrift für die Kunde Südasiens, vol.XVIII, 1974.
- Vāsudevāśrama Yatidharmaprakāśa: a Treatise on World Renunciation, part 1, crit. edn. of Sanskrit text, Vienna 1976; part 2, introduction and translation, Vienna 1977.
- --- 'The integration of renunciation by orthodox Hinduism', in *Journal* of the Oriental Institute 28:1, Sept. 1978, pp.27-36.
- --- Renouncer and renunciation in the *Dharmaśāstras*, in *Studies in the Dharmaśāstras*, ed. R.W. Lariviere, Calcutta 1984.
- Oppert, G. Lists of Sanskrit Manuscripts in Private Libraries of Southern India, Madras 1880-5.
- Parry, J.P. Caste and Kinship in Kangra, London 1979.
- Paul, D.Y. Women in Buddhism: Images of the Feminine in Mahāyāna Tradition, Berkeley 1979.
- Pingree, D. Jyotiḥśāstra: Astral and Mathematical Literature, in A History of Indian Literature, vol.VI, fasc. 4, Wiesbaden 1981.
- Postel-Coster, E. 'The Indonesian novel as a source of anthropological data', in *Text and Context*, ed. R.K. Jain, Philadelphia 1977.
- Radhakrishnan, S. (tr.) The Principal Upanisads (1953), London 1974.
- Raghavan V. Śāhendravilāsa (A Poem on the Life of King Śāhajī of Tanjore (1684-1710) of Śrīdhara Venkateśa (Ayyāvāl), Tiruchi 1952.
- Raghavan, V. and Kunjunni Raja, K. (eds.) New Catalogus Catalogorum.

 An Alphabetical Register of Sanskrit and Allied Works and Authors (NCC), Madras 1968-: vol.I-V ed. Raghavan; vol.VI ed. Kunjunni Raja; vol.VIII 1974; unpublished material, NCC files, Madras University.
- Rai, R. and Singh, B. 'Widows of Varanasi', India Today, vol.VIII, no.3, Delhi 1983.
- Ramanujan, A.K. (tr.) Speaking of Siva (1973), Harmondsworth 1979.
- On women saints', in The Divine Consort: Rādhā and the Goddesses of India, ed. J.S. Hawley and D.M. Wulff, Berkeley 1982.
- Randhawa, M.S. Kangra Paintings on Love, New Delhi 1962.
- Rao, T.A. Gopinatha, Elements of Hindu Iconography, 2 vols., Madras 1914.
- Reynell, J. 'Honour, nurture and festivity: aspects of female religiosity amongst Jain women in Jaipur', D.Phil. thesis, Univ. of Cambridge, 1985.
- Rowland, B. The Art and Architecture of India: Buddhist, Hindu, Jain, in The Pelican History of Art, ed. N. Pevsner (1953), 3rd revised edn. 1967, Harmondsworth 1970.
- Salomon, R. 'Legal and symbolic significance of the "menstrual pollution" of rivers', in *Studies in Dharmaśāstra*, ed. R. W. Lariviere, Calcutta 1984.

- Sandal, M.L. (tr.) The Mīmāmsā Sūtras of Jaimini (1923-25), SBH reprint, New York 1974.
- Sandesara, B.J. 'Great Hindu women in Gujarat and Saurashtra', in Great Women of India, ed. Swami Madhavananda and R.C. Majumdar, Almora 1953.
- Sastri, P.P.S. (ed.) A Descriptive Catalogue of the Sanskrit Manuscripts in the Tanjore Maharaja Serfoji's Sarasvati Mahal Library, Tanjore (TD), 19 vols., Srirangam 1934-.
- Sen, Chitrabhanu A Dictionary of the Vedic Rituals based on the Śrauta and Grhya Sūtras (1978), reprint Delhi 1982.
- Sethi, S. 'Dowry: a gift of justice', India Today, 15 April 1985, p.57.
- Sinha, I. The Love Teachings of Kāmasūtra with Extracts from Koka Shastra, Ananga Ranga and other Famous Indian Works on Love, London 1980.
- Smith, F.M. 'The Vedic sacrifice in transition: a translation and study of the *Trikāṇḍamaṇḍana* of Bhāskara Miśra', Ph.D. dissertation, Univ. of Pennsylvania, 1984.
- Staal, F. Agni: the Vedic Ritual of the Fire Altar, 2 vols., in collaboration with C.V. Somayajipad and M. Itti Ravi Nambudiri, Berkeley 1983.
- Strandberg, E. The Modi Documents from Tanjore in Danish Collections, Wiesbaden 1983.
- Stutley, M. and J. Stutley, A Dictionary of Hinduism: its Mythology, Folklore and Development 1500 B.C.-A.D. 1500, London 1977.
- Subramanian, K.R. The Maratha Rajas of Tanjore (1676-1855), Madras 1928.
- Takakhav, N.S. The Life of Shivaji Maharaj, Founder of the Maratha Empire, adapted from the Marathi work by K.A. Keluskar, Bombay 1921.
- Tawney, C.H. The Ocean of Story, Being C.H. Tawney's Translation of Somadeva's Kathā Sarit Sāgara, ed. N.M. Penzer, 10 vols., London 1924-8.
- Thapliyal, U.P. Foreign Elements in Ancient Indian Society: 2nd century B.C. to 7th century A.D. Delhi 1979.
- Thieme, P. 'Jungfrauengatte' in Kleine Schriften, Teil II, Wiesbaden 1971.
- Upadhyaya, S,C. (tr.) Kāmasūtra of Vātsyāyana, Bombay 1961.
- Urban, Sylvanus (ed.) The Gentleman's Magazine and Historical Chronicle, vol.LXIV, part II, 1794.
- van Buitenen, J.A.B. (tr.) The Mahābhārata: vols.1-2, Chicago and London (Phoenix edn.) 1980, 1981; vol.3, Chicago 1978.
- Venkasami Row, T. A Manual of the District of Tanjore in the Madras Presidency, vol.VIII, Madras 1883.
- Vidyārṇava, R.B.S.C. The Daily Practice of the Hindus, Containing the Morning and Midday Duties (1918), 4th edn., Delhi 1979.
- -, (tr.) See Yājñavalkyasmrti 1974.

- Vora, J.H. Kavikāvyakālakalpaņa, 1945(?); consulted at BORI, Pune.
- Wilhelm, F. 'Kaliyuga and time capsule', in Indology and Law: Studies in Honour of Professor J.D.M. Derrett, Wiesbaden 1982.
- Winternitz, M. Catalogue of Sanskrit Manuscripts in the Bodleian Library, vol.II (begun by M. Winternitz and completed by A. B. Keith), Oxford 1905.
- Wiser, W.H. and C.V. Wiser. Behind Mud Walls 1930-1960. With a Sequel: the Village in 1970, Berkeley 1971.
- Wood, H. Third-class Ticket, London 1980.
- Wujastyk, D. 'Notes on traditional Sanskrit teaching', South Asia Research, May 1981, pp.30-5.
- Zimmer, H. *The Art of Indian Asia*, completed and edited by Joseph Campbell, 2 vols. (2nd edn. 1960; 3rd revised printing 1968), Princeton 1983.



Index

abhivadana, defined, 157-60 Ablutions, etc., 69-101; urinating and defecating, 69-71; impurities, 71; cleansing, 71-4; sipping, 75-7; cleaning the teeth, 78-82; ritual bath, 82-8; getting dressed, 88-96; wearing the tilaka mark, 96-101; marks for men. 99 Abortion, as fault of wife, 127 ācamanam, see Sipping Adiparvan, 211 Adoption of sons, 302 Adorning of the fire, 129; wife's participation in, 130 Adultery, 255; punishments for, 255-6 Agastya, 271 Agni, 252-3, 313; and the fire sacrifice, 103, 123 Agnipurāna, 153, 154; on wife's serving meals, 213; on the perfect wife, 180 āhnikam (daily duties), 44; for a king, 46; for a brahmin householder, 46-7; for women, 47-50. See also Sections IIA, IIB, IIC, IID Aitareyāranyaka, 207 Ajanta, paintings at, 92, 94 Altekar, A. S., 101 Amaravati, sculptures of, 94 Angiras, 284 Ankles, women not to show, 92 Anthropology, and religious texts, 325-7, 329 Anusāsanaparvan, 194, 210; on inherent nature of women, 247; on perfect wife, 281-2 Apararka, 214, 253, 255 Apastambadharmasūtra, 136, 140, 142,

144; on salutations, 159; on guests, 183, 184, 185, 196, 208; on Vedic students, 203; on serving food, 217-18, 219; on left-overs, 143, 223; on post-prandial activity, 230; on colours of clothing, 244; on clothes for love-making, 245; on making love at proper time, 287 Apastambaśākhā, 25, 136 Apastambasmrti, 244 Apastambasrautasūtra, 131 āposana (water sipped from cupped hand before eating), 223 Aranyakaparvan, 195 Ardener, Edwin, 327 Ardener, Shirley, 327 arghya offering, flowers added to, 179 arghyadānam (offering of respect). See Sun, offering to artha (worldly commitments), 54 Artists, role of, 92-3 Arundhati, story of, 313 Āryāvarta, 216 Asceticism, female: option of, 139, 318; research on, 318; Tryambaka's rejection of, 318-21 Ascetics: treatment of, 201, 206; dishes used by, 220; female, 318 āśrama theory: and the householder, 44-5; stages of development, 44, 138-9; and svadharma, 263 Astāvakra, 268, 319, 320 Āśvalāyanagrhyasūtra, 143, 145, 273-4; on things to avoid, 275 Aśvamedhikaparvan, on rewards for hospitality, 193 Atharvaveda, 251

Atri. 217, 286 aupāsana fire, 134; substitute for householder at, 149

Aurva, 153

Authorship of Strīdharmapaddhati, 10-13; Raghavan on, 10-11; Sastri on, 11; Vora on, 11 avarānna ('inferior food'), 145

Bābājī Bhosle, 13 bali offerings, evening, 235 Bathing, 50; after menstruation, 286. See also Ritual bath

Baudhāyanadharmasūtra, on thread, 34, 76; on asrama theory, 44; on cleansing, 74; on bathing, 83; on sacred enclosure, 119; on polygamy, 121; on fire sacrifice, 129-30; on reciting mantras, 150; on salutations, 157; on behaviour toward teacher, 167; on decorating hearth, 182; on food for guests, 189-90, 209; on eating with one's wife, 216; on evening ritual, 234; on intercourse, 238-9; on adopted sons, 302

Baudhāyanaśrautasūtra, 131 Bavasāheb, 15, 16 Bennett, Lynn, 138 Betel, 231-2; in love-making, 243 Bhagavadgītā, 264 Bhangāśvana, King, 259-60 Bhāradvāja, 147 Bharhut, sculptures of, 92, 93, 94 Bhāskara Miśra, 113, 114 Bhīsma, 60-1, 194, 271, 281 Bhuribai, 1, 328 Black Yajur Veda, 25 Bloomfield, M., 154 Bodewitz, H. W., 115, 117

Bodice: wearing of, 3, 97, 100, 241; forbidden to widows, 299

Brahman, 223

Brāhmana, 196

brāhmamuhūrta, meaning of, 51

Brahmin: birth of, 36, 37, 38-9; and polygamy, 121; salutations by, 15960; as guest, 187, 210; eating with wife, 216; status of, 256; women and funeral pyre, 297-8

brahmavādinī, 37

Breasts: covering of, 91-2; in art, 92-5 Breathing, in offering to sun, 150 Brhatsamhitā, 267

Brides: adolescent vs. pre-adolescent, 87; nagnikā, 87-8

Britain: reforms by, 1, 3; in Thanjavur,

British Library, āhnika duties in MSS of,

Brother, as substitute for householder. 147, 148

Buddhacarita, on wife's share in sacrifice,

Buddhism, 207, 228; and the Veda; 41; on role of wife, 214; nuns of, 318 Bühler, G., 76, 147, 209; on behaviour of host, 196-7

Caraka, 69

Castes: and right to sacrifice, 41; punishment of lower, 56; care of cows by higher, 68; clothing of, 89; tilaka or pundra marks for, 99; and husband eating with wife, 216: and eating left-overs, 224; and shaving heads of widows, 303

Children: rules for, 34; teaching of, 36; feeding of, 208-9, 224; of women who broke rules in menstruation, 285 - 6

Christianity, 4

Cleaning house: before dawn, 59; in the evening, 231

Cleansing, after urination and defecation, 71-4; after menstruation, 74, 286

Clothing, for love-making, 244-5 Clouet, François, 93

Collyrium, use of, 96, 97

Conclusion, religious duties of women, 318-29; women forbidden to perform rituals, 321-2; devotion of wife to husband, 322-4; willingness to do wrong when commanded, 324-5; bearing of treatise on present, 325-9; authority of texts cited, 325-7; actual experience of women, 327-9

Cooking: pure, 100-1; in the evening, 235

Court women, dress of, 92

Cows: use of cow-dung, 59, 60-1; sanctity of, 60; and Śrī, 60-2; care of, 65-7; sin of harming, 66-7; worship of, 67; milking at fire sacrifice, 130-1

Cremation, of patnī with sacred fire, 140-1

Dakşa, 46-7, 149; on timing of rituals, 178; on afternoon activities, 232 Das, R. M., 251, 270

Daughter: unmarried (kumārī) and ritual fire, 145-6, 148; in absence of son, 146

Dawn: rules for rising before, 51; reasons for early rising, 51-3; fire ritual, 102-49; offering to the sun, 149-55. See also Sections IIA and IIB

Day: divisions of, 45; for a king, 46; for a brahmin householder, 46-7; for a woman, 47-8; waking, 51

Defecation: purification after, 39, 71-4; in daily schedule, 49; ritual significance of, 69; place of, 69-70; prohibited places, 70-1

'Déjeuner sur l'Herbe, Le' (Manet), 93 Demons: karma of, 265-6; case of demon priest, 266

Derrett, J.D.M., 23, 24

Descriptive Catalogue... (Sastri), 11
Devala, 72; on sipping, 75; on clothing,
90

Devannabhatta, 145, 149

devapūjā (image worship) ritual, 178-80, 182; food for, 181

Dharma, 324

dharma ('righteousness'), 23, 268; and sacrifice, 23; sources of, 24; on daily schedule, 54; as reflection of cosmic law, 263; areas of conflict in women's, 263-4

Dharmākūtā, 3, 10, 11, 12, 18, 96, 317; on tilaka, 98; on offering of food, 180; on inherent nature of women, 250

dharmasāstra (religious law), 7, 23-5, 268; literature of, 24; and art, 93; on guests, 187; on eating, 210; on conflict with husband's wishes, 316; and renunciation for women, 318 Dhoti, 91

Dhundhirāja, 10, 12; court poet, 19; works of, 19

Dīpāmbā: chief wife of Ekojī, 20; as patroness, 21-2

Dishes: of leaves, 218; of iron, 220; of earthenware, 220; wooden, 220

Dowry, women's right to, 278-9, n17 Drāhvāyanaśrautasūtra, 288

Draupadī, 313; on speaking to a parapurusa, 173-4, 175; treatment of a guest, 201-3; meals served by, 213; on eating left-overs, 224; praise for, 262; conversation of, 280-1

Drawings of the Costumes of the Southern Peninsular of India..., 95...,

Dumont, P. E., 117, 119

Dundhirāja, 11

Dundhivyāsa, 11

Duties common to all women, 273-304. See Section IV

Early morning, sights in, 40, 49, 54-7 Earth: used for cleansing, 71; size of lumps, 72-3; number of lumps, 73 Earthenware, 220

East India Company, 15

Ekoji, 13-14, 15; literary heritage from,

16-17
Elders: saluting of, 156-68; guru, 156-7; abhivādana, 157-60; name used, 160-1; homage to parents-in-law, 161-2; obeisance to husband, 162-3; personal services to, 163-8; evening homage to, 234. See also Section IIC

Elephanta caves, Bombay, 30 Ellora, sculptures of, 94 Evening rituals, 234-6; presence of wife at, 234-5; treatment of guests at, 235-6

Fasting, in husband's absence, 81-2 Father, saluting, 156 Feet, wife's homage to husband's, 221-2 237

Fire-hall: details of, 116-17, 118; āha-vanīya, 116, 118; gārhapatya, 116, 118; entrance to, 117, 120; paths in, 119-21

Fire sacrifice, 102-49; wife's presence at, 50; Vedic ritual of, 102; times of, 102-3, 105, 106-7; eligibility for, 103; role of wife in, 107-15; husband and wife in, 108-9, 114-15; where the patnī may walk, 115-21; enclosure for, 116-17; which wife is patnī, 121-8; point of participation of patnī, 129-31; evening and morning, 131; presence of husband or wife, 132-41; patnī as ritual agent, 141-9; and homage to guests, 196-8 Five great sacrifices, 176-7; time of, 177 Flowers, for image worship, 179

Food: rulings on, 143; offered as sacrifice, 144, 180; offered to guests, 184, 194; giving of, 188-90, 195-6; prepared by wife, 199; serving of, 210-21; left-overs, 223-4

Forest hermit, 138, 146

Gaṇādhipati (Gaṇapati; Gaṇeśa), 29 Gāndhārī, 31, 262 Gandharva, the, 252-3 Ganges, 135; water for ritual bathing, 86 Gārhasthyadīpikā, 10, 12

Gautama, 34, 67, 80; on āśrama theory, 44; on cleansing, 71; on sipping, 75-6; on clothing, 89; on patnī's role in sacrifice, 148; on salutations, 157, 162; on obeisance to husband, 162-3; on guests, 187; on mealtimes, 216, 226

Gender, and authorship of texts, 327

Getting dressed, 88-96; kinds of clothing, 89; men's vs. women's, 89; cloth used, 90-1; parts to be covered, 91-5

Glass bangles, 100 Gobhila, 145; on patnī's duty, 147 Gobhilagryasutra, 160

Gode, P. K., 145

Goddesses, fierce vs. gentle, 320

Gods: husbands as, 1, 259, 281, 282, 322, 323; sacrifice to at midday, 177, 180-3; food for, 181, 224

Gonda, J., 106 Govindarāja, 184

Grain, preparation of, 58-9

Grammar: reasons for studying, 40-1; and question of gender, 42; use of masculine gender to apply to feminine, 57

Grass, placing a blade of, 172 grhya fire ritual, 103-4 Grhyasamgraha, 253

Guests: rituals concerning, 50, 235-6; offerings to, 151-2; wife's role concerning, 169, 210; hospitality to, 177; preparation of food for, 180, 197; paying homage to, 183; seats for, 184; examples of, 186-8; brahmin as, 187; term defined, 200, 205-10; order of attending, 208; left-overs from, 224; story of Sudarśana, 310-12. See also Hospitality; Midday rituals

guru: meaning of term, 156-7; relation of Vedic student to, 322; obedience to, 324-5

Half-brother, 148

Haradatta, 34, 35, 76; on foods, 144; on salutations, 160, 161; on timing of rituals, 177; on guests, 196, 208; on alms, 206; on order of feeding, 208; on eating with one's wife, 216; on diners in a row, 221; on post-prandial activity, 230-1

haridrā, used as unguent, 96, 97 Harikeša, 258 Hariścandra, story of, 307

Hārīta, 34, 36, 38; on containers for food, 220; on owning property, 277

Head, shaving of: by widows, 303-4; by renouncers, 319

Hearth, wife's role in decorating, 182 Heretics: not to be spoken to, 171; not to be fed, 207

Himalayas, 135

Hirschon, R., 328

Hobson, Sarah, 59

homa ritual, 106, 107; presence of husband and wife at, 131; times of, 177, 178

Hospitality: homage to guests, 183; timing of, 184; reasons for, 185-8; punishment for neglect of, 188-93; rewards for, 193-6; comparison with fire ritual, 196-8; role of wife in, 198-205, 210; guest vs. casual visitor, 205-10. See also Guests

House: cleaning of, 59; smearing of, 59-61; worship of threshold, 63

Household tasks, 168-76

Householder: status of, 44, 45; and āśrama theory, 44-5; ritual activities of, 45, 54; divisions of day of, 46-7; fire sacrifice of, 102; pilgrimages forbidden to, 134, 138; substitute for at fire ritual, 147; responsibility for guests, 193

Housework: rules for, 50; before dawn, 58-69

Hsüan-Tsang, 56

Husband: as god, 1, 259, 281, 282, 322, 323; role in fire ritual, 108-9; in polygamy, 121-2; absence from fire sacrifice, 132-3, 136; and expense of ritual fires, 134; reasons for leaving home, 135; after wife's death, 141; salutation by wife, 156, 163-8; rights to wife's property, 276-80; wife's duty toward, 305, 321-2; emphasis on demands of, 315-16. See also Wife

Impurity: and women, 250-2; of menstruating women, 283; of widows, 303. See also Inherent nature of women

Indra, brahminicide of, 251, 255

Inherent nature of women, 246–72; accepted view of sinfulness, 246–50; problem of religious instruction, 247, 256, 258, 260–1; purity of, 250–6; unique blessedness, 256–9; contradictions in, 261–6; debate on, 267–71; prejudice concerning, 271–2

Ingres, Jean, 93

Initiation: for men, 34, 143-4; for women, 35-6, 37; marriage as, 37, 322; length of study, 37-8

In Search of Answers (Kishwar and Vanita), 2

Intellectual milieu of Maratha Rajas, 16-23; scholar kings, 17-18; ministers, 18-19; court poet, 19; women, 19-23

Introduction by Tryambaka, 29-43; invocation, 29; introductory verses, 29-33; first verse, 29-31; second, 31-2; third, 32, fourth, 32-3; introduction proper, 33-43; on purification, 33-4; on rules for married women, 34-9; on general rules applicable to women, 39-43

Iron, dishes of, 220

Jacobson, D., 20 Jameson, A. S., 325-6

Jaimini: on women's right to sacrifice, 41-3, 110, 112; opponents of, 42; on women's study of the Veda, 112; on polygamy, 123

Jaiminīyasūtra, 269

Jains, 228, 271-2; nuns of, 318 Junior wives: and fire sacrifice, 125-6,

127; precedence of, 127-8

japa recitation, 150; forbidden to women, 150-1

Jyesthā, 63; wife's offering to, 177, 225; wife's pre-dinner ritual, 227-9; identity of, 228

Jyotirnibandha, 254

Kādambarī, 232

kali age, behaviour of women in, 256-7, 259, 296

Kāmasūtra, 238

Kane, P. V., 94, 147, 218

karma: and birth of female, 256; fulfilment of, 265-6; of women, 266

Kāśikā, 212-13

Kathopanisad, 185; story of Naciketas from, 186-8; on guests, 195, 207

Kathurājā, 15, 16

Kātyāyana: on sights in morning, 54-6; on fire sacrifice, 126, 127, 128, 132, 139-40; on cremation of patnī, 141

Kausalyā, 162, 214, 271

Kauśika, story of, 308-9

Kautilya, 46, 265

King, the: day's schedule of, 46; enjoined behaviour of, 264-5

Kishwar, Madhu, 2, 58

Kṛṣṇa, 281, 324

Kṛṣṇayajurveda, 25

kṣaralavaṇa (food used in sacrifice), 144-5

Kullūka, 145, 184, 199, 205; on eating with one's wife, 216; on svadharma, 263

Kumārila, 112, 113, 115 Kuntī, 262, 310, 324

Ladle, use of required, 218-19
Lakṣmī, 228, 320
Leaves, used to weave dishes, 218
Left-overs, 218, 223
Liṅgapurāṇa, 228
Mādhava, 153, 207, 279
Mahābhārata, 31, 60, 172, 319; on cow

Mahābhārata, 31, 60, 172, 319; on cows, 65, 67; on personal services, 163-5; on wife's speaking to unrelated man, 173-4; on guests, 194, 195, 208, 210; story of Uttańka, 211; on wife's serving at meals, 213; on inherent nature of women, 247, 262, 271; on kingly behaviour, 264-5; on perfect wife, 280; on a wife sent to her father's house, 288; on necessity for sons, 301-2; story of pigeon,

306-7; story of Pāṇḍu and Kuntī, 310; story of Sudarśana, 310-12; story of Sāvitrī, 313

Mahābhāsya, 40

Mahādevī,324

Maitrāyaņīsamhitā, 51-2

Malli, 216-17

Manet, Edouard, 93

Mantras: and initiation of girls, 37, 38; with bathing, 83; wife's invocation of, 112, 153; in offering to sun, 150, 154; Vedic, 154, 269

Manu, 23, 24, 32, 36, 37, 63, 275, 322; on mantras for women, 38; on aśrama theory, 45; on household tasks, 50, 168, 169-70; on waking, 51; on cows, 67; on cleansing, 71, 72; on teeth, 79; on bathing, 84; on fire ritual, 103, 106, 132-3; on rights to sacrifice, 108, 109; on polygamy, 121; on varnas of husbands and wives, 125; on reasons for leaving home, 135, 138; on foods, 144-5; on ritual role of patnī, 145; on marrying a girl with no brother, 147; on saluting elders, 156, 158, 159, 160; on personal services, 166; on behaviour toward teacher, 167; on timing of rituals, 177, 178; on guests, 183, 185, 187, 193, 194, 196, 199, 206, 207; on Vedic students, 205; on order of feeding, 209; on mealtimes, 210, 216, 222, 224, 226, 227; on types of dishes, 220; on foods, 144-5; on ritual role of paini, 145; on marrying a girl with no brother, 147; on saluting elders, 156, 158, 159, 160; on personal services, 166; on evening rituals, 235; on intercourse, 240, 241; on inherent nature of women, 248, 250, 252, 253, 254, 260, 264, 270; on good conduct, 261; on attitudes toward women, 261-2; on kingly behaviour, 265; on wife's possession of property, 277, 278; on wife's refusal to make love, 288; on celibates without sons, 302

Manushi, 2, 327

manusyayajña. See Guests, paying homage to

Maratha Rajas of Thanjavur, 13-25; family tree, 13, 15; wars of, 16; disputed successions, 16; as scholars, 17-18; polygamy of, 20; travels of, 135

Marathi language, 17; authors of, 17 Marīci, 71

Mārkaņdeya, 171; on the tilaka mark, 96

Mārkandeyapurāņa, 58, 59; on sharing sacrifice, 110; on guests, 207; story of Hariścandra in, 307

Marriage: Tryambaka's introduction on, 30-1; age of, 35, 37, 254; Jaimini on, 43; for pleasure, 124-5; symbolic, of young girl, 252-3

Maskarin, 163

Mātrdatta, 87, 144

McCrindle, J. W., 57

Mealtime, 210-33; wife's duty to serve at, 210-14; husband not to eat in wife's presence, 214-17; serving the meal, 217-21; wife's own meal, 221-7; wife's offering to Jyesthā, 227-9; post-prandial duties, 229-33

Medhātithi, 109-10, 145; on salutations, 159-60; on guests, 183; on eating with one's wife, 216; on svadharma, 263

Meditation: wife's assistance in, 50, 54; before dawn, 52-4

Men: and the sacred thread, 34; ritual rules for, 43; equivalent of tilaka for, 99; rules of dress for, 101. See also Husbands

Mendicants, female, 171, 172

Menski, W. F., 254

Menstruation, 8, 97, 224; of unmarried girls, 35; and cleansing, 74, 286; and intercourse, 81, 285; use of unguent after, 97; dishes used by woman in, 220; impurity of, 250-1, 283; and time of marriage, 254; sign of purity, 254-6; religious duties of woman in, 283-8

Meulenbeld, G. J., 97

Midday rituals, 176-210; man's duties, 176-7; general remarks on, 177-8; worship of all gods, 180-3; paying homage to guests, 183-210

mīmāmsā, 3

Ministers of Maratha kings, as authors, 18-19

Mīrābāī, 324

Mitāksarā, 297

Mitra, 150

Mughals, victories of, 14-15

Monasticism for women, 318

Money, wife's management of, 168, 169-70

Morinis, E. A., 137

Mother: identity of Tryambaka's, 32; saluting, 156

Mudrārāksasavyākhyā, 10, 11, 12

Mudritakumudacandraprakarana, 271-2

Muslims: threat to Thanjavur, 4, 21; influence on art, 94-5; nose and toe ornaments of, 101

'Muted groups', 327-8

Mutilation, as punishment, 56

Myths, reality of, 326-7

naivedya ritual, food for, 181, 182 Nakedness: during bathing, 86-7, 88; and the adolescent bride, 87

namaskāra, 157, 162 Names: used in salutation, 160-1; rules for, 160; when not to be used, 161

Nandana, 183-4, 209

Nandapandita, 126

Nārāvana, 144, 152

Nāyaks, 16, 17

Nepal, 222; female ascetics in, 318

New Catalogus Catalogorum, 10 niyoga, 300-2, 310, 324

Nose: cutting off of, 55-6; deformed, 57; rings for, 101

Nrsimha, 317

Obedience of wife, vs. service, 312-13 O'Flaherty, W. D., 265

Oghavatī, 310, 324 Old and sick, feeding of, 208-9 Olivelle, P., 44; on renunciation for women, 318 Ornaments: wearing of, 100; during intercourse, 242

Outcast (candāla), touching, 34

Paithīnasī, 135, 218 Paintings, degrees of nakedness in, 92-3 pancagavya, 60 Pāndu, 310

Pānini, 110, 123, 213; on salutations,

parapurusa (any man not related to wife): speaking to, 170-6; placing a blade of grass between, 172; example of Sītā, 172-3; example of Draupadī, 173-4; physical contact with, 175-6

Parās aramādhavīya, 3, 223, 235 Parāśara, 207, 220

Parents-in-law: saluting, 157, 161-2; duties performed for, 163-4

Parry, J. P., 224

Pārvatī, 29, 30, 31, 124; as ideal wife, 317, 320; on husband as god, 323 Patañjali, 40, 159

patisusrūsanam of women, 258-9

pativratā (devoted wife), 1, 304; quotations in praise of, 280-3

patnī, 30, 110; where to walk, 115-21; entrance of at ritual, 117-18; in polygamy, 123; and śūdra wife, 126; not to leave the fire, 135-6; cremation with sacred fire, 141; as ritual agent of sacrifice, 141-9; management of money by, 170; and homage to guests, 199; and left-overs, 224, 225; and evening ritual, 234, 235; to join husband on funeral pyre, 298

Personal services, as religious duty of wife,163-8

Pigeon and bird-catcher, story of, 306 Pilgrimages; forbidden to householder. 134; forbidden to wife, 136-8; forbidden to husband, 138

Political background, 13-16

Polygamy: at court, 20, 215; conditions for, 121-2; and the fire sacrifice, 122; prevalence of, 166

Postel-Coster, E., 326

Pracetas, 77

Prajāpati, and the fire sacrifice, 103

Pratāpsingh, 15, 16

pratyabhivāda, 157

pratyutthāna, 157

Pregnant women: bathing, 85; feeding of, 208-9; special treatment of, 209; religious duties of, 288-91; cravings of, 289-90; entry into lying-in chamber, 290-1

Priest: at fire sacrifice, 130-1, 142; pay of. 134

Property, of women, 42-3, 276-80 pundraka, 99

purānas: on religious ideals of post-Vedic era, 258-9; on inherent nature of women, 265

Purification (śaucācāra): rules for, 33; rules for women, 39-40, 49; after menstruation, 286; by dying with husband, 295-6

Purity of women, arguments for, 252-4,

pārvamīmāmsā school, on women's right to sacrifice, 41-3, 110-13 putrikā daughter, 146-7, 301

Rādhā, 320

Rāghavānanda, 166, 184, 251, 260; on women's property, 278

Raghavan, V.10, 11, 12, 17, 76

Raghunātha Pandita, 21

Rājakošanighantu, 11

Rāma, 3, 162; rituals shared with Sītā, 110, 114

Rāmacandra, 76, 260

Rāmāyaṇa, 10, 18, 96, 274; on tilaka, 93; on placing a blade of grass, 172; on role of wife with guests, 200, 207; on inherent nature of women, 249, 251, 262, 271

Rammohan Roy, 292

Rape, 255

Rebirth, and the rewards of good conduct, 261

Religious law. See dharmasāstra

Renunciation, as option for women, 318. See also Asceticism

Rgveda, 121

Rgvedic school, 154

Rice: offerings of, 223; times for pounding, 233

Ritual bath, 82-8; washing of head, 84-5; place of, 85; water for, 86; nakedness during, 86-7; after menstruation, 286

Rudra, 154

Rudradatta, 114

Sabara, 41, 43, 270; on wife's share in sacrifice, 110-12, 115; on polygamy, 123

Sacred thread: while sipping, 75-6; wearing of, 89

Sacrifice: women's rights to, 41-3, 107, 144, 277; wife's share in, 108-9, 111-14; by man without a wife, 114; food left over from, 224; and possession of property, 277. See also Fire ritual

sadyovadhū, 37

Saffron, uses of, 96, 97

Sagara, 153

sahagamana (dying with one's husband), 115; controversy over, 292; objections to, 292-3; quotations in favour of, 293-5; rewards for the bad wife, 295-7; and the brahmin wife, 287-8

Śāhajī, 15-16; as scholar, 17

Sāhajīrāja Puram, scholars of, 17

Sāhavilāsagītā, 11

Sāhendravilāsa, 11

Saiyājī, 15, 16

Sakuntalā, 31, 288

Salomon, R., 283

Salt, condiments, etc., serving of, 217-18

Sāmavedic school, 154

samdhyā ritual, 105-7, 149; actions associated with, 150

Samvārta, 253, 254

sanātanadharma, 258, 259, 263

Sanchi, sculptures of, 94

Sandal, M. L., 113

Śāṇḍilī, 282, 319

Śāndilya, 229, 236

Sankha: on women's dress, 91, 94-5; on speaking to other men, 171

Sanskrit: literature of Thanjavur in, 17-18; religious texts written by men, 327-8

Sari, 91; styles of wearing, 92, 95; bodice with, 97

Sarvajñanārāyaņa, 144; on guests, 184, 209; on good conduct, 260

Sastri, 11

Satatapa: on earth for cleansing, 72-3; on guests, 194; on serving food, 217 Satapathabrāhmaṇa, 30-2, 117, 215, 226-7

satī, 1, 8

Satī, 31-2; as gentle goddess, 320

Sāvitrī, story of, 313-14

Sāyaṇa, 108, 160, 188, 202; on mythical marriages of young girl, 253

Section I, 6, 29-43. See also Introduction by Tryambaka

Section II, Daily duties, 6-7, 44-51 Section IIA. Before Dawn, 6-7, 40,

51-101; āśrama theory, 44-5; daily rituals of householder, 45-7; rituals for men and women compared, 47-50; waking before dawn, 51-7; reasons for early rising, 51-3; meditation, 52-4; what may be seen, 54-7; household tasks during, 58-63; worship of threshold, 63-4; worship of

cows, 67-8; ablutions, etc., 69-101 Section IIB, Rituals at dawn, 7, 102-55; serving the sacred fire, 102-49; offer-

ing to sun, 149-55. See also Fire sacrifice; Senior wife; Wife

Section IIC, Daytime rituals, 7, 156-233; saluting one's elders, 156-68; household tasks, 168-76; midday rituals, 176-210; at meals, 210-33

Section IID, Rituals at evening, 234-45; evening duties, 234-6; going to bed,

372 Index

236-45. See also Sexual intercourse Section III. Inherent nature of women, 7-8, 246-72. See also Inherent nature of women

Section IV, Duties common to women, 273-304; general rulings on behaviour, 273-4; things to be avoided, 274-6; women's property, 276-80; in praise of the pativrata, 280-3; religious duties of menstruating women, 283-8; of the pregnant woman, 288-91; of the woman whose husband is away, 291; dying with one's husband, 291-8; duties of the widow, 298-304

Section V, Tryambaka's conclusion, 305-17; service without regard to own life, 305-7; acceptance of husband's sale of wife, 307-8; obedience in conflict with other duties, 308; obedience involving doing wrong, 309-12; obedience vs. service, 312-14; Tryambaka's summary, 314-16; concluding verses, 316-17; colophon, 317

Sen, Chitrabhanu, 119

Senior wife: precedence of, 124, 125, 126; sons of, 124; if at fault, 126-7; duties performed by, 165; management of money by, 170; and treatment of guests, 206; and Jyestha, 228-9

Serfoji, 15, 16; as scholar, 17-18 Serfoji II, 15, 16

Servants, left-overs for, 224

Service, of student to teacher and wife to husband, 322

Sexual intercourse, 237-45; and kāma, 54; place of, 238; preliminaries to, 239; bed for, 239-40; clothing for, 240, 244-5; rules for, 241-5; touching, 242, 243; and menstruation, 286-7; propitious times for, 287-8; during pregnancy, 289; to produce a son (niyoga), 300

Sexuality, of women, 260, 320

Sights on waking: auspicious, 55; inauspicious, 55-7

Sinfulness: of women, 246-50; and transmigration, 247

Sinha, I.241

Sipping ritual (ācamana), 75-7; rules for, 50; water to be used for, 77: in offering to sun, 150; before eating. 223

Sītā, 3, 305; rituals shared by Rāma with, 110, 114; blade of grass placed by, 172, 175, 176, 187; treatment of a guest by, 200-1; an unusual woman 249, 262, 271

Siva: and Pārvatī, 30, 31; forehead marks for followers of, 99; offerings to, 152, 179

Śivājī, 13-14

Skandapurāņa, 137, 251

smārta fire ritual, 104

Smith, F.M., 25, 113

Smrticandrikā, 3, 90; on leaving home, 135; on ritual agency of patnī, 145; on salutations, 157, 159; on eating alone, 215; on leaves for dishes, 218; on evening rituals, 235; on menstruation, 283-4

Smrtiratna, 234

Smrtimuktāphala, 99; on serving food, 219, 223

Smrtyarthasāra, 84, 148; on salutations, 157, 158; on offerings to gods, 180; on eating with one's wife, 216; on post-prandial ritual, 229; on going to bed, 236

Social reality: relation of texts to, 325-7; actual experience of women, 327-9 Soma, 252-3

soma sacrifice, cost of, 134

Son: and ritual fire, 146, 148; 'appointed daughter' as, 146; widow's dependence on, 300; and practice of niyoga, 300-2; adopted, 302

śrauta ritual (fire sacrifice), 102-49; cost of, 134; by male head of household, 149; food offered in, 180. See also Fire sacrifice

Śrī: and cows, 60-2, 63, 65; as example to women, 62-3; at creation, 228 Śrīdharasvāmin, 153

Staal, F., 25, 119

Strabo, 56, 57

stridharma 3, 8, 259, 260, 261; and inherent nature of women, 262; and conflict in nature of women, 263; Umā on, 281; woman's only hope, 321; right and wrong superseded by, 324

Stridharmapaddhati, 262; importance of, 304; mode of presentation, 4-5; overview of sections, 5-10; authorship of, 10-13; date of, 12; political background, 13-16; intellectual milieu, 16-23; reading of, 22; literary genre of, 23-5; conclusions of, 318-29; bearing on the present, 325-9; and actual experience of women. 327-9. See also Sections by number strīsvabhāva (inherent nature of women). 8, 319

Sudarśana, story of, 310-12

śūdra, 34; and children, 36; and women, 38, 39, 73, 251-2; general rules for, 39; and right to sacrifice, 41; and fire sacrifice, 126; salutations by. 159

Suicide, 292-3

Sujātā, 214

Sun: ritual worship of, 104-5; offering of respect to, 149-55; water offered, 150-2; powder circle, 151, 152

Sūrya, and the fire sacrifice, 103, 105 śuśrūsā, 29-30

śuśrusanam, 29-30

Suśruta, 145

sūtras, in dharmašāstra literature, 24, 25 Suttee, campaign against, 1, 292

suvāsinī, 209

svabhāva, 264, 265; vs. svadharma, 266 svadharma, 258, 259, 263, 320; of men, 263-4; nature of, 264; of women,

264

Taittirīyopanisad, 188, 205 Taittirīyabrāhmana, 188 Tamil, 4; language of, 16

Teacher, religious: saluting, 156, 158; behaviour of student toward, 167;

service of student to, 312, 322 Teeth, cleaning of, 40, 78-82, 323; in daily schedule, 49; twigs for, 78; times for, 79; aspects of, 80-1; as pleasure, 80; after meals, 229

Thieme, P., 87-8 Telugu, 16

Thanjavur, 3, 13-14; dynasty of, 15

Threshold, worship of, 63-4 tilaka mark: wearing of, 96-100; shape

of, 97; significance of, 99-100

Toes, rings for, 101

Trikāndamandana, 113, 134; on pilgrimages, 136-7; on resetting fire, 141

Transmigration, and gender, 247 Tryambaka: aims of, 3-4; authorship by, 10-13, 19; authority of texts cited by, 325-7; significance of, 329.

See also Sections by number: Stridharmapaddhati

Tryambakarayamakhin, 10, 11, 13, 18, 317

Tryambakayajvan, 3, 10, 12, 13 Tukkoji, 15, 16; as scholar, 17-18 Tuptīkā, 112

Twigs, for teeth-cleaning, 78, 229

ucchista. See Left-overs

ūha (rules of modification): and grammar, 40-1, 42; ignored, 43

Ujivalā, 143, 208

Umā, 281-2

upasamgrahana, 157-8

Urination: and purification, 33-4, 39; in daily schedule, 49; ritual significance of, 69; place of, 69-70; prohibited places, 70-1; cleansing after, 71-4

Uśanas, 89, 90, 215, 298 Uttanka, 211-12, 324

Vāgbhata, 290

vaisvadeva ritual: food for, 181; presence of wife at, 182; food prepared by wife, 198-9; in the evening, 324-35

Van Buitenen, J.A.B., 172-3, 202, 313 Vanita, R., 58

Varāhamihira, 267

varna: of men and women, 39, 76-7; of junior wives, 125; of first wives, 125; and the fire sacrifice, 125-6; and svadharma, 263; and dying with one's husband, 297

Varuņa, 105, 150

Vasistha, 99, 146, 221

Vātsyāyana, 243, 244

Veda: source of *dharma*, 24; and study of grammar, 40-1; study of by women, 112, 139; mantras of, 154; status of, 269

Vedic students: rules for, 80-1, 143; and bathing, 83; clothing of, 89-90; foods for, 144; hospitality for, 203-4, 206; threats to wife from, 204-5; left-overs for, 224; relations with guru, 322

Vedic study, forbidden to women, 139, 168, 177, 251, 321

Vessantara, Prince, 307-8

Vidyārnava, 74, 106, 151, 153; on mantras, 154; on midday duties, 177-8; on serving food, 218; on post-prandial duties, 231

Vijñāneśvara, 162, 214, 309

Vikarna, 265

Vişnu: worship of by women, 53; forehead marks for follower of, 99; offerings to, 179; creation of universe by, 228

Viṣṇupurāṇa, 153, 199, 207; on evening rituals, 235; story of women's blessedness in, 256-8

Viśvāmitra, 39

Viśvarūpa, 253

Vora, J. H., 11

Vyāsa: on cleansing, 73; on tilaka mark, 96; on householder's substitutes, 147; on sun ritual, 151; on household tasks, 168; on image worship, 178; on offerings of food, 180, 181; on guests, 206-7; on husband's leftovers, 222, 225; on wife's eating, 226; on going to bed, 237; on inter-

course, 241; on women as blessed, 256-8

Waking before dawn: male vs. female, 50; rulings related to, 51. See also Section IIA, Dawn

Washing, of pots and pans, 233

Water: in saṃdhyā ritual, 150; offered to a guest, 151; for image worship, 179; before eating, 223. See also Sipping

Wickedness of women, debate on: rationalistic approach, 267; Varāhamihira on, 267-8; Yudhisthira on, 268; apologetic approach, 268-9; support for theory, 271-2. See also Inherent nature of women

Widows: clothing of, 89, 91, 97; and the *tilaka* mark, 98; wearing of ornaments, 100; and the sacred fire, 141; religious duties of, 298-304; conduct of, 298-300; remarriage of, 300; practice of *niyoga*, 300-2; impurity of, 303; shaving heads of, 303-4

Wife: duties of, 1, 29-30, 52; traditional role of, 3; terms for service of, 29-30; as bearer of sons, 31, 63, 109, 121; delegation of duties by, 64-5; and the fire ritual, 104-5, 107, 115; in other sacrifices, 111-14; early equality with husband, 113; precedence of, 124-6; absence from fire ritual, 133, 136, 139; relationship with sacred fire, 140-1; as ritual agent of sacrifice, 141-9; and offering to sun, 154-5; husband saluted by, 156, 162-3; personal service to husband, 167; forbidden to speak to other men, 170-6; duties in image worship, 178-9, 180; role toward guests, 185, 198; duty to serve at meals, 210-21; own meal of, 221-7; post-prandial duties, 229-33; virtues of contrasted with sins of women, 262, 272; property of, 276-80; primary duty of, 305, 321; husband worshipped by,

322-4. See also Junior wife; patnī; Senior wife

Wilson, H. H., 32 Wiser, C. V., 328

Wiser, W. H., 328

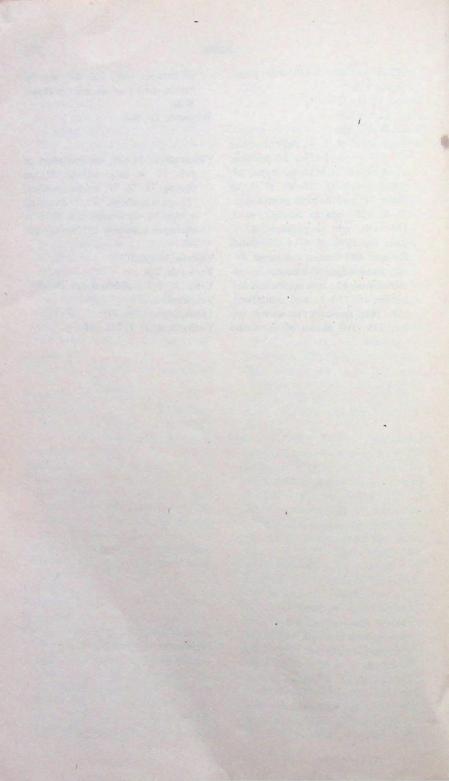
Women: ideal of, 2, 4; daily practices of, 6-7; complexities of position, 8; of period of Maratha Rajas, 19; ritual duties of, 29-30, 47-9; as śūdra, 38; and the birth of brahmins, 38-9; and right to sacrifice, 41-2, 144; and right to property, 42-3; daily timetable of, 47-8, 52; duties for men and women compared, 49-50; knowledge of omens, 57; instability of, 62; japa meditation forbidden to, 150-1; and salutations, 159, 161; monastic or ascetic life for, 318; evil nature of vs. model

of virtuous wife, 320. See also Inherent nature of women; Widows; Wife

Wujastyk, D., 204

Yājñavalkya, 24, 45; on initiation of girls, 37; on early waking, 52; on sipping, 75, 76, 77; on fire sacrifice, 125; on salutations, 161-2; on eating in sight of one's wife, 214, 227; on afternoon activities, 232; on niyoga, 301

Yajñeśa, 10, 12, 317 Yajurveda, 288 Yama, 36, 217; and Naciketas, 186-7 Yaśaścandra, 271 Yatidharmaprakāśa, 318 Yudhisthira, 60-1, 271, 310



READ MORE IN PENGUIN



In every corner of the world, on every subject under the sun, Penguin represents quality and variety - the very best in publishing today.

For complete information about books available from Penguin – including Puffins, Penguin Classics and Arkana – and how to order them, write to us at the appropriate address below. Please note that for copyright reasons the selection of books varies from country to country.

In India: Please write to Penguin Books India Pvt Ltd, 706 Eros Apartments, 56 Nehru Place, New Delhi, 110019

In the United Kingdom: Please write to Dept. JC, Penguin Books Ltd, Bath Road, Harmondsworth, West Drayton, Middlesex, UB7 ODA, UK

In the United States: Please write to Penguin USA Inc., 375 Hudson Street, New York, NY 10014

In Canada: Please write to Penguin Books Canada Ltd, 10 Alcorn Avenue, Suite 300, Toronto, Ontario M4V 3B2

In Australia: Please write to Penguin Books Australia Ltd, 487 Maroondah Highway, Ring Wood, Victoria 3134

In New Zealand: Please write to Penguin Books (NZ) Ltd, 182-190 Wairau Road, Private Bag, Takapuna, Auckland 9

In the Netherlands: Please write to Penguin Books Netherlands B.V., Keizersgracht 231 NL-1016 DV Amsterdam

In Germany: Please write to Penguin Books Deutschland GmbH, Metzlerstrasse 26, 60595 Frankfurt am Main, Germany

In Spain: Please write to Penguin Books S. A., Bravo Murillo, 19-1' B, E-28015 Madrid, Spain

In Italy: Please write to Penguin Italia s.r.l., Via Felice Casati 20, 1-20124 Milano

In France: Please write to Penguin France S. A., 17 rue Lejeune, F-31000 Toulouse

In Japan: Please write to Penguin Books Japan, Ishikiribashi Building, 2-5-4, Suido, Tokyo 112

In Greece: Please write to Penguin Hellas Ltd, Dimocritou 3, GR-106 71 Athens

In South Africa: Please write to Longman Penguin Southern Africa (Pty) Ltd, Private Bag X08, Bertsham 2013

FOR THE BEST IN PAPERBACKS, LOOK FOR THE

THE HERMIT AND THE LOVE THIEF

Bhartrihari and Bilhana Translated by Barbara Stoler Miller

The Sanskrit poems of Bhartrihari and Bilhana have been brought together in one volume as outstanding examples of the Indian classical genre known as the fragmentary lyric. Both Bhartrihari, a philosopher of the fifth century (who is popularly thought to have been a king who retired to the forest upon discovery of his queen's infidelity) and Bilhana, a poet of the eleventh century (who is reputed to have been a travelling courtier who became secretly involved with a king's young daughter, and was condemned to death upon discovery) bring to the fragmentary lyric rich imagery and great sensuality. This superb translation captures the astonishing beauty and subtlety of their unique form of classical Sanskrit poetry.



PENGUIN (A) CLASSICS

TRYAMBAKAYAJVAN

THE PERFECT WIFE (STRĪDHARMAPADDHATI)

TRANSLATED FROM THE SANSKRIT BY I. JULIA LESLIE

Tryambakayajvan is almost certainly the famous Tryambakarāyamakhin (AD 1665-1750), minister to two of the Maratha kings of Thanjavur (Śāhajī and Serfoji). Famous in his own right as a scholar of religious law, he is described in a contemporary text as a learned minister, the performer of Vedic sacrifices, and a patron of scholars. In the Stridharmapaddhati, Tryambaka summarizes for his eighteenth-century audience a tradition that was then already over a thousand years old. The treatise advocates conformity and Tryambaka is interested in women not as individuals but as parts that fit into and strengthen the whole. That whole, for him, is dharma. The work is, in itself, an admission of the power of non-conformist women to wreck the entire edifice of Hindu society. For, when women are 'corrupted', all is lost.

The cover shows a Kangra miniature painting titled Ragabangala, from the eighteenth century; reproduced courtesy The National Museum, New Delhi.

Cover design by Santosh Dutta



Philosophy

India Rs 150